

Season 2

Insert 91

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

[SIX YEARS LATER]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Me(singing): "Namanje ngiyacela mamelani

Vulani izindlebe lalelani

Ngiyanibingelela sanibonani

Musani ukungiziba sanibonani

Yinde lenyathuko phumulani

Hlalani ninethezeke nixoxe nami

Zinyanya zakwaZulu zihleli nani

Kuthi ningobani khumbulani

Bayede nkonyane kandaba  
Simaviyo viyo thina masihlangana  
Bayede ngiyakusaba weNgonyama  
Naba abantu bakho beqedana....

"(Shouts)Mah!!?"

I pause the song and look at him on the passenger seat

Me(shouts back):"Theodore!!?"

He startles as we both burst into laughter

Theo:"why do you like that song, you play it all the time"

Me(laughs):"because it talks to my ancestors"

Theo:"what are ancestors?"

Me:"ancestors are your great grandparents and your great great great grandparents who have passed away, it can even be your mom and dad if they die, they become your ancestors, which means they are now like your guardian angels who watch over you and protect you from evil, if you feel like you are down and you are failing with something, you can talk to your ancestors even though you can't see them and ask them to show you the way and help you"

Theo:"just like how we pray to God?"

Me:"kind of"

Theo:"are ancestors God?"

Me:"No, they are not God, there's only one God..."

Theo:"this is confusing"

Me(laughing):"okay let me make an example you will understand"

Theo:"yes please"

Me:"how many Santas are there?"

Theo:"there's only one santa"

Me:"there's only one Santa that's correct, and Santa has many children around the world the ask for gifts from him on Christmas right?"

Theo:"Yes"

Me:"but there's so many children around the world that he needs help, and who helps Santa?"

Theo:"the elves"

Me:"yes, we ask Santa for gifts Santa answers our wishes and asks his elves to help him make all those gifts, the elves design them nicely for him with the address of each and every house for every child, making it easy for Santa to deliver all the gifts to all the children on Christmas Eve, the elves receive our wishes then send the message to Santa then santa answers and creates the gifts for the children with the help of the elves but Santa is the one who makes the Gifts come true"

Theo:"so the ancestors are like God's elves?"

Me:"yes, we recognize them and appreciate for their hard work to make sure that God receives our prayers and wishes, but we only worship and praise God for he is the one that makes our prayers come true"

Theo:"I think I understand a little bit"

Me:"don't worry about it my boy, you still growing and learning, when you are much older you will understand better"

I park the car outside the school

I wet my thumb with my tongue and fix his bushy eyebrows

Theo:"mmaahhh! Eeww"

Me(smiling):"that's my handsome boy"

He sighs rolling his eyes

Me:"enjoy your day at school, give me a kiss"

He pouts his lips as I give him a quick peck

I walk him inside the gate and wave at him as he runs towards the building

I get in my car and drive to the hospital

My heart sinks at the thought of going there, I thought the day I become a doctor I'd be very happy, but it has become the most painful job for me.

I play my music and sing along

Me(singing):"Yehlisa iThongo lokubumbana

Yehlisa iThongo lokuthanda

Sihlangane njengebutho likabhambatha

iNzondo ekade ikhona siyayigandaya

Thokoza Thokoza thongo lami

Thokoza Thokoza thongo lami

Ikusasa lifiphele ngempela

Awu nakhu ngibona ubumnyama

Nqo nqoza Nqo nqoza Ksasa lami

Nqo nqoza Nqo nqoza Ksasa lami

Ngibon'isizukulwane esidukileyo

Ngibonisizukulwane esidukileyo.....

- 
- 
- 
- 

Thulile

- 
- 
- 

"Thulile!!"

I look towards the bars

Security:"your times up, be ready in five minutes"

Me:"sho!"

I sigh defeated

Abby:"you don't look too excited to be getting out of here?"

Me:"I'm not, I would love another three years"

Abby(laughs):"you must be out of your mind, so you would rather stay here and be raped and abused rather than going back to your lavish luxurious lifestyle out there?"

Me:"not everything is about luxurious lifestyle, that lifestyle is what got me here in the first place, I just want to go back home to KZN things were so much better there"

Abby:"then why don't you just go back, you have a chance now"

Me(sighs):"I wish it was as easy as that, but it's not, truth is, I'm stuck here"

Abby:"I don't understand"

Me:"well Abby, try signing your life to the devil some day, then you will understand"

I pack my few things and head out, the other inmates blow whistles and make noise as I drag my bag along the passage

"Usheshe ubuye phela stocko khona sizokuvulela igate futhi!"

They burst into laughter, I chuckle as I continue walking and go through the process of being signed out

As I step out I take a deep breath of fresh air, I haven't seen this gate since

the first day I got in three years ago

After noticing that there's no one here to fetch me, my heart starts pounding as I try to quickly run as far away from the prison as possible

"Beeeeeb beeeeb"

I look back at the black mercedes following me, I pick up the pace running but it hits me from the back causing me to fall, I sigh defeated as I get up on my feet

"Think you can escape me that easily?"

Me(smiles):"hawu Sandiso? I didn't think it was you, I thought I was about to get kidnapped"

He grabs my arm forcefully and drags me inside the car as it speeds off

Sandiso:"you think I'd forget the most important day, your release day? Come on babe, what do you take me for?"

I fake a laugh

Me:"I don't know what I was thinking"

Sandiso:"so how was your experience? I'm sure you showed them who's boss"

I clench my teeth as I'm overwhelmed by anger

Me:"I just wasted my three years of life in that hell hole and you asked me how was my experience? You sold me out! Why would you do that to me! I thought we were on the same team"

Sandiso:"it was either just you or our whole business goes down, what would you have done? I thought you wouldn't mind taking one for the team, I've taken one for the team a couple of times too, and this just made you the baddest lady in the gang, you've earned yourself so much respect, so don't be too sad, wait until you see what I have in store for you, because of you, the business has bloomed more than ever before"

I sigh looking out the window, it seems

I will never be able to escape this life, to think of everything I went through to have this life, I've really messed up

Sandiso:"come on, smile for big daddy"

He cups my face making me look at him, I smile for him

Sandiso:"I missed you Nkosazane"

(Princess)

Me:"I missed you too big daddy"

Sandiso (smiles):"that's my girl"

•

•

•

•

Lulama

•

•

•

•

•

"Rise and shine sunshine"

I look up from my laptop as he makes his way in with a tray of food

Me:"aaww breakfast in bed? What did I do to deserve this"

Chase:"you married me"

Me:"lucky you"

He laughs

Chase:"lucky me indeed"

I take my food and start eating

He comes closer to my belly and starts

rubbing it

Chase:"how's my big boy doing in there?"

Me(chewing):"he's growing everyday"

Chase:"he must hurry his brother Theodore is getting lonely and he's so excited about him"

Me:"just three more months or less and he'll be here, I hope you ready for the sleepless nights"

Chase:"I'm always ready"

He kisses my big belly before kissing my lips

Chase:"when is Theodore coming back?"

Me:"he loves visiting his Aunty, I was supposed to fetch him yesterday but he cried, so we agreed I'll fetch him from school in the afternoon"

Chase:"we have this problem almost every June holidays, and weekends, I think we should reduce the amount of times he visits there, before he starts not liking being home"

Me:"he gets bored, I can't stop him from visiting his Aunt"

Chase:"I don't like the fact that she's teaching him religious things, no shade to christianity but I want my children to choose their own path without being guilt tripped to believing in God because if he doesn't he will go to hell"

Me:"just cause she talks about it to him doesn't mean she's forcing him to believe, in order for him to choose his own path he must learn about the different religions"

He gets off the bed

Chase:"yeah whatever"

I look up at his turned off facial expression. Him and Amahle have this low key beef with each other, sometimes it's really hard for Chase to hide that he doesn't like my sister, I don't know why.



Me:"I'll talk to her babe"

Chase(smiles):"okay,let me get going"

I sigh sadly

Me:"I hate these times of the month"

Chase:"it's only a week babe, I also hate leaving you, specially now that you pregnant I can't help you around the house, but you know I always make it up to you when I get back"

Me:"I just hope those nightmares won't come back"

Chase:"as long as you take the medication you should be good"

Me:"yeah, but you know how that medication treats me when I'm pregnant, I stopped taking it when I was pregnant the first time with his brother Theodore"

Chase:"you will be fine baby, I will be back in no time, I'll try coming back earlier"

Me:"please do"

He kisses me before disappearing to the bathroom

- 
- 
- 

Lowell

- 
- 
- 

Me:"yes, I just landed at the airport..."

The driver walks towards me and takes my suitcase from me as we walk towards the car

Me:"the project is going well, the school is almost done, just give it a few months"

"That's great news Son, you should come over, it's been a while"

Me:"I will Dad, but let me start at my home first, I will see you tomorrow"

"I also saw your company is second in the rankings"

Me(laughing):"is that fear I sense? You scared of your competition?"

"Oh please, just make yourself comfortable on that second position cause we not leaving the number one spot"

Me:"well you the one who bought it up, I'm not even worried"

"(Laughing)mxxm whatever man"

I laugh at him

Me:"worry about your own company, let me get going"

"Bye"

I hang up

Me:"make a quick stop at the florist shops"

He parks the car as I head out and look for nice flowers

"Can I help you sir?"

Me:"yes, I'm looking for indigos"

Her:"this way"

I follow her as she shows me the beautiful flowers

Her:"this is very thoughtful, your wife is going to appreciate them"

Me(smiling):"she will, she's been having a very stressful year, maybe she'll appreciate these"

Her(smiling):"it's the thought that counts, she'll love them, I know I would, and maybe a box of chocolates"

Me:"I'm planning on surprising her with dinner before she gets back from work, maybe also prepare a nice bath and give her a massage, working a hospital can be draining"

Her:"woow that's so romantic, she's very lucky to have you"

Me:"I'm the lucky one, after all the bullshit I've put her through, she deserves this"

- 
- 
- 

Amahle

- 
- 
- 

I make my way in the hospital and I was already overwhelmed by nurses about my patients who need my attention

I ask the first questions I always ask as soon as I go through that door

Me:"any donar yet? What number are we on the waiting list?"

Nurse 1:"two donars available but we still number ten on the waiting list, so not today"

I sigh as my heart clenches

Me:"we still so far, people are so stingy with their hearts, just for them to rot with them in the box six feet under...."

I sigh as I calm myself down before I said something that might get me in trouble

I look at the first Nurse

Nurse 1:"fiebee morris needs your check up, she was experiencing unusual breathing and the blood she was coughing out was very dark almost black"

Me:"okay I'll get to her, she needs to go into surgery please tell her I'll be with her in a few minutes, and give her the treatment in the meantime, what is the family saying about surgery? Do they have the means for me to go about it?"

Nurse 1:"they said they made a plan, they will talk to you, they are in the waiting room"

Me:"okay, I'll be there in a few"

Nurse1:"yes doctor"

Nurse2:"Mr Mazibuko is ready to be discharged, his family is waiting for your instructions"

Me:"tell them I'll be with them just now"

Nurse 2:"yes doctor"

She leaves as I head to my office and change into my scrubs before heading out to attend to my patients

Me:"he will be fine mam just make sure he doesn't sit in positions that will strain his chest, and please strictly follow the diet plan I drafted for him, he should take his medication everyday with the amount of times instructed for a speedy recovery"

Her:"thank you so much doctor, you know you were also right about my sister in law, I went to a sangoma for second opinion about what you said, she's the one behind my son being in here, thank you so much for saving not only my son but all of us as a family"

Me:"I'm only doing my job, and please, if you need help, spiritually, you can contact me on my personal cell, but here at work it's strictly western medical problems, and I'm glad you understood when I approached you about this, instead of reporting me"

Her:"no, if I was a non believer I guess I would've acted differently, but I'm a Christian who also believes in traditions as well"

Nurse:"Doctor, you are urgently needed at ward 202!...

Me:"I'll be right there, let me just..."

Nurse(fearfully):"Its Rain! He's having a seizure, I think his heart is failing him...."

everything comes to a stand still

I drop the papers I was holding as I ran to the other end of the hospital, with my heart beating loudly as if it's going to fall off my chest it felt like the world was going in slow motion

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*\*

"Sometimes I wish I was a kid again, skinned knees are easier to fix than broken hearts" (Author)

S2

Insert 92

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Me:"pass the huber needle!"

I grab it from the nurse and fill it with  
nitroglycerin to reduce the chest pains

he is feeling, I inject it in his vein

Me:"it's okay buddy, calm down"

Me:"we need to inject him with thrombolytic drugs to restore his blood flow  
and dissolve the clots that are blocking the coronary arteries"

I use the angioplasty, which is a thin, flexible tube with a balloon at the end  
that I will thread through his artery to the blockage

Me:"inflate the balloon, so we can open up his artery, where the blood is  
blocked, his blood flow got blocked!"

I keep pumping the balloon pushing through oxygen to open up.

He finally calms down

Me:"please increase the oxygen"

She increases it, he was now resting peacefully

Me(sighs in relief):"we got him, he's back"

Nurse:"he needs a match donor he can't keep living like this"

Me:"it's been years now, he's too young for this, he's supposed to be out there  
living happily life normal kids, he needs a heart, he won't survive much longer  
with this one, it gets weaker as he grows, it's very unfortunate that he has a very  
rare blood type"

I feel tears threaten me

Me:"excuse me"

I excuse myself to the restrooms

.

.

.

Chase

.

.

.

What used to be just an intimate bed and breakfast lodge has now blossomed to be a big beautiful hotel, I wouldn't have thought of turning it into this without my wife's help, it was Lulama's idea that I turned it into a hotel, she's been very hands on in managing it while she also runs her own gallery

I make my way inside the hotel

Me:"how are the preparations going?"

Jack:"they going good, people are a bit disappointed that the hotel will be shutting down for a day, some are very angry even giving us one review ratings online"

Me:"it's only for one day, they need to chill, I need to do this for my wife, where is the painting?"

Jack:"this way"

He leads me to the entertainment room

and opens the curtains at the stage revealing the beautiful painting of us

Me(smiling):"wow, it looks beautiful, she will love this, I didn't throw her a baby shower with Theodore cause we were getting married that year, but this, she'll appreciate it, this place is coming together, show me the outside decorations"

Jack:"yes boss"

He leads the way outside and the transparent colorless theme makes it look very elegant

Me:"by when will it be all ready?"

Jack:"in four days, by Thursday"

Me:"okay,thank you, you may be excused"

He nods and walks away, I sigh as I look at my phone, it's precious's birthday tomorrow, I haven't talked to her in years

Ever since I married Lulama we drifted apart but I always call her on her birthday even though she's always rude and likes bringing up old news

I put my phone on my ear waiting for her to answer

"Chase"

Me:" my precious pearl"

"(Sighs) what do you want"

Me:"I want to take you out for your birthday"

"Why don't you take out your human trafficker"

Me:"why does everything have to be about her?"

"Because you made everything about her first when you chose her happiness over mine"

Me:"she got what she deserved, it still haunts her till this day, what more do you want? You expected me to kill her?"

"We were supposed to set her up, send her to jail where she belongs, instead you married her, giving her beautiful babies and a happy life while the girls she sold are still out there suffering, their bodies used brutally in exchange for money, heck I also still get nightmares about what we went through, that girl has never been through anything yet, all she knows is luxury, born with a silver spoon, what you did to her was nothing"

Me:"hey, you being unfair, when I met Lulama I didn't know all of this and I truly loved her, I did my best to serve her her karma but that's as far as I could go, do you know how much trouble you got me in, that cult I gave her to was caught and sent to jail because of her family who was looking for her, and you know who they going to come for when they come out? Me and her family, it's been five years, why can't you just make peace and move on"

"Until she's sold and exchanged by different men, I'll never make peace with her and as long as she's part of your life, you cannot be part of mine, bye!"



She hangs up, I wipe my forehead and sigh putting my phone back in my pocket as I make my way inside the hotel

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Before my shift ends I first go to ward 202

Me:"don't scare me like that"

Rain:"I'm sorry doctor wonder woman"

Me(chuckles):"you know wonder woman won't always be able to save you"

Rain:"yes you can, wonder woman is the strongest superhero"

I faintly smile at him

He stretches his hand and wipes a tear from my face, I didn't even notice I had tears, I wipe them away

Rain:"do I have a heart yet?"

I shake my head disappointedly looking down

Rain:"how much longer will I be here?"

Me:"this time it will be a little longer than usual, I'm so sorry..."

Rain:"it's okay, God will heal me, he's still looking for the perfect heart right?"

Me(smiles):"yes, he's still looking for the perfect one, special, filled with lots of love and kindness just for you"

I take his hand and kiss it

Rain:"did my teacher bring my homework today?"

Me:"you don't have to worry about that today baby, your body needs to rest"

He puts back the oxygen mask and takes deep breaths, then takes it off again

Rain:"can I at least do only maths"

Me(laughs):"what kind of child are you? Other kids would be happy to not have any homework but here you are begging to do maths"

Rain:"because that's our logo..."

Both of us:"an investment in knowledge pays the best interest"

We laugh at the fact that we said it at the same time

Rain:"Jinx you owe me a soda!"

I cover my face laughing

Me:"ah you got me"

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes baby"

Rain:"I miss my bedroom"

Me:"I know sweetheart, only five more days and you will be out of here"

Rain(smiles):"with a heart?"

Me:"hopefully with a new heart this time"

His smile disappears

Rain (sadly):"okay"

he yawns as his eyes start to close slowly, the injection must be starting to get to him

I put his mask back over his nose

He instantly falls asleep, my heart breaks that he went to sleep sad

Me:"goodnight sweetheart"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I park outside the house, I take my briefcase and head inside.

I switch on the lights and head

upstairs then take a shower freshening up, when I was done I changed into my comfy clothes and headed downstairs towards the kitchen where I was welcomed by a delicious smell

I smile as I watch her cooking by the stove

Me:"why does that smell like my favorite"

She looks at me laughs shyly

Her:"you always say that, everything is your favorite"

I walk towards the stove and peek on what she's cooking

Me:"mmh creamy pasta and fried chicken"

She opens the bowls on the side

Her:"green salad and sweet corn"

Me:"mmh what would I be without you mah"

Her:"you would be nothing son, let me get going, my shift ends here"

Me:"your transport arrived already?"

Her:"yes it should be here by now"

Me:"sorry for making you knock off late today, I was just feeling like your food today and not the other helper, hers just doesn't have that thing like yours"

Her(laughing):"ave usile! Let me go, I still have my own children to cook for"

Me:"at this time? You need to get home and relax"

Her:"yuhh how I wish, I have to cook for them they don't know how to cook"

Me:"wait I'll be right back"

I run out the kitchen to my bedroom upstairs and take five hundred rand notes then head back downstairs to her

Me:"here, order something on the way for dinner, just to spoil yourself for today"

She covers her mouth excitedly

Her:"thank you so much"

Me:"no problem"

She makes her way out as I stay behind dishing up for myself

I go sit by the dinner table and eat on my own after I was done, I went to the bedroom and relaxed, I switched on my phone and saw her text

Me:"shit! I totally forgot"

I jumped of the bed and ran out the house, I got in the car and drove to the airport

An hour later I arrived, I spotted them at the waiting area

She looked at me with a bored face

as the boys ran up to me

"What the hell Noah!?"

"Daddy!!?"

Me:"sorry I'm late, I thought today was supposed to be tomorrow"

I pout my lips for a kiss

Emma:"we've been waiting for hours"

She passes me without giving me a kiss

Me:"I'm sorry babe, I had a..."

Emma:"save the speech, just take us home already babe, I'm soo tired"

"Dad look what I got!"

I pick him up and look at his toy

Me:"that's so cool my boy, did you enjoy your holiday?"

Yasmeen:"yes, I wish you came with us"

Me:"I'm sorry I had to work"

Brain:"like always"

I look at him

Me:"hey, don't be like that, I'll make it up to you guys..."

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I take the flowers from the backseat as I make my way to the house, I ring the bell

The daw open and our eyes lock

Amahle:"hey"

I give her the flowers

Me:"hey"

She takes them smelling them as she makes way for me to come in

Amahle:"thank you, these are beautiful, you didn't have to, your remembered?"

Me:"I noticed how you obsessed with orchids"

Amahle:"thank you Lulo"

She goes put them in a vase with the rest of the flowers

Me:"how's my boy Rain doing?"

She sighs defeated as she sits on the couch next to me

Amahle:"I don't know how much longer he can survive with this condition, everytime he turns a year older it gets worse, I'm scared that he might not make it to his next birthday"

My heart sinks at the thought of losing him

Me:"he's a Nhlabathi, that's my son he'll make it, your gift once saved me, it'll save him too"

She shakes her head

Amahle:"Not everything can be healed with traditional medicines, this one is more depending on the western ways, it's a condition he was born with"

I press my elbows on my knees as I brush my face

Me:"you know, there are other ways to go about getting a heart for him"

Amahle (curiously):"how?"

Me:"illegally"

Amahle:"mxm, now you talking nonsense, please don't piss me off, how could you even...."

Me:"okay okay, I'm sorry, it's just, I'm just as scared as you, I shouldn't have said that I'm trying...I don't wanna lose my son"

Amahle:"we not going to lose him, I'll do whatever it takes, there has to be a match for him somewhere out there, if I was his match I would've given him mine in a heartbeat, but....(sighs)

I look at the time

Me:"I have to get going, I'll check up on you and Rain tomorrow"

Amahle:"okay, greet the wife for me"

Me:"I will, I thought I'd pass here before going home to check up on you "

Amahle:"thank you for checking up on me and for the flowers"

We share a hug, it becomes longer than anticipated as I hold her tighter, she unexpectedly bursts into tears. I kiss the top her head as she cries on my chest

Me:"he will be okay, don't cry please, Rain is stronger than we think, he's come this far, he will survive this, have hope....

Amahle:"hope? I have hope but my hope seems to not be enough to save my baby....

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"Hope sees the invisible, feels the intangible, and achieves the impossible"  
(anon)

Insert 93

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

- 
- 
- 

I was tossing and turning, I couldn't sleep thinking about Rain, what if he's having another heart attack, are the nurses checking up on him, what if he's having a nightmare and he can't sleep cause I'm not there to sing him his lullaby or tell him his favorite story.

After much tossing and discomfort

I get off the bed and take my already ironed clothes for work, I throw on sweat pants and a jacket with comfortable sneakers, I pack my bag for work and head out driving to the hospital, it's now

2:30am.

I leave my things in my office, the hospital is quiet it's not too busy.

I get inside his ward and he's sleeping peacefully, luckily the bed on the other side of his curtain is empty with clean sheets, i open the curtain and push it next to his, his eyes open disturbed by

the bed hitting against his

Me(whispers):"sorry"

He blinks a few times looking up before turning to look at me

Rain(frowns):"momma?"

Me:"it's me sweetheart, go back to sleep"

He takes off his mask and sits up leaning with his elbow on the bed

Rain (smiling):"you sleeping with me?"

Me:"yes, I'm sleeping with you tonight, sshhh don't tell anyone okay?"

Rain:"I won't"

I get on the bed and move closer to him



We share a warm long hug, I kiss his cheek multiple times before letting go of him while my arm is wrapped around him

Rain(whispering):"I was missing you momma"

Me:"I was missing you too"

Rain:"the nurse said I should stop crying because I will see you in the morning"

Me:"were you having a nightmare?"

Rain:"yes"

Me:"I could feel all the way from the house that you not okay, don't worry, mommy's here now"

Rain (hugging me):"yes"

Me:"what were you dreaming about?"

Rain:"someone was holding my heart in his hands and he was squashing it, I was feeling a lot of pain inside my chest, but he didn't want to give it to me"

I lift my head up

Me:"then what happened?"

Rain:"I was crying for wonder woman to help me, but she only covered me to protect me from the man who was squeezing my heart, she didn't want to go take my heart from him because she was scared"

Me:"but wonder woman is not scared of anything, why didn't she go save your heart"

Rain:"she was scared of the person holding my heart"

Me:"do you know how the person looks like?"

He shakes his head

Rain:"he was dressed like batman, his face had a mask like how batman does and he had long hair that looked like snake shaped"

Me:"dreadlocks?"

He shrugs his shoulders

Rain:"what are dreadlocks?"

I pull out my phone from my jacket pocket and search for dreadlocks

I show him pictures of people with dreadlocks

Me:"like that?"

He nods

Rain:"yes he had dreadlocks"

Me(sighs):"that sounds like a painful dream, I'm sorry I wasn't here"

I pull him in for a cuddle

Me:"mommy's here now, you don't have to worry about that okay"

Rain(sleepy tone):" I love you momma"

I look at him and his eyes are shut, I put his oxygen mask over him

Me:"mommy loves you too

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Now that Schools are open, mornings are back to being busy with the up and down, some looking for their shoes, while other complain about being late

Everyone was seated by the table having breakfast.

I join them as we all enjoy our breakfast

Emma:"I hope you not working night shift tonight babe"

Me:"no I'm not, but I am on call"

Yasmeen:"Dad, my teacher said there will be parent child day after we open school"

Me:"you don't want mommy to go instead?"

Emma:"Noah!"

Me:"not that I don't want to go, daddy just has a lot of work in the hospital"

Yasmeen:"I want you to come cause you have a cool job"

Brian:"Noah is too busy for that Yasmeen"

Me:"ey! Watch your tone boy"

Emma:"you should start calling him Dad, he's your stepfather"

Brian:"I only have one Dad, can we get going now, it's getting late"

He gets up and heads out, Yasmeen follows behind him

Me:"and I must drive that disrespectful brat in my car, with my time, in my space?"

Emma:"I'll talk to him"

Me:"yeah whatever, Brian will never like me, Yasmeen is still young, but we could forget about Brian he knows too much, they were fine just visiting us here I don't know why you fighting for their custody"

Emma:"because, their father was giving me a hard time with the whole visiting arrangements things"

Me:"I'm just saying, we shouldn't rush things"

Emma:"we've been together for three years now Noah since I divorced, what exactly am I rushing, or my kids are not yours?"

Me:"they are but they are kids they need more time"

Emma:"they need to also bond with their little....."

"Dada!! Up Dada!!"

I turn my head and he's holding on the fence of the stairs as he tries to crawl down

Me:"This child!"

I run up to her

Me:"London! You going to fall"

London (laughing):"dada!!"

I laugh picking her up as I kiss her all over her chubby cheeks

Me:"hey baby, daddy missed you, you were sleeping when you came back from your holiday"

London:"seeping?"

Me:"not seeping, slleeeeping"

London (laughing):"seeping!"

Me(laughing):"whatever, I can never win with you"

I give her to her mother her face turns sad as she picks her arms up for me

London:"Dada!!"

Me:"Dada should get going, I'm running late"

I get up and kiss her forehead, Emma pouts her lips and I give her a peck before heading out and drive the kids to school

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I was preparing breakfast for us while she was sleeping

A call came through as I was dishing up for us

"Hey you!"

Me:"my sweet secret, how are you doing?"

"(Sighs) I'm good not well but fine"

I laugh

Me:"talk about mixed emotions"

"When are we meeting up? I'll be available for the rest of the week"

Me:"I just got back, I need to spend time with my wife"

"You guys are not even married, why call her that"

Me:"maybe I'm planning to"

"It's been years and you still planning to?"

Me:"that's correct"

"Yet you still fooling around with me"

Me:"you still fooling around with me too"

"(Sighs) whatever, Come over tomorrow night, I've missed you too"

Me:"I'll see you tomorrow"

"Bye sweet secret"

Me(chuckles and biting lips):"bye"

I hang up and slide my phone in my sweats pocket as I head up to the bedroom

Me:"babe?"

I stand beside the bed

Me:"Bailey? Wake up babe"

She moans as she stretches herself

all over the bed

Bailey:"mmh it's morning already?"

Me:"yes, and your breakfast is ready"

She rubs her eyes before looking up at me with a smile

Bailey:"breakfast? For me?"

Me(laughing):"no for the woman we had a threesome with next to you"

She looks beside her

Me:"really? As if you'd ever allow a threesome"

I give her the food

Bailey:"you never know"

Me:"would you?"

Bailey:"maybe"

Me:"mxm you messing with me"

Bailey:"how does it feel when it's done to you"

I sit beside her and eat from her plate

Me:"you think you funny I see"

Bailey (smiling):"how did you manage to even wake up this early, we literally went to sleep a few hours ago"

Me:"a man with a goal does not sleep"

Bailey:"a goal to get me fat?"

Me(laughing):"don't you wanna relate to that song...how does it go again?..

Bailey (singing):"undibona ndityebile undiphete kahle udali undibona ndityebile undiphete kahle....

Me(singing):"ndikuphate kahle dali ndikuphate kahle...

I sing while sneaking my hand up her thighs to her coochie

She giggles as she feeds me her bacon

Bailey:"you not working today?"

Me:"I am"

She makes a sad expression

Me:"I'll be working you"

She blushes as she giggles

Bailey:"why you being so loving today? I mean yesterday it was a house full of rose petals and candles, a romantic dinner, a nice bubble bath with roses, candles a glass of wine, chocolate, flowers, expensive gifts, the best massage ever with very hot steamy awesome sex...and now it's breakfast in bed and you spending the whole day with me!? And it's not even my birthday"

Me:"can't a man spoil his wife?"

She looks at her hand with a frown

Me:"what's wrong?"

Bailey:"I'm trying to figure out why you calling me wife"

We both burst into laughter

Me:"ei you are my wife everyone already knows, you should also start knowing"

Bailey:"I'll believe it when I see it"

Me:"don worry about it sweetharr...don worry about it"

I kiss her lips

Me:"my business just blew up, I've been working so hard to get it where it's at and you saw how it was coming between us with all the traveling, but now, now I've got more employees and more contracts, our future is secured...soooo keep your nails and hands looking good at all times...(kisses her lips) cause you never know..you know....

I keep kissing her as I can't get enough of her lips

Me:"for now, let me feed you my babies"

She giggles as I go on top of her

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

It's been a very busy day and I'm exhausted. I'm on my mini lunch break with Rain, I bought us food through Uber eats, we were having pizza, he's favorite food. He is feeling way much better now than yesterday he's more talkative too

Rain:"is dad coming today?"

Me:"he said he will come check on you later"

Rain:"I miss him, he's always working"

Me:"you know your father's company is so big and have you seen the big buildings they build?"

Rain:"I know, it's a lot of work"

Me:"the harder he works the more money he makes so he can get you that experimenting room you want for your tenth birthday"

Rain (smiling):"yeah! I can't wait"

Me:"talking of birthdays, I'm sorry you couldn't have a birthday party this year"

Rain:"it's okay momma, you still bought me the best cake! And Theodore came to visit me, mamncane and dad, gogo and mkhulu... (Aunty, grandma and grandpa)

Me:"you not mad at me for not having a party?"

He shakes his head with a kind smile

Me:"aww my gumdrop"



I kiss his cheek

He has been admitted for almost three months now since may and he will be discharged this coming weekend.

He had to spend the whole holidays

here, it just breaks my heart that we go through this every year, but my baby is so optimistic, he always has a way of finding positivity out of the every situation

I take out the thick envelope in my pocket

Me:"look what your grade one classmates made for you"

I take out the folded letters with drawing and sweet messages wishing him well

Rain(smiles while rolling his eyes and shaking his head):"look at how they scribble, they can't color inside the lines"

I laugh

Me:"Hey! Be nice"

Rain:"okay, I love it"

Me:"it's very cute"

Rain:"did I get homework today?"

He has been very excited about getting homework since he started grade one this year, he specially loves to wear school uniform he says he likes the way it makes him feel smart

Me:"yes, I'll go get it for you, it's time for me to get back to work"

Rain:"okay doctor wonder woman, it's time to save the day!!"

He punches a fist in the air like a superhero about to fly

I laugh as I get up

Me:"one more kiss to boost my super healing powers"

He kisses me all over my face multiple times, we high five before I head out when I bump into someone, I look up at him

Me(smiling):"Lowell"

"Daddy!!"

We share a hug as we both make our way back in the ward

Lowell:"awu ntwana yam!"

They do their famous handshake

Rain:"ntwana ntwana"

Me:"awu zintwana zam"

They look at me with frown like I'm crazy

Rain:"please give us our privacy momma"

Lowell:"yeah it's boys time now"

Rain:"No dad, it's men's time, we going to have our man to man talk?"

Lowell:"that's right, woman please leave us men to talk "

I laugh shaking my head as I make my way out

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I park my car outside the house as I've just got back from work, I chill in the car

for a while and I go through my phone

checking into social media, I'm not a very active person on social media, I post once in a while, I usually just scroll to check on other people's posts

I log into instagram and scroll down

looking at everyone's perfect lives, it's

really amazing how perfect everyone's life is painted to be on social media, everyone is very successful that's why

I'm not a fan of social media I just use it for work, to promote the hospital

I stumble on a familiar picture when I slow down and scroll back up, it's

Lulama, she posted a picture of her and Amahle, looks like they are closer now

She tagged Amahle on it, ever since I left I cut all ties with her and blocked her on all social medias.

I press on her name and it takes me to her account

I press Amahle's picture with a caption

"I wish I was a kid again, skinned knees are easier to fix than broken hearts ☐"

I look through her pictures, she doesn't post much

on instagram, she's never been a socially active person, her last pictures are pictures of her graduation day and

her first day as a doctor, she looks happy and beautiful as always

I haven't been keeping tabs on her

When I left I decided to cut all ties

with her...a few years later after I broke up with her I learnt that she got back together with Lowell and they had a baby together, I couldn't believe it, I was really hurt, I did want her to move on, but I didn't expect her to go back to my brother, which made me doubt if she really ever loved me or she just wanted to hurt Lowell through me, it was clear that she had moved on and happy without me since she was so quick to get pregnant for him, I haven't went home ever since I left six years ago.

"Daddy!"

I look out the window

Me(smile):"hey my boy, come help me with these plastics"

I give him a plastic bag of a few things I picked on the way back

Yasmeen:"what did you buy for me dad?"

Me:"why don't you go to the kitchen and see what's inside"

He runs inside the house excitedly and I walk in after him

I pull off my tie as I walk to the bedroom

I sit on the bed and take off my shoes and the rest of my clothes

She walks out of the bathroom wrapped in a towel

Emma:"I didn't hear you come in"

Me:"I just came in a few seconds ago"

Emma:"how was work"

Me:"same old"

She drops the towel and lotions her body

Me:"are you trying to get yourself pregnant again Miss Montero"

Emma:"oh no, I'm not trying to go through that again"

She puts on her panty, I walk up to her and push it back down making it fall onto her feet as she has her back against me

Me:"I'm going to fuck you now"

Emma:"mhm"

Me:"then make you my wife"

She turns to look at me

Emma:"what?"

Me:"I want you to be my wife"

Emma:"are you proposing?"

Me:"you want me to go down on one knee?"

Emma(laugh in shock):"oh my gosh, I haven't even met your parents, your family, I don't even know where in Joburg you live"

Me:"that's not necessary, are you marrying me or my family?"

Emma:"you"

Me:"so that's a yes?"

Emma(smiling):"Yes! I'll marry you!"

She jumps on me and we kiss as we stagger towards the bed and I get on top of her

"Dada!..."

"Oh Nooo!!

She pushes me off and covers herself

Emma:"Yasmeen! Why don't you knock!"

Yasmeen:"it's London she was crying..sorry, bye!"

He puts london down and runs out

I laugh as she picks her up

Me(laughing):"this will scar Yas for life"

Emma:"I thought you locked"

I take London from her

Me:"he'll get over it, at his age I've already watched porno..

She laughs

Emma:"ah! No way at ten you already knew porn!"

Me:"hey you'd be surprised what ten year old boys get up to with no adult supervision"

Emma(laughing):"I don't wanna know"

.

.

.

\*\*

"Letting go means to come to a realization that some people are a part of your history but not part of your destiny" (Author)

\*\*

Insert 94

•

•

•

•

•

A FEW DAYS LATER

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

It's only one more day and Rain is getting discharged, I'm excited, I've missed him and I'm happy he's feeling much better now, he's gotten the treatment he needs and he can go back to school, I know my happiness will be short lived when he falls sick again but I'll just enjoy it for now and trust that everything is going to be okay.

Before heading to work I pass by my

favorite bakery, they sell the freshest

baked treats, my favorite thing to buy

is their donuts and amagwinya (fat cakes) I know it's not healthy but it

makes Rain and I very happy in the

mornings, besides we have a healthy diet plan we've kept up with for years because we have to keep his heart healthy but that doesn't mean we cannot treat ourselves now and then.

I'm welcomed by the fresh smell of

baked bread biscuits

I sigh when I notice a long line in the donut and fat cake section

I join with the hopes that it will move faster than it seems

Me:"great this is just what I need"

A guy from behind me walks past us

as he goes right to the front, he talks to the person in front after a few minutes he walks out with his order

Me:"wow, this is ridiculous"

I step out of the line and head out of the building checking the time and I'm running really late, I head to starbucks which is right next door for a latte

I feel a steaming hot sensation over my chest as my shirt is soaking wet with coffee

"Ohh shit! Fuck uhm let me..."

Next thing I know hand are all over my breasts

Me:"the hell!!"

"I'm so sorry..."

I look up at him and it's the same guy who cut the line

Me:"argh today is just not my day"

I walk out of the shop and walk across the road

"Excuse me, Miss! Please stop!"

I stop as I reach the other side of the road

Him:"you dropped your phone and car keys"

I grab them from him and walk away

"Wait!"

I look back at him

Him:"I'm really sorry, please let me make it up to you, I'll do anything"

Me:"there's nothing you can do, I'm late for work, all I wanted was to get myself breakfast, only to find my favorite places full, I settle for only coffee and instead it's served all over me, now I have to buy a whole new outfit something that was not part of my budget, while people are probably busy dying because I'm late for work, and my awesome mood is now ruined, so thank you! You have done more than enough!"

I angrily walk away as I keep fanning my burning chest while looking for a clothing shop where I can buy a new shirt

"Can I at least buy you a shirt!?"

Me:"Leave me alone!! Nx!"

I walk in Miladys fashion store

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"it's good news Mrs Harris"

Mrs Harris:"oh my God, he has a donor?"



Me:"yes, a perfect match, blood type, size and everything, we will get him to surgery as soon as possible, you very fortunate because he has a very rare blood type and those heart donors are very scares specially for children"

She bursts into tears hugging me

Mrs Harris:"thank you so much doctor, when my friend recommended this hospital I was sceptical and it was far away from Joburg, but my son's life mattered more than distance and my negetiviy...oh God, I didn't think he'd get a donor this soon"

Me:"we are heart specialist, it's our duty to fix your hearts as soon as possible, thank you for trusting us"

Mrs Harris:"indeed you are the best doctor in the country, I'm honored to be served by thee doctor Nhlabathi, I see your amazing work on social media the things you do for the community, I trust that the surgery will go well and my son is under good hands"

Me:"thank you, we'll get down with surgery right away"

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I collapse next to her after releasing

Me:"fuck!"

Her:"shit!"

Me:"that was magical"

Her:"I can't believe we still doing this"

I look at her

Me:"we wouldn't be doing it like this if it wasn't for you"

She sits up leaning against the bigger pillow

Her:"it was too late for us, we made things too complicated for us to be together"

Me:"we could've dealt with it Lulu, we grown ups, it shouldn't matter what people say"

Lulama:"I work in the media, what people say is very important to me and it's not only about what people say, you made my sister pregnant, Chase and I also got pregnant, by the time you wanted us to be together I was already married and had a baby, you were back with Amahle while in a complicated relationship with Bailey...(sighs) we just wouldn't have worked out, I mean look at how easy it is for you to cheat, you cheated on Amahle not only with me but other women, now you putting Bailey through the same shit, honestly I think I prefer being the woman you cheat with than the one you cheat on because I don't know if I could take that heart break from you, we both just toxic for each other...."

Me:"making Amahle pregnant was a mistake, we had already broken up and I was still trying to pursue Bailey and my relationship with Bailey was no strings attached at that time, She came to my place one day drunk and crying, she was hurt about something Noah did, I comforted her and one thing led to another, we didn't bother with prevention we both knew our status and I never thought much pregnancy because of her condition only to later find out that she actually was healed when she accepted her gift and got cleansed from a curse, there was nothing I could do, we tried getting back together for the sake of the baby, but two years after the baby was born things between us were just not working out, the chemistry was not there, we realized we were forcing things...so we agreed to co-parent, that's when I realized the only woman I ever truly loved, never played her, did everything in the world I could possibly do for her, and had amazing unforced bond with...was..it was you

But as you said I came too late, you had a baby and was married, which tore me apart cause I didn't think you'd move on that fast...so I settled for Bailey, and she's an amazing woman, I honestly don't deserve her because here I am doing this behind her back...

Lulama:"how did we get here? Everything used to be so perfect, so easy, no overthinking, just vibes...what happened?"

Me:"Life...bullshit...family...secrets and bad decisions"

She looks at me as I look right back into her eyes

Lulama:"we should stop this affair while it's still early, us meeting up this new year was a bad idea, we were doing well apart for the past years"

Me:"but I don't want this to stop"

I pull her closer to me and kiss her lips

Lulama:"Chase has been nothing but a good partner to me, I can't hurt him like this, I think it's time we grew up, for real this time Lowell, marry Bailey and stay faithful to her before we get sick from all this sleeping around"

Me:"sick? Are you sick?"

Lulama:"No, I don't know who else you fuck around with in your business trips"

Me(smiles):"you the only woman I fucks with"

She chuckles rolling her eyes

Lulama:"this was the last time, make Bailey your wife before you lose a diamond while chasing glitter"

Me:"you mean while chasing gold?"

She sighs looking into my eyes

Me:"you are worth more than you think"

Lulama:"but I'm not yours, I don't belong to you"

I feel my heart break painfully into a million pieces

I get up from the bed and get myself dressed

Lulama:"I'm sorry Lowell, but it's time we grow up and move on, I have a family now, a husband that loves me I..

Me:"yeah whatever Lulama, I heard you jeez, you are grown and in love and I should do the same, thank you for the blessing"

I grab my car keys and other accessories

then head out when I hear a car coming through the gate, I close the door quickly and run back to the bedroom

Me:"shit! Your husband is here, quick, get dressed!"

Lulama (in shock):"What! No he's coming back tomorrow"

Me:"I'm telling you he's here, hurry!!"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Dr:" Dr Nhlabathi the heart has arrived and the team is ready to start the surgery, the harvesting process has been done"

Me:"okay, let's get to it"

I wear my surgical gown over my scrubs

and a face mask as I make my way to the surgery room

I wash my hands thoroughly and put on my gloves as we get the surgery started cutting the little boy's chest apart

Me:"now for the transection of the inferior vena cava"

I have to explain as there are also medical students joining us

Me:"transection of the superior vena cava"

I cut off as I instruct

Me:"transection of the aorta and pulmonary artery"

They hold the heart as I cut off the last part

Me:"and finally transection of the left atrium"

I remove his head and place it on the silver plate

Me(smiling):"the patient is ready for his new heart..."

The donor's heart is prepared before placing inside the patient

After hours of surgery we had just finished with the transplant

Me:"pass me defibrillator paddles"

I shock the heart and it starts beating

everyone sighs and laughs in excitement

Me(smiling proudly):"well-done team, another successful surgery!"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

He was in stitches laughing out loud while I was telling him why I came to work so late

Me:"it's not funny rain! That idiot messed up one of my favorite shirts"

He flips his head laughing

Rain(laughing out of breath):"mommy!! Stop!!..."

I can't help but also laugh

Me:"well since you find this so funny, we not having any donuts today because of what happened"

He frowns disappointed, I laugh at him

Me:"exactly, not so funny now is it?"

Rain:"not the donuts!"

He hits his forehead

Me:"I know right, but I'll ask your father to bring them for us later"

Rain:"tomorrow I'm going home"

He stands on the bed and does a victory dance

Me:"eshee break the beds my boy so that I will hire you to repay them"

Rain:"I don't mind, I'm going to be a doctor anyway..."

Me:"oh no, I'm not hiring you as a doctor no, you will be a cleaner, and clean up all the blood on the floor and the sick patients pee in the toilets"

He quickly sits down making a disgusted face

Rain:"eewww No way!"

Me:"yes way! We short of cleaning people"

Rain:"okaaay I'll stop standing on the beds"

Me:"good boy"

I kiss his forehead

Rain:"I can't wait to jump on my bed, Theo and I can jump as much as we want to"

Me:"yep, let me get back to work, momma will come check on you later"

Rain:"okay"

I walk away

"Momma?"

I turn back to look at him

Rain:"I prayed to God to give me a heart and I promised I'll use it to be kind and help and love everyone in world with it..."

My heart sinks as a smile creeps on my face

Me:"God knows you will, that's why he's taking his time preparing it, because it will be the best heart in the world, extra...

Rain: special, I know"

I walk back up to him and we share a hug with his arms around my neck

Me:"you very special you know that?"

Rain:"yes momma"

Me:"and I would do anything in the world to protect you and save you"

Rain:"I know, you the best momma in the world"

Me(whispers kissing his head):"I love you...

.

.

.

\*\*

"The most precious jewels you'll ever have around your neck....are the arms of your children" (unknown)

Insert 95

•

•

•

•

•

Lowell

•

•

- 
- 
- 

Me:"I'm going to need you to sign here"

I give her a pen and she scribbles her  
signature

"What's going on here?"

Me:"and also sign here"

She signs again as he walks closer to us

She puts the pen down

Lulama:"hey baby, you back early"

Chase:"I am, what is he doing here?"

Me:"I was just about to leave, your wife will tell you more, I just came for her  
signature for a business agreement"

I pack my papers in the file

Lulama:"remember, I told you I want to expand my art gallery center?"

Chase:"yeah"

Lulama:"well I'll be working with Lowell's company for architect purposes"

Chase:"oh yes, I understand"

He looks at me

Chase:"I hope I'm not chasing you out"

Me:"No, we were done, I have somewhere to be"

Chase:"okay then, bye"

Me:"bye"

I walk out leaving them being all over each other



.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

We were having dinner around the table

London was sitting on her baby chair with a small table locked around it eating her fruits

Me:"how was your day at school Yasmeen?"

Yasmeen:"it was awesome, we were talking about our holidays in class"

Me:"nice and you told everyone you went to Dubai"

Yasmeen:"yes, I told them we went with my dad's private jet and my friends didn't believe me"

We laugh

Me:"you don't have to prove anything to them as long as you know what went down"

Yasmeen:"but I want to show them pictures so that they believe me"

Emma:"the pictures will be printed out soon then you can show them everything we did"

Me:"nah don't do that, it will look like you bragging, of they don't believe you, it's fine, you know what happened and you had fun with your family, that's all that matters"

Brain:"yeah they mustn't know that your precious step dad you brag about wasn't there"

I look at him and clench my teeth

Me:"and how was your day Brian?"

Brain:"it was Thursday"

I chuckle at the disrespect and sarcasm

I feel Emma's hand on mine, I look at her

as she looks at me with pleading eyes

I breath in and out calming myself down

Me:"anyway, we have good news to share with you guys, are you ready"

Yasmeen:'yeess!!"

London:"yaaaass!!"

Me:"your mother and I are getting married!"

Yasmeen (excitedly):"really!!?"

Brain (irritated):"really?"

Emma:"Noah?"

I look at her, she looks at me with a warning frown, I look back at the kids

Me:"Yep"

Yasmeen:"when are you getting married?"

Me:"this weekend, it's nothing big, we all just going to go to court as a family and get married"

Emma:"what?"

Yasmeen:"does that mean you going to adopt us?"

Me:"uhm...I

Yasmeen:"plleeeaaase"

Me:"of cause, you already my kids"

Yasmeen:"Yess!!"

London (screaming excitedly):"aahhhhh!!..."

Brain:"I want to go stay with dad"

Emma:"Brian, stop it..."

Brian:"argh I'm done..."

He pushes his plate and mistakenly drops it on the floor as it breaks into pieces

Me(agitated):"what the hell is wrong with you!! Huh!!..."

Brain:"I hate you!!! You ruined my family!! You will never be my father!! So stop fucken trying!!"

Before I knew it my hand flew across his face giving him a hot slap, while grabbing him by his shirt

"Noaah!!"

A flash of regret passed through me as he was holding his cheek breathing heavily whilst suppressing his tears

Brain:"I HATE YOU!!"

He ran upstairs and banged the door of his bedroom

I looked around and they all had disappointed faces filled with fear

London makes a sad face then bursts into tears

Yasmeen (sadly):"good night"

He left the table and sadly walked to his bedroom, I went to pick London up but Emma got her before I touched her

Emma:"leave my baby alone!"

She disappeared upstairs as well

I bang the table in frustration

Me:"Fuck!!"

.

.

.

Thandile

.  
. .

I just finished cooking dinner for my little family.

Me:"okay guys, enjoy your dinner, I'm going now"

Otha:"can I also go mama, I want to play with Rain"

Me:"you can only visit Rain when I work during the day, okay?"

Otha:"okay ma"

Menzi:"I should drive you"

Me:"no babe, I'll be fine, you guys have some fun, watch a movie not before homework though, but please don't go to bed too late, by eight it's sleep time"

Lwazi:"I have a test tomorrow so I can't watch a movie"

Me:"okay, I know you will nail it"

I kiss them on the foreheads, Menzi gets up and we share a hug and a kiss then he walks me out

Me:"are you working tomorrow?"

Menzi:"yes I am, why?"

Me:"we having a girls weekend tomorrow with my sisters, but I'll ask if we bringing kids before I decide to go"

Menzi:" I can work half day and babysit for the weekend"

Me(smiling):"you'd do that?"

Menzi:"hawu why wouldn't I"

Me:"you the best boyfriend you know that"

Menzi:"ungasho ukuthi angikwenzeli izinto" (don't say I never do anything for you)

Me:"ngingabe ngixakwe yin nje ngisho lokho?"

(Why would I even utter such words)

Menzi:"ngazi ngan phela mina masenivukwe ezenu zabetesifazane?"

(How am I supposed to know, you women have your days)

I burst into laughter as my transport hoots for me

Me:"that's my cue, ngyakthanda Magaya"

He blushes, he loves it when I call him by his clans

Menzi:"nyabona ogathi ufuna siphindele ekameleni, usufuna enye ingane"

(I see you want us to go back to the bedroom, you ready for another baby)

Me:"No thank you! Bye"

We peck each other's lips as I rush to the gate, I get in the work transport taxi as it drives off.

I never imagined myself coming so far with my life, two years ago I achieved my nursing degree, I turned out to actually love it, it is a very interesting field of work and I'm so proud of myself for coming this far, I never believed in myself and there were times when it was very hard and I'd remember my mother's words that education and success is not for people like me and we need men to be rich, I fell in love with Menzi and after he impregnated me, mom forced me to break up with him because he will never be able to take care of me and I should find a rich man, I grew up believing that

But I'm glad I finally escaped that mentally, after Reid I knew there is no easy way to success, easy things are easy to lose and come with hard consequences, Reid has been quiet for the past six years, I guess he moved on and I've been so happy, Amahle and I

made up, she forgave me and we've never been so close, I never knew that I had such an amazing sister until I got to know her, I don't know what ever happened to Mom and Thulile, all I know is that they around in Joburg but they've never bothered making contact with us although they know that we work at the

hospital but I couldn't care less....I'm at peace with my life and at this moment I don't want anything getting in the way of this, I've worked and suffered hard for it

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I got home a few minutes ago. It is kinda lonely in this house, it's actually an apartment, it's bigger than the one I used to stay in while studying, It is very expensive but very secure and beautiful, Mom insisted I move in here and she is taking care of the bills until I'm making enough money to afford this kind of place, I couldn't refuse knowing that I need a secure environment friendly place for the sake of Rain (sighs)

It's hasn't been easy juggling school while pregnant, it was even worse when Rain was born, I lost concentration, I was so close to giving up and dropping out because of the stress he caused me, being in and out of hospital, he was born with CHD (congenital heart defect)

I had to wait until he was a bit more grown to sign up for a heart transplant because there are very scarce baby heart donors, I knew he'd have a chance when he at least reaches five going up.

I did not enjoy my varsity years and

my job has become the worst pain in my heart, but the survival of my Rain is what got me going.

Lowell has been the most supportive father and he made my life much easier, including my family when it came to taking care of Rain while I focused on my studies. The existence of Rain came as a shock, after everything the doctors said about my damaged womb I really thought it was more than just witchcraft

after I accepted my gift I was told the the curse has been lifted from me and the snake has left me, I just never thought that my womb was healed, scientifically according to doctors knowledge I knew that I suffered a lot

of damage that was irreparable and I kind of accepted that I'll never have kids

But Rain happened, he has been the best yet bitter sweet gift in my life.

After a nice shower and prayer I tucked myself in bed, I had already eaten supper at the hospital with Rain.

I take my phone and my battery is low

I plug in the charger and try to push in the cord but it was blocked, I look at what could be the problem and it's the cover, I put it the other way around, funny because I don't remember taking it out, I take it out and a piece of paper falls out, I pick it up and it's a phone number, confused I turn it around and it has a short message

"Allow me to take you out for coffee...P.S. sorry about your shirt"

I shake my head as I'm reminded of my terrible morning, I charge my phone and sit back comfortably against my pillows

I take the paper and dial the number on my phone and save it as "spilt coffee"

I stalk it on WhatsApp first as I go straight for his profile picture, it's a picture of two men, I didn't quite get a good look at him earlier, I was too pissed and worried about being late to pay attention...but I'm guessing he's the darker one because the other guy is very light in complexion, but he is dark but not too dark like coffee with a bit of cremora.

I'm not sure if I should text him or call him, or just let it be, I've never been with a man in years, I never really had the time to look at men in that way, a part of me hates them, I can't figure out whether I hate men or it's love that I hate...

I sigh and put my phone away as I get comfortable in the bed

I'm letting be, the last thing I need is a man coming to complicate my life more than it already is, I'm never putting myself through that again

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"babe?"

Emma:"what?"

Me:"we going to sleep while you angry at me?"

Emma:"you slapped my child Noah, we promised to never lay hands on the children, just because I let you get away with it to me doesn't make it right!"

Me:"I'm sorry, but the boy was pushing me..."

She clicks her tongue and gets under the covers

Me:"babe, look at me, I promise I'll change, I've been controlling my anger much better now, that's why I saw that it is now the right time for us to get married, I want you to see how serious I am about changing"

She turns to look at me

Emma:"I think I made a mistake letting the kids move in permanently, what if you turn into that evil monster to them?"

I can survive it but my children just cannot, if marrying you means my kids going through that then I think all this was a bad idea...

Me(angrily):"Oh come on! You spoilt brat was poking my buttons since you guys came back! He fucken deserved it, maybe that will teach him to respect his damn elders!"

Emma:"he's fifteen! He's a child! You a grown ass man..."

(Whispers) kill her....

Emma(out of breath):"I... can't...Noah..

I let go of her neck



Me:"now look what you made me do! I'm always trying but you always manage to take me hundred steps back! I just wanted us be happy! Don't you want to be happy baby?"

Emma:"I do"

Me:"then stop fighting me, and marry me, so we can be happy"

She nods

Emma:"I'll marry you"

Me:"I'm sorry okay?"

Emma:"I forgive you"

I pull her closer to me

Me:"sshhh don't cry, we'll get married this weekend and live happily ever after, I'll never ever put my hands on you, I can control myself now, I'm getting better, you make me better Emma"

Emma:"I will talk to Brian, he was out of line"

Me:"I love you"

Emma:"I love you too babe"

We share a kiss as her hand sneaks under my pants as I push her to get on top of her

.

.

.

\*\*

"A person may break your heart and damage your pride, but never ever give them the power to break your spirit."

Insert 96

.

.

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Today is going to be a good day, I can feel it, My son is being discharged and

he will be sleeping at home, I couldn't

be more excited, I woke up extra early

so that I can dodge the long cue at the

bakery, my baby and I could use a treat.

There is a cue but it's not as long, people

really love this bakery specially their donuts.

"You too beautiful to be waiting in line"

I look up at this tall chocolate man...

Oh it's him!

Me(frowning):"You!"

He puts his hands up

Him:"I have no coffee on me, I mean no harm"

Me:"you better keep your distance"

He chuckles

Him:"I don't want you being late again, please use my special customer card"

He gives me a golden card

Me:"its fine, I can wait"

Him:"please, it would make me feel less bad about yesterday"

Me:"I want it to haunt you forever, the day you ruined my favorite shirt"

He smiles and bites his lips showing off his sparkling white teeth

Him:"how about we go to the mall when you free, and you can buy as many shirts as you want, you can also have as much coffee and donuts as you please, no limit, on me?"

I sigh looking at his dreamy small eyes

Me:"I don't know, you a stranger"

Him:"Keon Adomako"

He extends his hand for a handshake

I look at it and take the golden card

Me:"thanks for the quick pass"

I walk to the front of the line and they prepare my order within a matter of minutes

I give him back his card, he holds my hand while taking it, I remove my hand from his

Me:"thank you"

I walk away heading to the coffee shop

"So is that a no?"

I startle as I turn to look at him

Me:"are you following me?"

Keon:"I mean I didn't mean to, I just so happen to be coming in here as well, but you didn't answer me, about my offer?"

Me:"No thank you"

I turn and it was my turn to order, I ordered my latte and a hot chocolate for Rain, I walked passed him heading to my car

"Wait"

I look at him as he crosses the road coming towards me, I sigh rolling my eyes, what is up with this guy

Keon:"why?"

Me:"pardon?"

Keon:"why don't you want me to take you out? I know the first reason was because I'm a stranger, but now you know my name and last name, or you want me to tell you everything right now? Well, I'm the second born of three siblings, two brothers and a sister, was raised by a single mother, originally ghanian but was raised in South Africa...(sighs) uhm what else?...oh I'm an entrepreneur"

Me:"you will never leave me alone you?"

Keon(colgate smiles):"not until you give me this chance, and if you do not enjoy my company after, all you have to say is you don't want to see me again, and I'll vanish, forever"

I look at him thoughtfully, Lord why does he have to be so perfect, he would pass A+ for a model

Me(sighs):"fine, I'll let you know when I'm free"

Keon:"you have my number right?"

Me(smiles):"yes"

Keon:"it'd only be fair if I get yours too, just in case you don't call"

Me:"I will call, bye!"

I get in the car carefully putting my cups on the cup holders before driving away

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I made my way inside the house

Me:"flowers for my beautiful mother"

Mom:"aaww thank you son"

We share a hug as I made my way inside

Me:"where's dad?"

Mom:"he's upstairs having one of those long business phone calls"

Me:"well I am here for the lunch I was promised"

I make my way to the lounge throwing myself on the couch

Mom:"lunch? I didn't even know you were coming"

I look at her and notice she wearing her night dress and her hair is messy, I squint my eyes at her

Mom:"what?"

Me:"dad is not on a phone call up there is he?"

Mom:"he is, what do you mean?"

Me:"I'm not two years old mom"

Mom:" what's that supposed to mean, you know what, let me go call your father, the person you came here for"

Me(laughing):"you even glowing, hee go mama bear!"

She laughs making her way upstairs

Mom:"ngizokushaya wena, usile!"

I stick my tongue out as she disappears into the bedroom

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was in my office doing some paper work.

There's a knock on the door

Me:"come in"

She catwalks in and sits on my desk

exposing her thighs

Me:"how can I help you?"

Her:"the question is, how can I help you doctor Nhlabathi"

Me:"how would you like to help me?"

She gets off the table and kneels between my legs

Her:"I'll help you release some stress"

She pulls down my zip and takes out my dick

Me:"wait..."

Her:"sshhh..."

She circles her tongue around the tip before sucking it all in, she picks up the pace enjoying it as if it was supplying her with life, I feel myself at the verge

Me:"fuck!"

I release, she cleans me up with her tongue as she swallows while looking at me, she puts my dick back inside my pants

Me:"thank you for that"

Her:"I'm your nurse, I'm here to take care of you"

Me:"I appreciate it, but your services are no longer needed"

She frowns disappointedly

Me:"I'm getting married tomorrow"

Her(smiles):"uhm congratulations?"

Me:"I take marriage very seriously, I'll be faithful to one woman now, I need you to be professional around me, no more coming in my office unless it's about work, failure to do this you will be fired"

Her:"yes Doctor"

Me:"thank you, you may be excused"

I watch her as she makes her way out

I sigh and cover my face, I take my phone, I get a notification that Amahle has posted a new picture on instagram

I log in, I never react I only look through her pictures

She posted herself with her child hugging, I can't see his face as he has his back on the camera while Amahle is facing the camera, I read the caption

"Going Home!□□"

She's still very beautiful, she has grown into a very beautiful woman, you'd lose track of time staring at her inviting perfect face

She never shows her child's face on the pictures she posts even Lowell

doesn't post him, curiosity on how he looks like has crossed my mind, if he looked like Lowell or Amahle...I still can't believe she went back to Lowell, but I guess if she's happy it's good. I don't even know why I'm thinking about her now, I was doing so well forgetting about her for the past years, I did sometimes get tempted to ask Derek to stalk her life for me, but the last time I did that I

ended up ruining my fake death for her, this time I knew I had to stay away from her for good.

She looks happy this time. I'm happy to see that she moved on with her life and never gave up on her dreams, I guess it's time I also moved on sincerely this time, I really do want to change, I think maybe it's time I went to see a traditional doctor and get help, even though I don't believe it's Nessa making me a bad person, I was a bad person before she died, I'm the reason she's dead after all, but maybe I can be a better person for my daughter and Emma and her children.

I search through my gallery and find a picture of Emma with London, I post it on instagram and tag Emma

"My two favorite girls♥□□"

I get notifications as people like and comment, people be really camping on instagram

.

.

.

Chase

.

.

.

Lulama:"I had plans for this weekend though babe"

Me:"so your plans are more exciting than spending time with me?"

Lulama:"Rain is getting discharged this is really important to my sister"

Me(sigh):"fine"

Lulama:"hey, don't sulk, you making me feel bad, and I hate choosing between you two"

She tilts my head to face her and we kiss



Me:"Theo and I will just have a guys weekend then"

Lulama:"oh, I thought I was going to take him for Rain"

Me:"Theo too? Aah come on babe"

Lulama:"we'll come back tomorrow we not going to stay till Sunday"

Me (sighs sulking):"fine"

She gets on top of me wrapping her arms around my neck

Lulama:"we'll make it up to you when we get back, promise"

Me:"yeah whatever"

Lulama:"okay, I'll cancel ke"

Me:"don't do that, you know I won't let you do that, go have fun with your family, I'll stay home and wait for you like a good husband"

She kisses me and I return it

Lulama:"you the best husband in the world"

Me(smiling):"I know"

Lulama (whispering in my ear):" I want you to fuck to early labor when I get back"

I laugh biting my lip as she grinds her ass on me

Me:"be careful what you wish for now"

Lulama:"I know exactly what I want and I'm going to get it"

I pull her in for another passionate kiss

as I feel my blood rush and my man getting harder

She breaks the kiss

Lulama:"that's my cue"

Me:"ahh come on, you can't leave me like this, baby please"

She gets up but I pull her back pushing her on her back as she giggles

Me:"you not leaving until I eat my food first first"

Lulama (laughing):"babe! Theodore will be out of school any minute now"

Me:"theodore can wait"

She gasps about to say something but I shut her up with a kiss

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

There was complete silence for about ten minutes now

Me:"uhm, I need you guys to say something?"

They look at me

Mom:"are you sure about this?"

Dad:"this is a big step son"

Me:"I'm sure and I'm very ready, please dad I need you and your brothers to go plead with this girl's family"

Mom:"have you proposed to her yet?"

Me:"No, I want to surprise her by showing up with my family to her house, we don't have to announce our arrival right?"

Dad:"not necessarily"

Mom:"is Bailey ready for marriage though? Is it something you talked about"

Me:"of course, I don't call her my wife for no reason, I'm serious about this one, I've never been so sure about anything in my life"

They sit there in silence once again

Me:"I want to make Bailey a Nhlabathi"

.

.

.

Chase

.

.

.

I fill her up with my semen

I look at her as she hums a song while continuing with her packing, she had a lot of energy today, for someone who was too tired to have sex yesterday she sure had all the energy today, maybe it's a pregnancy thing

Me:"babe?"

She looks at me smiling

It's like she keeps getting more beautiful everyday

Lulama:"yes baby"

Me:"I thought we agreed about staying away from the Nhlabathis"

Lulama:"uhm...babe?"

Me:"I don't mean to sound insecure but you do have a history with Lowell and I don't think it's a good idea you work with him..."

Lulama:"but babe they are the best construction companies in Joburg"

Me:"they not the only ones, why don't you use the company you worked with for my hotel?"

Lulama:"really babe? I have already signed the papers and everything, I didn't know you'd have a problem, it's only business"

Me:"he's too comfortable with you, if it's just business then it should end in the office, you can't let your ex boyfriend come into our house as he pleases, he was not even dressed professionally, busy showing off his muscles for you..."

Lulama (smiling):"are you jealous babe?"

Me:"I'm not jealous, I'm confident with myself, I just want us to have boundaries and respect our home and marriage"

Lulama:"I understand, maybe it wasn't a good idea allowing him to come discuss business here, but from now on, it'll be strictly professional at a office, I promise"

Me:"I don't want you working with him period"

Lulama:"okay, I'll ask to terminate the contract, hopefully he lets me because businesses take contracts very seriously"

Me:"I'd appreciate it if you try"

She nod smiling, I call her to come closer with my hand, she walks closer and kiss

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were on the road home playing music and singing along, it's now late at night as I've just knocked off

Me(singing):"Ngibong' umama, ngempilo enginayo

Wangikhulisa uwedwa ngingenababa

Washabalala amaphupho akho, wazinikela kimi njengomntwana wakho

Wonk' amasonto ubungithatha uthi asambe siye enkonzweni (siye enkonzweni)

Isikhalo sakho nanamhlanje sisahleli la engqondweni (la engqondweni)

Wath' umthandazo wenza ukuthi uSathane angasondeli

Ngilondoloze mama, ngilondoloze mama, ngilondoloze mama....

I turn down the volume and look at him as he's still dancing side to side

Me:"how you feeling?"

Rain:"I'm so happy, I'm not going to be sleeping at the hospital today"

Me:"I'm so happy too"

I park inside my garage, I notice a few similar cars but pay no attention to them  
as I get Rain's bags from the boot and he takes my handbag and briefcase

I lock the car as we head upstairs to our apartment

Me:"they should really build a lift here, I can't with these steps"

Rain(running):"it's exercise momma! Come on, you can do it!!"

I laugh as I pick up my pace trying to catch up with him

Rain:"almost there, just few more steps"

Me:"doesn't make me less tired"

We finally reach the our apartment, I unlock and the lights switch on themselves

"Surprise!! Welcome home Rain!!"

We look at each other with our jaws dropped in shock

Rain(excitedly):" Yess!!!"

She runs over to Theodore as they share a big hug

Me:"guys? What are you doing here?"

Lulama:"you didn't think we'd miss our baby's arrival from the hospital?"

I walk over to hug her

Me:"Presh!?! You too!"

Presh:"a whole God mother not be here to welcome her son? Come on be serious"

She says hugging Rain

Me:"Thandile! My Gosh it's been a minute"

We share a long warm hug

I look at Rain excitedly greet and hug everyone as he pulls Theodore and Othalive to go play next to Precious's new born baby

"Sorry we late"

I look behind me and immediately scream as we attack each other with hugs as I feel tears of joy escape my eyes

Me(screaming):"Oh My God!! I haven't seen you in ages!!

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"It's not about where you are in life, or what you going through, it's who you have by your side that matters"

(Author)

Insert 97

.

.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

.

.

Me:” oh my God I can’t believe you here!”

Luca:” better believe it skat!”

After a while he puts me down as we let go  
of each other

Luca:” look who I bought with me”

He moves away and Andiswa was standing behind  
him. I scream in excitement as I feel my heart skip excitedly

Me:” ohhhhh my wooorrd!!!”

we hug each other as I pick her up a bit and  
we stumble on Luca as he tries to support us  
but we all end up falling

“mountain top!!”

Before I knew it Rain and his cousins were all on top  
of us making a mountain, we were all weak with laughter  
If this is not the best feeling in he world then I don’t know  
what is

Me(laughing):” Rain! Theo! Come on guys get off”

They get off and run back towards the lounge

Luca:” oh my that’s Rain? That little tiny human you gave birth to a few months ago?

Me(laughing):” that was years ago and yep, that’s my rainy”

Andiswa:” indeed time flies, he has grown “

I look at them smiling

Me:” you guys became permanent citizens in Cuba I see”

Andiswa:” eish friend, you don’t know half of it”

Luca:” a lot has happened”

Me:” we need to catch up, you guys go join the rest while I go take out my special reserved wine”

Luca:” while you at it also gab the whiskey too”

we laugh as they make their way to the lounge joining the others

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

“Babe?...oh there you are”

I turn to look at her as she makes her way to me by

the balcony walking around the pool area, my tank top



is looking very sexy on her showing off her bra and slim smooth light skin with her straightened long hair resting on her shoulders, this woman is very beautiful but her intelligence is even more charming, she is very matured and she knows what she wants in life, the more I spend time with her the deeper I fall for her, I always felt held back from giving her the love she deserves, the kind of love she gives to me, but now there's nothing holding me back anymore, the woman that was designed for me is right in front of me, I need to grow up and give her the best of me, all of me.

I welcome her with open arms as she hugs me back

Me:” thambo lam le khentaki”

(my kfc bone)

She giggles

Me:” ave umuhle kodwa coloredi lam”

(my beautiful colored)

She smiles as she pecks my lips

Bailey:” so Rain got discharged today”

Me:” yes I was actually with him before he got discharged and left with Amahle”

Bailey:” how is he doing? Is he feeling better?”

Me:” much more better, its like when he gets sick it gets very bad to a point where we think he might not make it as it's too much pain for a child to take but he's always so strong and fighting through and when he does get well its as if nothing ever happened and he's just so lively and full of life, I'm just hoping this was the last visit for the rest of year”

Bailey:" he's a very strong boy, he's a fighter (smiles) like his daddy"

Me(smiling):" it's a Nhlabathi thing"

Bailey: you such a good father to him he's very lucky to have you as his dad"

Me:" I'm the lucky one to be honest, he's been the biggest blessing in my life"

She looks into my eyes admirably

Me:" do you know who else has been the biggest blessing?"

Bailey:" please enlighten me, I have no idea"

Me:" Me, I've been my biggest blessing ever, I'm so grateful for me"

She laughs rolling her eyes at me

Me:" I'm joking, you are my blessing and I feel so lucky to have you as mine, I mean you could've left me all those years when I was everywhere and not being straight about where you stand in my life, but you stuck around and forgave me each time I messed up, everytime I thought, now she's going to leave me for sure, you would stay, I took your love for granted, but now I realize that I need to pull my socks up and love you right before you get tired of my shit one day and leave me, only to regret it for the rest of my life"

She blushes as her cheeks turn red looking into my eyes

Bailey:" damn did you just give a whole speech? I almost fell asleep"

Me( laughing):" a man can't even be romantic with you"

Bailey:" I love you, you know that right?"

Me:" I love you too baby"

Bailey:" I actually came to call you to come downstairs, I have something to show you"

Me(smiling):" uhh what is it?"

Bailey:" follow me"

She leads the way as we head to the dinning room

My eyes widen as I notice the nicely decorated table, its simple but very cute

Me(smiling):” babe? What’s going on? Did I miss something? Early Christmas? Ohh shit did I forget a special day? No but our birthdays have passed didn’t they? Okay I give up, I’m really sorry for forgetting, whatever it is...

She is in stitches laughing at my clueless self

Me:” don’t laugh baby, what’s going on”

Bailey:” so you can prepare me a romantic treat with no reason but I’m not allowed to?”

Me:” wow, babe, I don’t know what to say, I mean you went all out for me”

Bailey:” because you deserve it babe”

we share a kiss as we sit by the table with her sitting across me while she dishes up for me. I watch her in awe,I really feel like I don’t deserve her, she’s just out of my league

She gives me my plate

Bailey:” there you go babe”

I take the plate from her and hold her hand

Me:” I love you Bail”

She smiles pushing her hair behind her ears

Bailey(softly):” aw I love you too Lowell”

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I make my way inside the house

“Londy! Where is my princess!?”

I hear her happy screams from upstairs

“dadaaa!??”

Me:” London!?”

“aaahhhh Dadaaa!? Dadaaa!!...

I meet her half way as she gets up from her knees

runs up to me and she falls into my arms as I pick her up

Me:” how’s daddy’s princess?”

London:” ello dada”

Me:” hello princess, how are you?”

London:” hawawu”

Me:” I’m good and you?”

London:” hawawu dada”

Me:” I’m goo baby, say I’m good”

she stares at me

Me:” I’m gooood”

London:” uhm good”

My jaw drops excitedly she also copies my facial expression and we laugh

Me:” well done London, did you have a good day today princess?”

She speaks a lot of baby language that doesn’t make sense

Me(laughing):” whoa sounds like you had a really hectic day huh?”

London:” mummy she dsfjbshbsjhf dsgvbjs utside and seemy sdakjddjfh”

Me:” Yasmeen as well? Wow you had an interesting day sweetheart”

We laugh as she buries her face on my neck, I make my way inside

Brian's room after knocking, he was busy reading by his desk, I sit on his bed

Me:" hey"

Brain:" hey"

Me:" how are you?"

London:" hawawu?"

Brain:" I'm good"

Me:" I'm good too thanks for asking"

he remains quiet

Me:" we need to talk"

Brian:" I'm studying"

Me:" take a break then, I won't be long"

he sighs and turns to face me

Me:" I came to apologize, I realized I was wrong for slapping you like that, I regret it, and I'm sorry"

he looks at me confused

Me:" do you accept my apology?"

He nods unsurely

Brain:" yeah, but you an adult, why are you apologizing to a kid?"

Me:" I'm glad you recognize that I'm an adult, I'm apologizing because I was wrong and I acted out of anger, I hurt you and those were not my intentions, my intentions in your life are not to harm to hurt you in anyway but to love, raise and protect you from harm as my own children, I'm married to your mother, well I will be, so what is hers is mine too, meaning that you are my kids as well, we are a family and yes families fight, but they make up and fill the home with love and warmth, that is what our family will be about, if we have problems, we talk about it calmly and resolve it instead of walking around being mean and rude to each other, is it not exhausting to walk around with anger everyday?

When you can get rid of it by getting your feelings off your chest and talking about them?"

Brain:" I guess you right"

Me:" now I have done my part and apologized, so I would also like an apology because I was disrespected and it hurt my feelings"

Brian:" I'm sorry, I was wrong for disrespecting you, it won't happen again"

Me:" apology accepted, now, tell me what is the problem so we can talk about it and reach an understanding"

Brian:" I'm angry because you caused mom and dad to divorce and broke us apart and I wanted to live with my father not here, but mom forced us because of you"

Me:" so you feel like it's my fault your mother divorced your dad?"

he nod with a sad face

Me:" okay maybe it is partly my fault but not entirely, I never forced your mother to do anything, your mom is a grown woman who can make her own decisions in life, she knows what is best for her and you, when you are an adult old enough to make your own decisions you will understand... your mom never planned to leave your father, but because of the matters of the heart we cannot control them, we fall in love and we also fall out of love, your mother fell out of love with your father and in love with me, would you have rather had her unhappy and sad in a loveless marriage because of you and yasmeen to make you guys happy while she is sad?"

He shakes his head

Me:" you want to see her happy don't you?"

He nods

Me:" me too, you know Brian, I have been through what you going through, my parents also divorced but because I knew how unhappy my mother was with my dad, I accepted their divorce as long as it made her happy then I was also happy, the fact that they have separated doesn't stop them from being my parents, your father will always be your father no matter who he marries or who your mother marries, you will always be their son, they can never divorce you, you will

always be part of their lives, I am not here to replace your father and it's okay if you don't want to call me dad, I'll accept uncle Noah, all I ask for is respect and a friendship bond, you can visit your father as many times as you want and if you really want to go live with your father permanently then as soon as you turn eighteen you can make that decision and we will all take the necessary steps, but for now let us live and accept this moment right here, do you understand what I'm saying?"

Brian:" yes I understand"

Me:" tell me, are you interested in girls?"

Brian:" yes, I'm not gay"

I laugh

Me:" its not what I meant, okay, how many girlfriends have you had so far?"

Brian(shyly):" I'm not allowed to date"

Me(laughing): don't worry this will stay between us, I promise, I was once your age and I know you have had a girlfriend before"

Brian: I have only one ex"

Me:" and are you currently liking any other girl?"

Brian:" yes, she broke up with me because she liked my friend"

Me:" ouch, sorry about that buddy, I feel your pain, a lot of those are still going to happen but not to worry it gets better as you get older and know how to use your charms....is there another girl you like?"

Brain:" yes but I'm scared to tell her because I don't trust girls anymore"

Me:" I understand, give yourself time to grow first, finish high school, don't let girls distract you, but my point was do you see how your heart can jump from loving someone to loving someone else? Love is a confusing thing, so you need to understand that mommy is also a human being and sometimes she needs to choose herself"

Brain:" I understand now Uncle Noah, I will go apologize to mom and I will be more respectful, I just want my parents to be happy, I guess if they are happy apart then its okay"

Me(smiling proudly):” that’s what I’m talking about, lets shake on it”

we shake hands and fist pump

I get up and pick London up from the bed

Me:” let me not keep you from studying, good luck”

Brain:” thank you”

I walk out and bump into Emma

Me:” babe? What are you doing?”

she attacks me with a hug

Emma:” thank you for talking to him, I love you”

Me:” I love you too baby”

London:” ah lubu too mama

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

After playing a bunch of games, dancing and having fun the kids finally went to bed and it was just us adults catching up on life

Me:” I’m glad Cuba is treating you guys well”

Luca:” it is but I’m planning on coming back home for good next year”

Andiswa:” me too, I’m tired of Spanish, Yoh you know they even taught us in Spanish”

Me(laughing):”I know! Noah once told....



I swallow my words as soon as I realize what I just said, his name sounds so foreign coming out my mouth

Me:” uhm I know”

I sip on my drink avoiding eye contact

Presh(avoiding the awkwardness):” I think Spanish is such a romantic language though, you guys were lucky to learn”

Luca:” yeah butt it wasn’t easy specially on our first year”

Andiswa:” yeah we had to make Spanish friends to learn quicker”

Me:” oh man, I wish I got a chance to go, I even got the offer, it would’ve been cool, we always thought we were all going to go, I was really looking forward to it, but ke God had other plans I guess”

Luca:” don’t beat yourself up about it, there’s nothing fascinating about it, it’s a nice place to visit, but as for living there, ai things are different there, the low standard of living and they have really strict laws, trust me, South Africa is life, we have much more freedom than you think.. much more”

Andiswa:” he’s right, you didn’t miss out on much, education is education hey at the end of the day we all have the same medical degree we dreamt of with the field we always wanted to specialize on, that’s all that matters:”

Lulama:” yes, and besides, Rain was a blessing maybe more of a blessing than going to cuba”

I smile looking at them

Me(chuckles):” you guys like being emotional hey, yes I would’ve loved to go to Cuba but I am very content with how things turned out don’t worry”

Presh:” okay another round of shots please!”

Thandile:” yes please!”

She gives us our shots and we do a count down before gulping them down

I grab a slice of lemon from the plate and suck on it

Me:” Yuck! I still don’t understand why we do this”

Luca:" you still a kid I see"

I kick him by his knee

Me:" hey Skat, how is Tracey doing? I'm sure she's missed you, but not more than me, no one missed you more than me trust me"

he laughs as he shares quick eye contact with Andiswa

I immediately catch on, they have been eying each other since they got here and their connection was not too hard to miss

Me(smiling):" wait a damn minute!"

Presh:" wait a fucken minute!"

Lulama:" Hol up!!

Me:" spill the tea my babies, cause we already found the teabag"

they laugh

Luca:" Tracey and I broke up a year after I went to Cuba, things were just not going well...and...

Andiswa:" One day, Luca and I hooked up, we did that a couple of times with no strings attached and..

Luca:" the next thing we knew, we had fallen for each other...hard..

Me:"wwooooow"

Presh:"damn"

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

“ ready for desert!?”

Me:” I’m more than ready, you know how good your food is but you dished so little for me, you know how much I love your food, I’ve always said you should’ve been a chef”

she walks back from the kitchen with a tray covered with a steel dome food cover

Bailey:” you know how you like eating too much then later be too bloated to even stay up, tonight we leaving space for dessert”

Me:” what if I want you as dessert?”

Bailey(smiling):” please behave Nhlabathi”

Me:” you turning me on even more”

she laughs as she places the tray in front of me

Bailey:” you ready to see what we having?”

Me:” yes please”

Bailey:” close your eyes then”

I look up closing my eyes rubbing my hands together as I lick my watering lips

Me:” hurry babe, my mouth is watering”

Bailey:” open”

I look down at the tray and there’s a box on it

I look up at her

Me:”babe?”

Bailey:” open it, your dessert is inside”

I frown confused looking at her then I open the box

My eyes widen when I see tiny baby shoes, and a tiny bodysuit

written Hi Dada, my heart is pounding so fast as I pick up the

positive pregnancy test

I look up at her as she has a nervous smile

Me:” babe?”

Bailey:” yes baby?”

I look into her eyes for a while

Me:” what the hell, where is my dessert?”

She gasps in disbelief

Me:” you got my mouth watering for clothes?”

Bailey:” what? Do you understand what’s in front of you right now!?”

I laugh

Me:” I’m kidding babe, I’m just joking, calm down”

she sighs frustrated folding her arms

I stand in front of her

Me(laughing):” don’t cry”

She smiles reluctantly and turns her back on me

Bailey:” you play too much”

Me:” baby, I can’t believe you really pregnant...

She turns to look at me

Bailey:” I’m sorry, I know we were planning on waiting until we get married, I think it happened a month ago before you went to your business trip, because that’s when I...

I shut her up with a kiss as I pick her up and head to the bedroom

Me:” we going to be parents”

Bailey(smiling and giggling between the kisses):” I’m going to be a mommy”

Me:” thank you so much”

I throw her on the bed as I get on top of her

.

.

.

\*\*\*

“ Sometimes the hardest part isn’t letting go, but rather learning to start over”  
(Nicole Sobon)

Insert 98

.

.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

.

The next morning I woke up with a terrible headache

I think we went too hard on the alcohol last night, it’s been a while since I’ve had that much fun, I’ve been so caught up with work and supporting my baby through that painful experience I never really cared for hanging out with friends and just having fun.

Precious and I were the first to wake and we were busy making breakfast for very one, I have only two bedrooms so Luca and Andiswa slept on the couch, while Thandile and Lulama

shared Rain's bedroom, with Theo and Othalive, luckily it's a queen size, I was always afraid of rain rolling over and falling off so I made sure he had a big bed for enough space to roll without falling off and I slept with precious and Rain and Precious's baby

we were drinking warm water with honey lemon and ginger

it's our go to remedy with hangover

Me:" how is Justin treating you though? Is he still a darling?"

Presh:" he is hey, he's not perfect but he's trying and he's genuine"

Me(smiling):" ncwoo that's why you finally let him knock you up"

Presh:" yoh friend, we've been trying, it wasn't easy but God finally blessed us, all thanks to your help of cause with your holy water and the medicine you gave me, they've helped"

Me:" it was my pleasure babe, I'm glad I could help, now I'm also a Godmother"

we laugh lightly

She looks at me for a while

Presh:" so what's going on with you, we all have been going on and on talking about our lives but I didn't get to know how you've been, besides Rain and your career, what do you have going on the side?"

Me:" those are literally the only two important things in my life right now, I don't have the time for anything else"

Presh(sad face):" no come on babe, you never took my advice about that dating website did you? It's very safe I know a few people who are now married who met there"

Me:" ai ngeke Presh, mina anginaso isikhathi sokujola and I don't want to bring any drama in my baby's life, he's already dealing with a lot I don't need a man stressing me and having a negative mood rubbing off my baby, men are just so complicated, and my life doesn't need that right now"

Presh:" I know you afraid of getting hurt after the damage Noah did to you, but Mahle, its been six damn years, you need to move on, I'm sure there's a guy out there who is capable of giving you the love you deserve"

I shake my head

Me:" I don't want to invest my feelings in another human being, one minute they are perfect the next minute they damaged souls, I know myself I easily fall in love and I end up giving more than the person deserves, being single has been good to me"

Presh(sighs):" okay fine forget dating for settling down, but girl, you telling me you haven't been laid all these years?"

Me:" sex is not everything Presh"

she laughs sarcastically

Presh:" girrrl please, you a doctor you should know how much you need sex, just for a little bit of fun, to bring back that spark in you, that fun side of you, the rush, the glow, baby you need to release damn all those juices trapped in there are only adding to your stress, you'll have grey hairs at a young age"

Me:" I have been taking care of myself very well in that department thank you very much"

she bursts into laughter

Presh:" don't tell me about toys and fingers, we both know that ain't better than the real thing"

Me(laughing):" it is if you using them right"

Presh:" no but for real friend you are breaking my heart, please at least get a sex partner, no strings attached just have your fun and live your separate lives"

Me(sighs):" you are never going to drop this topic until I say something you wanna hear will you?"

she shakes her head

Presh:" I can literally see the salt on your hair friend"

I laugh taking a sip of my drink

Me:” fine, I wasn’t planning on considering this but...I did meet or should I say bumped into someone the other day...

Presh(smiling):” tell me more”

Me:” it wasn’t a good first interaction because he spilt coffee on me while I was in a rush to get to work, after cutting in the line at my favorite donut shop, he was my least favorite person that day, actually I could say my enemy, that’s how much I hate him for what he did, then I bumped into him again yesterday morning at the same shop, apparently he’s a regular there, but for some reason he has a card to cut the line and I don’t. anyway he borrowed me his card to make up for the other day and then offered to take me out this weekend which is today to go to the mall so he can get me a new shirt and have donuts and coffee for lunch, I said I would call him cause he just wouldn’t give up, I was actually planning on ghosting him and never call”

Presh:” whaatt you should call him! How is he? Is he cute? What’s his name? come on dude call him!”

Me(laughing):” he seems like a nice guy, but also has that fuckboy thing about him, I’ll admit he is very hot! Chocolate skin a bit lighter than me, small dreamy eyes, neat cut, dresses like a businessman, oh plus he smells very good and he has very white straight teeth, beautiful smile, really beautiful”

Presh:” oh my I can already imagine him, he’s perfect, I feel like you just described a movie star, where’s your phone we calling him”

Me:” did I mention he’s Ghanian?”

She screams then covers her mouth looking if she didn’t wake up Luca

Presh:” oh my Gosh those people, when they are hot they are hoooooot, tall dark and handsome and from Ghana, I bet you he has a dick longer than your face”

I laugh hitting her shoulder

Me(laughing):” oh my Gosh stop!”

Presh:” where is that phone?”



Me:” he’s too handsome Presh, guys who are too handsome always have something wrong with them, it’s either they abusive, they cheaters, liars or not mentally stable, they look very perfect on the outside but that’s just to distract us ladies from seeing their fucked up insides”

Presh:” and you have concluded all of this from what? The Nhlabathis? They are not all men, please don’t deprive other gentlemen out there because of those boys, you deserve a man, a real man, not cowards who hide behind their past, please you deserve to be happy again, you so young, in a few years Rain will be all grown up and moving out and you’ll only then realize you have never lived for yourself and you are not young enough to explore anymore and it’ll be too late”

I sigh and gulp down my drink

Me:”okay, you win, let me call him”

She claps her hands excitedly with a big smile

I take my phone on the counter and search his number

Presh(looking over my phone):” spilt coffee? (laughs) really?”

Me:” hey he did spill coffee on me and I’m still mad about that”

Presh:” you see what lack of sex does? You holding on to unnecessary anger you need some vitamin D”

Me:” shut up”

“hello?”

Presh(whispering):” put on loudspeaker”

I put him on loudspeaker

Me:” hello?”

“hey, I hope this is who I think it is”

Me:” who do you think it is?”

“I didn’t really get your name, but I call you African Queen and I met you at a coffee shop when I mistakenly spilt coffee on you, which I am waiting to make

up for, I hope you are the pretty lady I just mentioned cause that's the only unsaved caller I've been waiting on"

Me:" Amahle is her name, and yes this is the lady whom you ruined her shirt and she wants a new one"

" you have no idea how excited I am to hear from you Amahle, like I promised this weekend if you are free right now, I can come fetch you...or we could meet at the mall later?"

Me:" uhm we can...

Precious grabs the phone from me

Presh:" hi this is her sister aka bestie, how about we forget about the shirt for now, and come fetch her tomorrow evening, take her out for dinner, she will send you her address on whatapp, that would be much more appreciated"

" uhm okay, I don't have a problem with that as long as she is cool with it"

Me:"No...."

She covers my mouth

Presh:" she is very happy with that, thank you"

" okay then I will pick her up tomorrow evening then"

Presh:" okay enjoy the rest of your day byeee"

she hangs up I remove her hand from my mouth hitting her as she runs off but I run after her

Me:" why would you do that Precious!!"

Presh:" I'm sorry but its already done..aahhh Luca help!!"

Luca wakes up with a confused face holding his head

Luca:" whats going on?"

Me:" Her! That's what"

I run up to her but she hides behind Luca

Luca:" do I really have to be part of this? Shit why you opened the curtain, fuck my head"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

She wakes up and her eyes meet mine

Me:" good morning"

Emma:" good morning babe"

I attempt to kiss her but she block it

Emma:" I still have morning breath"

Me:" oh come on, I think we long passed that stage"

I peck her lips

Me:" how you feeling?"

Emma:" I'm good, I still can't believe we getting married today"

Me:" I'm excited about it, aren't you"

Emma:" I am, but babe, it all just feels wrong, we'll get married and only tell our parents after? My family won't be happy about this, I don't know about yours"

Me:" we not doing this for them, if they want a wedding we can still have our big wedding later with family and all that stuff, but I want us to first have an intimate ceremony first just me you and the kids and two of your friends as witnesses, it'll be fun, trust me, we don't have to do things like everybody else,

lets live for us not to please other people, at the end of the day, we are the ones who will be married to each other not them”

she gets up

She looks at me and shakes her head

Emma:” No”

Me:” excuse me?”

Emma:” I said No, we are not getting married, at least not this way”

Me:” where is this coming from? We already agreed to this”

Emma:” No Noah, you agreed to this by yourself then dragged me into it, like every other decisions you’ve made in the past years we’ve been together and I’ve always been Ms yes boss, because of the fear you’ve instilled me, I have always put your interests and needs before mine, but this is a life changing decision and I’m not about to let you take it for me, we are going to do things my way or no way, and if you not happy with that you can kill me if you want or I leave, let me go”

I feel my blood boil as a flash of anger surfaces through me

Me:” I’m not having this with you today Emma, today is supposed to be a good day, go get freshened up wear your make up make yourself look pretty, we are getting married today, and that’s the last of it, this conversation is now over”

She stands up angrily

Emma:” you can force me to do many things, but you can’t force me to marry you, we are not getting married until I meet your family and you introduce me to them, we stay there for at least a month, my kids need to be introduced, I need to know everything about you, I can’t marry a stranger, I already made the mistake of having a child with you, but marriage, we are doing things my way or you can rather kill me if you please because I’m packing my bags and I’m leaving”

I look at her, I’m a bit confused by her confidence I haven’t seen that part of her since while we were still having an affair

I take a deep breath to calm myself

Me(sighs):” fine”

Emma:” what was that?”

Me:” fine, we will go down to Joburg to meet my family during festive holidays which is in five months time, we will take the kids too, we’ll do it your way”

A smile creeps on her face

Emma:” thank you, I appreciate that”

Me:” now bring your feisty ass back here”

she gets back on the bed and I cuddle her

Me:” I should call the pastor and lawyer and cancel then”

she laugh shaking her head

Emma:” I can’t believe I almost let you make me do that”

She get off my chest and looks at me

Emma:” and another thing, you are getting professional help about your anger issues, we will go through counselling, I’m not going to spend the rest of my life being a punching bag for days you start with your episodes, I’m no more the Emma I was yesterday, I will leave you Noah, I’m not playing, if we going to do this, let’s do it right, I really love you and I want us to work but I need you to work with me”

Me:” I understand babe, I will get help, I was thinking a traditional healer”

Emma:” oh no those ones are scammers, lets get professional help from an educated doctor who will know what they dealing with, without telling you about family or witchcraft, I thought we didn’t believe in those”

Me:” yeah you right, I was just prepared to do anything to be the perfect husband for you”

Emma:” and professional help will do babe, that’s all”

Me:” okay then if you feel that way”

Emma:” I do”

We share a kiss

.  
. .  
. .

Amahle

.  
. .  
. .

After a long fun day we bid everyone goodbye and it was now only Precious and I with the kids

She is breastfeeding her baby while we are watching a movie with some popcorn, Rain is in his room playing his games

Presh:" can't believe you going to finally get laid, its been a long dry season, six years yonke ow"

Me:" ssshhh shut up"

Presh:" its just the two of us now, so how long are you planning on keeping this up friend?"

Me:" please don't start, not today Presh"

Presh:" come on friend, your plan didn't work, the ancestors can't be fooled"

Me:" I didn't fool them, Rain is a Nhlabathi, we did the ceremony and the Nhlabathi ancestors accepted him"

Presh:" but are your ancestors happy?"

Me:" what do you expect me to do Precious, I had no other choice, I couldn't risk him killing me and my baby, I tried but he literally threatened to kill me if I ever attempt to look for him again, even Derek and other men pointed me with guns threatening if I ever look for him, I will die, and those men have killed, I could see the blood in their hands spiritually, some of them were familiar from

that place we were sold from, how do you expect me to do the right thing in that situation? Huh? This was the only choice I had, and at least my baby is still alive because of my choice, even though it's not easy, but its better than death, the Nhlabathi ancestors are protecting him he won't die"

Presh:" but he will always suffer, your ancestors are punishing him through Rain and he doesn't even want to hear from you, I seriously hate that bipolar mental case"

Me:" don't worry once we've found a heart, he will be better its just that my ancestors are delaying things because they are angry but they did say he will be healed when he gets a donor"

Presh:" I really hope he gets it soon"

Me(sighs) me too friend, me too"

She pulls me in with her arm making me rest on her shoulder

Presh:" little hanna and I are here for you and Rain"

I look at the baby as she smiles with her eyes closed while sucking on the nipple

Me(kissing the baby):" and I appreciate you guys"

.

.

.

\*\*

"be strong because things will get better, it may be stormy now, but it never rains forever" (unknown)

Insert 99

.

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

.

I carefully walk to the bedroom holding the tray with breakfast while London crawls behind me following me. She always wakes up early and keeps me company most of the time since I'm an early bird as well

Me(whispering):" go wake up mama"

London:" Mama!?"

Me:" yes wake her up"

she gets up and steadily walks towards the bed

London:" up mama!! (screams out loud) maaaaaaaaa!!"

She tries to get on the bed but she's failing as it is too high for her

Emma lazily sits up with a confused sleepy face

Me:" good morning my baby"

she smiles cupping her face

Emma : " good morning babe"

I put the tray on her lap

Me:" I wasn't quiet sure if you'd want tea or coffee so I just opted for juice but I can change it make you coffee or tea, whatever you like?"

Emma(smiling in disbelief):" what is this all about?"

Me:" what do you mean, it's breakfast"

I pick London up and put her on the bed as I sit next to Emma and give her a kiss pulling her bottom lip



Emma:” thank you baby...

London:” tank you baby”

We laugh at her as I take and kiss her all over her face

Emma:” what did I do to deserve this?”

Me:” you deserve all good things babe, for just being you, I know I can become a real piece of shit sometimes, but that is all going to change from now on, I already know the best psychologist I can go to and I’d like us to go together after a few sessions on my own of cause, I really want to change, I’ve always been against gender based violence because I’ve watched my mother go through it, but here I am being no different, you have no idea how much I hate myself for the horrible person I am, I know deep down that I can do much better than this, way better, I know how a woman should be treated, all I’ve ever promised myself was that I’d do better than my father with the woman I fall for someday, she will know the true definition of love, but, I turned out to be...this, I’m still surprised that you still with me, so I’m going to make you not regret staying with me for all these years, I’ll give you what you really deserve, just give me time as I fix myself for you, our kids and myself”

She smiles emotionally looking at me

Emma:” thank you”

Me:” when you done, get yourself pretty, we going out as a family today”

Emma(smiling):” where we going?”

Me:” I don’t know I’ll let the kids decide, let me go wake them up”

Emma:” you are full of surprises you know that”

Me:” I love you”

I peck her lips as I take London to go wake up her brothers

.

.

.

Lowell

.  
. .  
I'm woken up by my ringing phone, I untangle myself from Bailey and stretch out my hand to pick it up

Me: "hello?"

"good morning son"

Me: "dad? Morning"

"you still sleeping at this time, it's almost twelve in the afternoon"

Me: "eish I had a late night"

"I didn't have to know the details, but anyway I wanted to ask if you could come over in an hour or two so we can discuss the negotiations and everything with your uncles"

I get off the bed and walk out the bedroom as I head to the lounge and out the balcony

"you still there?"

Me: "yes, uhm whoa the uncles are all already there?"

"No we'll have a conference call so I need you here so you can tell them about this girl and so they can advice you about the decision you making, it's part of the procedure"

Me: "okay I'll see you in a few then"

"okay sharp"

Me: "bye"

I drop the call and walk back to the lounge when I bump into Bailey

My heart skips a bit feeling startled

Me: "babe, you up"

Bailey: "who were you talking too?"

Me:” oh I was talking to my father, he wants me to come over there are a few things we have to discuss”

Bailey:” why did you have to sneak out the room to talk to your father”

She puts emphasis on the “ father” as she makes inverted commas in the air

Me(chuckles):” babe? What’s up with you, why you getting all worked up? I’m telling you I was talking to my father, I don’t understand what you trying to accuse me of”

Bailey:” no one accused you of anything, why are you being so defensive?”

Me:” oh my God, not now please baby, lets go back to bed before I leave”

I try to pull her closer but she steps back away from me

Bailey:” you were talking so low on the phone for me to not hear anything, since when do you talk with your father like that?”

I sigh as I feel myself getting pissed

Me:” here, check my phone, that’s what you want, check it”

She takes it and looks through it, she gives it back to me with a bit of regret on her face but she covers it with pride

Bailey:” if you really going to your father’s place, I’m coming with you”

Me:” are you being serious right now?”

Bailey:” is there a reason why I can’t go? We can also break down the good news to them together”

Me:” please don’t be like this, at least not today, let’s forget about whats happening right now, because it’s really pissing me off and can we just go back to bed so we can give each other our daily dose before I go see my dad about personal matters that only need him and I, not even my mother will be present, now can you drop the attitude and come closer?”

She steps back again

Bailey:” fine, you can go, I’m going back to sleep, hope you enjoy your time with your (emphasis)... father”

she walks away

I sigh brushing my face while shaking my head

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Precious dragged me to the mall with the kids, we were shopping for a dress of cause

Me:” I still don’t understand why I have to buy a whole brand new dress just to impress a man”

Presh:” you haven’t been out in ages, you don’t even have a decent outfit for a date in your closet”

Me:” and what is an outfit for a date? Who said I can’t wear sweatpants t shirt and sneakers on a date?”

Presh:” if he was taking you out for games yes, but dinner, hell no”

I roll my eyes as they land on Rain who is sitting still focused on my phone, I had to give it to him so he doesn’t get bored and starts wondering around and getting lost

Presh:” okay I’m done, here!”

She throws them at me

Presh:” go try those on”

I groan complaining, I am really not in the mood for this, I went in to try on the dresses, and we both liked one more than all of them, it was a nice revealing white dress, we bought shoes to go with it

We were now having lunch because Rain was hungry and he loves eating at burger king, he likes the nuggets and the chips there mostly so we settled for burger king, I didn't order a big burger as I normally would since I was leaving space for dinner, I was going through social media as we were talking

Presh:" if I were you I'd order a lot now, so when the dinner comes I can order a lite meal like a salad and a drink you know like a lady"

Me:" that I'm not doing, I'am going to eat what I please and if he doesn't like it, then good! I wouldn't want to be with someone who guards what or how I eat"

Presh:" oh dear God please don't let my girl disappoint me, she really needs this vitamin D"

We laugh

Me:" hee I wish we could see God as we pray for the things we pray for, I just want to see if would you be asking him this if you could see him and feel his mighty presence"

Presh:"Yoh aneva!"

I choke on my food as I stumble upon Noah's post on Instagram

I gulp down my drink trying to cough down the food

Rain:" momma! Are you okay!"

My airway was blocked and I couldn't breath properly, next thing I know someone is holding me from behind clenching right above my belly while bending me forward, I cough out the nugget as I'm now free to breath

Woman:" are you okay?"

Me:" I'm fine, thank you very much"

woman:" you sure, please drink water"

She hands me the cup of water and I drink up as all eyes were on me

Me:" thank you very much I'm much better"

Woman:" okay, please do be careful"

Me:" I will thank you again"

she nods and walks away as everyone minds their own business again , I look at Presh who's looking at me worriedly

Me:" I'm fine"

I feel Rain's hands rubbing my back

Me:" I'm fine pumpkin, don't worry okay?"

he nods and pouts his lips for a kiss, I lean down to him and we share a peck

Rain:" I love you okay?"

Me(chuckles):" I love you more"

We continue eating

Presh:" I saw that face, what did you see on your phone?"

Me:" it's nothing"

Presh:" it's okay you will tell me later"

I smile at her shaking my head

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

So everyone settled for a visitation at the safari, after a visit at the mall and getting some ice cream with a bit of shopping for things that the Emma wanted for herself and the kids, today was just all about them, as long as they were happy and having fun I didn't mind paying.

Me:" uh look at that!"

We were in the safari 4x4 vehicle

London hides her face on my chest fearfully

Yasmeen:" that's a Lion!"

Emma:" oh my God they so big"

London:" Dada...look"

She point at the Lions

Me:" yes princess, that's Mufasa from loin king, and simba and Nala"

London(smiling): Nala!!"

She screams in excitement

Brian:" look look it's a giraffe!"

we all look the other way at the Giraffe, I keep taking photos with the camera

Brain:" Dad?"

I look at him confused

Brian:" thank you for bringing us here"

Yasmeen:" yeah we always wanted to come here but dad didn't have enough money to take all of us"

Brain:" you didn't have to add that part Ysmeen"

Me:" you welcome boys"

Emma rests her head on my shoulder

Emma:" thank you babe, I love you so much"

Me" I love you too honey"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I was now dressed and all dolled up for the date

My heart kept skipping beats

Me:” okay now I think I’m getting nervous”

Presh:” you have blessed this date with prayers and we informed the ancestors, so don’t worry”

Me:” I’ve never been on a date in a long time, I don’t know if I still knowhow to act right”

Presh:” you will be fine, it’s that picture of Noah you saw, you were doing fine before that”

Me:” I don’t understand why he unblocked me? I’ve been blocked everywhere for all these years then the minute he unblocks me, he posts a picture of his girlfriend or wife and a baby? Is he trying to rub it on my face that he’s moved on? Wow, he did that just to spite me, I don’t believe this, he left me to go start a family with someone else? All this time I’m thinking he’s somewhere far alone running away from his fears of hurting the people he loves because of what happened in his past, kanti he actually left me for another woman... another woman? really?....he he....

I cover my face as I swallow a painful lump

Presh:” heey, forget about that one, he is fucked up, he never deserved you in the first place”

Me:” I thought...(sigh) gosh I’m so stupid! I’m so so so stupid! I actually believed he truly loved me, I sacrificed so many things for him, he used me for the last time and left me there, my stupid self tried to reach out but he still pushed me away, that wasn’t enough for me until he sent people to threaten my life! Only then I stopped trying,..... to think I still had a little hope he’d come back, that maybe he has been secretly spying on me like he did when he fake his death but ....

Presh:” okay ok sshhh come on, please lets leave that asshole in the past where he belongs, please, he doesn’t deserve your anointed tears, let us also move on



now, Noah is what we call men are trash, he's a liar and an emotional abuser, you've come this far without him, and you can still go further, I know it hurts, but Mahle you need this, move on, stop giving him so much power over you, you deserve a break, go out tonight, take your mind off Noah, off Rain, off everyone and just focus on you, and what's best for you, be selfish just this once be selfish with your heart and let it beat for you, let it show you some love, please friend"

I sigh and look at myself in the mirror

Me( nods smiling):" you right, I'm going to go out and I'm going to have fun"

Presh:" that's what I like to hear"

Me:" I'm going to be selfish and let my heart beat for me"

She hugs me from behind

Me:" but when I get back it's beating for Rain and I again"

We burst into laughter

Presh:" of cause, great now we have to fix the make up again"

She fixes my make up

My phone rings and my heart skips a beat

Me:" it's him"

Presh:" answer"

Me:" hello?"

" hey I'm at the gate, the security wants confirmation of my visit from you, I'm giving him the phone"

"evening maam"

Me:" good evening, yes the gentleman is indeed here for me, you can sign him in"

"okay mam"

" thank you"

Me(smiling):" you welcome"

He drops the call as we both stand up and look at myself in the mirror once more

Presh:" you look perfect, gorgeous, beautiful, fabulous...

Me(laughing):" jeez lets leave a few compliments for the poor guy"

She laughs as we head to the lounge, I walk up to Rain who's watching T.v

Me:" Rain?"

He looks at me and his jaw drops

Rain:" woow momma where are you going?"

Me:" I am going out with a friend, I will probably come back when you asleep, so good night okay, your other mommy Presh will stay with you"

Rain:" are you going on a date?"

we gasp as precious and I look at each other

Me:" Rain, what is a date?"

Rain:" come on mom I'm not a baby"

Me(laughing):" oh my Gosh this child!"

I peck his cheeks and his lips

Me:" goodnight sweetheart I'll see you later, or in the morning"

There is a knock by the door and I go open for him

Me:"hey"

I get out of the house quickly closing the door

Keon:" you look absolutely beautiful"

Me(blushing):" thank you, me too, I mean you too, you look handsome "

He lets out a deep yet soft chuckle

Presh( out the widow):” remember I’m tracking your location, so no funny business”

Keon:”got it! I’ll bring her home before midnight”

We walk to the car as he opens the door for me

Me:” nice car”

Keon:” thank you

.

.

.

\*\*

“there comes a time when you need to stop crossing oceans for people who wouldn’t even jump a puddle for you” (Author)

Insert 100

.

.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

.

.

We arrived at this beautiful restaurant called Sun Deck

It is at the rooftop of a fabulous five star hotel, it is out of this world I've never been in a place like this in a long time, I should really go out more, Rain would enjoy coming to places like this with me, I have turned my baby into an introvert by not being out going, it's either he's in hospital or going to school then home, I've been protecting him so much that I forget how beautiful the world is for him to see and the fact that he's living in the edge of life and death, we need to explore more.

After being shown to our table, Keon pulls out the chair for me to sit

Me:" thank you"

he takes his seat across me

He puts his elbows on the table with his hands together as his face rests on his hands and stares at me

Me(smiling)"what?"

Keon:" I'm sorry, I'm just trying to take in all of this, I mean, are you even real?"

Me:" flattery won't get you anywhere, I am still mad at you and I haven't forgotten about my shirt"

He laughs shyly looking down before looking back at me

Keon:" I will never be forgiven for that will I?"

Me:" it'll depend"

Keon:" on what exactly?"

Me:" on how this night turns out"

Keon:" in that case please do abuse that menu order until you sure that my card will decline"

Me:" with pleasure sir"

A friendly waitress comes to take or order

Me:" I'll have the sushi platter"

Keon:" I'd like the same thank you"

She jots down our orders as we also order some drinks, I settled for a sparkling lemonade, I am not planning on getting drunk with a stranger, he ordered a bottle of heineken beer

There is a bit of awkward silence so I try to break the ice

Me:” I don’t wanna lie, I’m a bit nervous”

Keon:”really? Same here but I didn’t wanna admit it first”

We laugh

Me:” it’s been a while since I’ve done dates”

Keon:” tell me about it, but I’m failing to believe you, I’m sure guys bow at your feet asking you out”

Me:” I wouldn’t say bow at my feet, but I never had the time to focus on that side of my life”

Keon:” so you are telling me you’ve been single for a while now?”

Me:” for six years to be precise but even then it ended before it could become something stable and serious”

His eyes widen surprised

Keon:” six years? No way I don’t believe you”

Me:” I swear on my father’s grave”

Keon:”may his soul continue to rest in peace”

Me:” thank you, he is”

Keon:” okay but you must have a friend on the side or something, you know that guy who’s always there when you need a shoulder?”

I laugh covering my mouth

Me:” you mean a sex partner!? Oh my god what is up with people and assuming or suggesting I have a side niggar, I am not that type of person, I respect my body and sex is not that important to me”

Keon:” wow, that is really interesting, that is not the type of person you are, tell me, what type of person are you because I am very intrigued?”

The waitress brings our drinks and food

I take a sip of my drink

Me:” what do you mean by what type of person am I?”

Keon:” like when it comes to giving a guy a chance to take you out on a date and hopefully become your man? What does it take?”

Me:” it takes him spilling coffee on my favorite shirt”

He laughs looking away from me

Keon:”so that means I have a chance to become your man?”

Me:”I don’t know about being my man, but it did give you a chance at a date”

Keon:” which was technically forced by your friend”

Me(laughing):” ah I guess it takes more than that then, oh I don’t know to be honest, I guess I have to be first emotionally connected with someone before I can physically attracted to them, I’ve never paid much attention to my dating life and interests in men, I do not like to be approached directly, give me a few hints a bit of mixed signals, make me a close friend but not really friend, spend time with me, let us get to know each other at a friendship level, make me confused on whether you my friend or man, then confess your love to me... that’s the type of man who would stand a chance of being mine”

Keon:” interesting, so can I be your close friend but not really friend?”

Me(laughing):” I mean...we already on a date, so why not”

Keon( ghanaian accent):” God don butter my bread!”

Me(blushing):” you have the accent, I love Ghanaian accent, it’s similar to Nigerian”

Keon:” well I guess I should leave my formal English aside then”

Me:” be careful now, lets respect my morals, you better keep up that formal English before I start doing things I wouldn’t normally do”

He laugh as he bites his tongue an bottom lip

Keon:” I no go stop nah”

Me:” yeah whatever it’s not cute anymore”

Keon(laughing):”yeah right”

I smile and roll my eyes at him

Keon:” tell me, what do you do for a living, you seem like a really cool person”

Me:”I’m a doctor”

Keon(surprised):” no way, I would’ve never guessed, so you beautiful and super smart? Can you get any better?”

Me(blushing):” stop it”

we continue talking and getting to know each other

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I just arrived home from my parent’s house, I find the house dark probably Bailey fell asleep already it is late.

I first check the couches by the lounge to see if she didn’t fall asleep while watching a movie or something and she wasn’t there so I went to the bedroom

I switched on the lights and the bed was still made neatly

Me:” babe!?”

I go check in the bathroom and the balcony before coming back inside and checking the kitchen, she is not in the house

Me:” Bailey!? Babe where are you?”

I sit on the couch and take my phone and dial her

She doesn't pick up as it sends me to voicemail

Me:" what the fuck bell?"

I try her again and it rings till it sends me to voicemail

I'm getting worried Bailey never just leaves without telling me that she'll be leaving . I dial her sister

" hello"

Me:" hey Amber can you give Bailey the phone"

" She's not with me"

Me:" oh she hasn't been there today"

"no she hasn't"

Me:" okay then bye"

" bye"

I drop the call and call her mother

"lowell to what do I owe the pleasure"

Me:" good evening mah how are you doing"

" I'm doing well thanks, how are you doing?"

I hear the door opening and footsteps walking inside

Me:" I'm doing well too, I was just calling to check up on you guys, it's been a while since we've been there and Bailey and I were thinking of visiting again soon"

" oh we would love that, funny because we were just talking bout you guys just yesterday"

Me:" the feeling is mutual mah, I'm glad you are still doing well, we will talk again soon okay"

"okay son bye"

Me:" good night"



I drop the call and look at her as she's sitting across me

Me:" what the Bailey? Where have you been?"

Bailey:" I went out with Zama, why?"

Me:" I was worried, you didn't tell me you were going to go out"

Bailey:" oh my bad, I didn't know I had to report to you"

Me:" it's not reporting, but I just would like to be alert about your where about, I was expecting to find you home"

Bailey:" well my bad babe I didn't plan to go out it kinda just happened and I didn't want to disturb your personal meeting with your father that lasted the whole day"

Me:" we still on that? So you went out just to spite me for going to meet up with my family?"

Bailey:"I did not do it to spite you"

Me:" you just said you didn't want to disturb me and my father, I know sarcasm when I hear it, what is up with you? Yesterday we were cool, we found we pregnant about to start a family, I'm trying to be the best I can for you, but you go ahead and act like this? What do I have to do to show you that I've changed and I'm serious about us?"

Bailey(sighs):" I'm sorry, I'm really sorry babe, I can see that you are trying, I'm still learning to trust you again, you have lied and deceived me many times and I've always forgiven, and now that I'm pregnant I told myself that one mistake, I'm leaving, I'm not staying in a toxic unfaithful relationship, the way you went about that call in the morning it kind of raised suspicions, but now I believe you cause I just talked to your mother earlier and she sent me a photo of you talking with your dad..."

Me:" you spied on me?"

Bailey:" I know it's terrible baby, I promise it won't happen again, I felt so bad"

Me:" I know I've disappointed you many times and I'm sorry for that, I thought you said you forgave me"

Bailey:" I did and I still do...."

Me:” you just don’t trust me anymore, how are we supposed to spend our lives together with no trust?”

Bailey:” I’m working on it, I’m trying okay, you can’t just build broken trust over night Lowell, it will take a while and you going to have to be patient with me”

Lowell(sighs):” fine, I understand, I broke the trust and it’s going to take a while to rebuild it, but please work with me while we rebuilt it, let us be honest with each other, if you going to start lying or hiding your whereabouts I’m going to start losing my trust for you, I still trust you because I know you’d never do me like that, so lets not ruin my trust for you as well and lets just work on gaining back yours, it will be much better that way don’t you think?”

She nods with a sad cute face

Me:” now come here”

she walks into my arms as we lie down on the couch

Bailey:” what were you and your father talking about, you looked serious on the picture”

Me:” just business mostly”

Bailey:” oh okay”

Me:” come let me kiss”

she turns over on her tummy on top of me and we share a kiss

.

.

.

Precious

.

.

.

Me:” and they lived happily ever after, the end”

I look at him and he is fast asleep and so is my baby hanna next to him

Me:” good night my boy”

I walk out of his room closing the door quietly as I go put Hanna to bed

I take my phone and call Justine

Me:” hey baby”

“ my love, how you doing?”

Me:” I’m good, I shouldn’t have bought Hanna with”

“ yeah but unfortunately I don’t have boobies with milk”

Me:” too bad, but she’s sleeping peacefully now, finally”

“ I miss you two when are you coming back I thought you were going to fly back yesterday”

Me:” babe you don’t expect me to fly all the way from England to only stay one day, I’ll be here for a couple of weeks”

“weeks? ahh no babe, you should’ve told me”

Me:” you weren’t going to agree, I have a few things I have to take care of this side”

“ like what? It’s not fair you didn’t tell me babe, really unfair”

Me:” I’m sorry baby, it’s only for two weeks, my friend needs me and I also want to go see my granny for her to bond with the baby, she has to meet her so she can give her blessings”

“ I guess I understand, but you still should’ve told me”

Me:” I’ll make it up to you, I promise”

We continue talking as he tells me about his day and how our company is doing, we are still trying, it’s nothing big yet

After a while we hang up and I made another phone call

“I can’t believe this, are you actually calling me?”

Me:” don’t be dramatic”

“I heard you were in the country, so sad I had to hear it from my wife”

Me:” actually that’s why I’m extending my stay, I want us to rebuild our bond and I’m ready to forgive and forget the past, I want to properly forgive Lulama so that I can move on from the past”

“ really? Are your sure? What changed your mind after all these years?”

Me:” I have a child now, I need to let go of some things so I can fully focus on my future”

“a child?”

Me:” I’ll text you so we can meet up and catch up”

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were relaxing by the couches around the little fire place

He had his arm around me as I was leaning on him with the back of my head on his chest as we were looking at the beautiful view, I didn’t keep up to my promise of not drinking, I didn’t expect this night going so well and this fun, I didn’t expect being so comfortable with this guy, he really is a sweet guy, he has a cheesy personality which is actually attractive and not annoying at all

I was a bit tipsy now getting very close to being drunk and his strong arms around me were not doing any justice to my suddenly adventurous hormones, it’s like my heart left my chest and decided to go beat all the way down my vagina

Keon:” I see you enjoying the wine, is it your favorite drink?”

Me:”No”

Keon:” oh? So what is your favorite?”

Me:” water, my absolute favorite”

He laughs, I join in laughing as well

Keon:” I didn’t know water can be a favorite, I thought it was just a basic need”

Me:” I’m just kidding, I’m more of a sweet red wine drinker when it comes to alcohol, as you can see”

I lift my glass up and take a sip

Keon:” you know one can tell a lot about the type of alcohol one drinks”

Me:” oh yeah? So what type of person am I judging from my favorite drink?”

Keon:” red wine lovers are usually adventurous yet introverted, very humble and organized, they also suckers for romance but don’t open up or trust easily, they value intimate family time, they also usually have a bubbly goofy personality and a great sense of humor and very warm hearted and kind”

Me:” whoa how could you tell all of that by just a drink?”

Keon:” No actually I kinda picked it up from everything you told me about yourself and your welcoming energy”

I look around and it was only us

Me:” we should probably get going before they kick us out”

Keon:” you right, you know if this wasn’t our first date, I’d suggest we book a room and sleepover, since we both not sober”

Me:” but this is our first date so we should go”

Keon:” that is correct”

we get up and he pays for our bill before heading out

After a long drive he parks in front of my apartment

I tilt my head and face him, he face me too and looks at me with a serious face

Scanning my face

Me:” well that was fun”

Keon:" I'm glad you enjoyed, hopefully we can do this again next weekend"

Me:" I'd love to do it again next weekend"

Keon:" Amahle can I be straight with you?"

Me:" oh no, you gay?"

He laughs

Keon:" what? No..why would you say that?"

Me:" I saw your profile picture on whatapp"

Keon:" that is my brother"

Me:" ohhh, sorry, please carry on"

Keon:" well, I really really like you, and I know you women enjoy this taking things slow thing, but I'm more of a, life is too short kinda person and when I want something I go ahead and grab it with both hands while the opportunity presents itself to me, I don't beat around the bush, I go straight into the woods, you a very interesting person and in just a short while of spending time with you I have become even more attracted to you, so I'd love for you to be my woman"

Me:" are you asking me to be your girlfriend right now?"

Keon:" maybe not right now, but I'm just letting you know my intentions with you, my intentions are to make you my queen, so don't be surprised by my actions towards you when I treat you like a queen"

I smile covering my face then peek at him through my fingers

Me:" I hear you, I'm attracted to you too"

His hand reaches for my chin as his thumb gently rubs my lips

Me:" uhm I should get inside, you know it's work tomorrow and everything"

Keon:" of cause"

We get out of the car, I'm holding my shoes with my hands as they were starting to get uncomfortable so I took them off in the car on our way back

We stand by the door while he waits for me to unlock, I finally unlock it

Keon:" good night then"

Me:" good night and thank you for tonight"

I open my arms and welcome him in for a hug, he so tall I have to tip toe as he lifts me a bit off the ground, his cologne makes me weak as I can feel every part of his body, he squeezes me tighter against him, I swear I felt some wetness coming through my pussy lips

Me:" okay Keon...

I break the hug

Me:" be careful now, I'm ovulating...

He laughs biting his lip, he loves doing that and it's very sexy

He unexpectedly pecks my lips

Keon:" good night Amahle"

I watch him as he walks away before getting inside the house

Presh:" how did it go...

I sigh walking to the bedroom

Me:" I'm drunk, tired and very horny right now, we'll talk in the morning!"

" oh come on!"

Me:" night night!"

.

.

.

\*\*

"knowing a person is like music, what attracts us to them is their melody, as we get to know who they are, we learn their lyrics"

Insert 101

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

(Unedited)

Three weeks later

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Me:"ndlondlo ngibingelela esithunyweni sasemakhehleni ngiphinde ngibingelele emadlozini angiphethe, nina bo donda, sontuli boMagebe...ngithobela kini zinyanya zam, ngenhlonipho nokuzithoba ngizobonga ngokungikhusela kwizitha zam ezisempini eyaziwa yibobodwa, ngibonge ngokuhlezi nigilwelwa ezinkhathini ezimnyama ngixophekile ngingaboni lutho, ngicela nehlyise umoya nipholyise izinhlyiziyo zenu ezibuhlungu ngoba nakumina sekwaphola abakwaNhlabathi sengabaxolele ngifise kubenokuthula nihlangane niphinde nixolelane nabakwaNhlabathi, manhlanje ngikhulekele ingane yami uRain ukuthi nimuphe ukuthula, usehlyungelwe kwaze kwanela, akanaso isono, ngiphinde ngicela ningi vikele njengoba sengizovula inhlyiziyo yam, ngiyivulela uthando, ngithembele kini bogogo nomkhulu ukuthi senizongikhanyisela kulendlela yothando, akukho okubi esenikumbulile ngalo bhuti engibonana naye ngakho ke kusho ukuthi aninankinga naye

( with all respect I humble myself before you, to thank you for protecting me from my enemies who are fighting a battle against me that they only know of, thank you for always fighting for me in times of darkness when I'm blinded and don't realize my surroundings, I ask you to please calm down and heal your



broken hearts because I have also healed, I have long forgiven the Nhlabathis I ask that you also forgive them come together and make peace, today I pray for my Son, I ask that you give him peace he has suffered enough pain, he has not sinned against y'all, I also ask for protection as I'm about to open up my heart again for love, I trust my ancestors that you will guide me through on this path of love, you have not revealed anything bad about this man I'm currently seeing therefore I take as you have no problems with him).....

Almighty father who art in heaven I thank you for this day, yet another day to go do what I do best, thank you for trusting me with this much power to bring about healing to the world, today I have faith once again that my son will get a donor whether it's today or when he's at the verge of taking his last breath for you work in mysterious ways and your timing is always on time, I ask for forgiveness for all the sins I've done knowingly and those I've done unknowingly, father as Rain starts his first day back at school today I ask you to be by his side may he feel your presence father as you shield him with your holy spirit that lives within him, give him the courage and the strength to accomplish whatever challenges that come with today he may face at school, as we continue to praise and worship you father in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth I pray, Amen"

I get up and walk around the house with the smoking incense before walking back to my prayer room, I take my holy water and sprinkle it all over the house.

It is now five o'clock in the morning and I'm currently preparing Rain's lunch box

and getting his school things in order, I didn't get the time to do it over the weekend, my weekends have been occupied lately as Keon and I have been going on dates, he still hasn't stepped into my house yet though, he ends by the door step, I am still trying to figure him out and I won't lie, my feelings for him are growing with each day that I talk to him or spend time with him, he's a really good guy. I'm just not sure about him meeting Rain yet, I haven't really told him I have a child, I just wanted it to be just about us him and I connecting and seeing if he's really genuine and won't get bored in a matter of weeks.

After taking a bath and preparing everything I went to wake up Rain

I walked into his bedroom and switched on the lights

I shake him gently

Me(whispering):"Rainy...wake up baby"

I run his back and he turns to face me

and stretches his arm out to me, I pull him close for a hug

Me:"wake up boy, you going to school today"

Rain(sleepy tone):" it's still night time"

Me:"No honey it's wake up time, do you want to be late for school?"

He stretches himself and rubs his eyes

He puts his hands together while his eyes are closed

Rain:"thank you God for another day, Amen"

Me:"Amen"

I pick him up as he lies his head on my shoulder making our way to the bathroom

.

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

.

Me:" thank God that went well"

Dad:"her family was really understanding for people who don't practice our culture"

Me:"how is it like discussing lobola with white people?"

Dad(laughs):"they were a bit confused when we were saying our clans introducing ourselves, it was awkward because white people don't really have clan names, so we didn't know how to greet them"

Me:"at least they didn't call a ridiculous amount like how black families do"

Dad:"they were very reasonable, they were just cooperating to respect our culture"

Me:"so even 50k wasn't going to be a problem"

Dad:"it wasn't but we couldn't cheat them like that, the mother is half black so she knows these things"

Me:"but I'm sure they were very happy with 500k I wouldn't mind paying more since I got her pregnant first"

Dad:"500k was already a ridiculous amount they were very happy"

Me:"so now this part is over, what comes next?"

Dad:"the lobola celebration which is the traditional wedding"

Me:"argh can't we skip that part, their white anyway I'm sure they don't care much about the traditional stuff, we just want a small wedding with few family members and close friends that's it, then we can all move on, I don't want these weddings that take weeks, I just want to get married and focus on my little family and our empire"

Dad:"I understand, as long as that's what Bailey also wants, then it's totally cool"

Me:" yeah that's what we both want"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

" Should anyone present know of any reason that this couple should not be joined in holy matrimony, speak now or forever hold your peace"

My heart drops as my eyes land on her

She's getting married!

Me:"No! I object!....

No one pays attention to me as they proceed and seal it with a kiss, they walk away as if I'm not there

Me:"No wait, you can't get married! Please stop!

\*\*

"Noah!?"

Me:"No please, come back!"

"Noah wake up you going to be late!"

Me:"please.. don't do it...

I get up trying to catch my breath as water showers down my face, I wipe it off using my hands

Me(angrily):"what the fuck Emma!!"

Emma:"you were having a nightmare and not waking up"

Me:"aarggh! That was so fucken unnecessary!"

I get up and bump her with my shoulder

Me:"get off the way!!"

I slam the door shut as I stand in front of the sink trying to calm myself down

"Babe, I'm sorry, are you okay?"

I look at the door then walk up to it and open for her

Me(sighs):"no, I'm sorry, I shouldn't have raised my voice like that"

Emma:"I understand it's not nice being waken up by water"

Me:"stop justifying my actions, how will I learn from it if you make it seem okay, is it okay that I just raised my voice like that? That I pushed you like that? Do you like it when I treat you like that? Because if you do then there's no point of the therapy I'm attending"

Emma:"No it's not okay"

Me:"then stop understanding nonsense, allow me to apologise if I see that I was wrong and speak up if you feel like I did something that hurt your feelings, that's how we can make this work"

She smiles at me proudly

Emma:"in just a short while you've learnt so much, I'm so proud of you, from now on I won't justify anything, infact...damn right you should be sorry! I didn't deserve how you snapped at me! Get your act together man!"

We burst into laughter as I pulled her close for a kiss

Me:"I love you babe"

She wraps her arms around my neck

Emma:"I love you too baby, what was your nightmare about, it sounded like you were stopping a wedding"

Me:"I was sleep talking?"

Emma:"yeah what were you dreaming about?"

Me(sighs):"honestly I don't even remember"

Emma:"okay, go take a bath babe, you already running late"

I peck her lips once more as I head back to the bathroom

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

I was chilling with Blair in my office

Yes, we are still friends, she's not a saint and neither am I but we have come a very long way and we have made something of ourselves, we were once young and did some stupid things for money we didn't even need, we have learnt from our past and we still learning as we are not perfect yet. But she's the only human being who's always been there for me through thick and thin and never judge me as she understands me better than anyone

Blair:"That's strange why is she being nice now all of a sudden?"

Me:"I also have no idea I mean I know she has been distant from Chase because of me"

Blair:"do you think she ever told Chase about what you did to her?"

Me:"No I don't think so, I mean Chase loves Presh, he would've told me and most probably left me, but we still together, no man would stay with a woman who did that to their sister or family, if he knew the things I used to do to other girls, we wouldn't have made it this far, he would've never married me or even wanted to have kids with a woman who can sell people"

Blair:"yeah you right, the way that man loves you, he doesn't know a thing"

Me:"I just don't trust Precious, what if she's just pretending, what if she did not tell him for all these years just to wait for us to get married have kids and be happy and everything so that then only she'll come back and strike and destroy

everything we've built together, she definitely has an agenda I don't buy her suddenly kind act"

Blair:"or it could be that from all those years away she got to find herself and accepted what happened, fixed herself, attended therapy, appreciated the love from her boyfriend, and now that she has a baby, she saw that she needs to make peace with her past and move on, you know babies change people, alot, I mean look at you"

Me(chuckles):"yeah or it could be that, but I need to talk to her, alone, I really have to find out what she's really doing"

Blair:"bit she's already left?"

Me:"she's coming back for the December holidays, besides Chase has been acting a bit off lately since he came back from his business trip three weeks ago when I had to leave him for Rain's welcome home, I can't tell whether it's stress from work or what is it, I'm becoming paranoid thinking maybe Precious has told him something and I'm afraid to even ask him what's the matter, I'm not ready to lose him"

Blair:"you have to ask him you'd find that maybe it's just something you said or did that didn't sit well with him and you saw nothing wrong with it...once you live with someone for too long little thing irritate you and you could be mad at that person for weeks expecting them to realize what they did and apologize without having to tell them, it's crazy I know"

Me:"very crazy"

Blair:"lunch is almost over, pass me the chicken there"

I push the plate towards her

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I made my way inside the hospital

Me:"how far are we?"

Nurse:"he's sitting on number five now"

A smile creeps on my face

Me:"wow we very close, looks like this year we getting a heart"

Nurse:"definitely, oh here's your documents and today's appointments"

Me:"thank you, I can't wait till I can go officially start surgery"

Nurse:"you are a good doctor just two more years then you can start doing the big surgeries without referring to specialist"

Me(smiling):"yeah you right, enjoy the rest of your day"

Nurse:"you too doctor"

She smiles widely at me in a suspicious manner, I look at the receptionist who also has a goofy smile and keeps stealing glances at me as well as a few nurses who walk past us

Me(frowns smiling suspiciously):" am I the only one missing something here?"

Nurse:"what are you talking about?"

I shake my head

Me:"nothing, but I will find out"

I get in my office, a gasp escapes my mouth as I notice a bunch of flowers on my desk, I've been getting these alot lately, no wonder everyone was being all awkward, I walk up to my desk as I grap them and devour the fresh smell, I like how he always brings me different kinds of flowers, I don't have a specific favorite when it comes to flowers I love them all as long as they smell nice and look beautiful, but with the way he's going on I might end up running out of space in the house, maybe I should make our balcony a garden of flowers, that would be nice plus it's a very spacious balcony, I'll need to get more flowerpots, I should also keep some here in the office..oh no that's a bad idea, some patients might be allergic



I find a small letter inside, I take it and read it

"Beautiful flowers for a beautiful lady, hope you have a wonderful day, if you look carefully at the flowers you'll find a little snack too, please try not to eat a heavy lunch today, I'm picking you up for dinner at my place...xoxo"

I dig in the flowers looking for the snack

and I find chocolate which is ferrero rocher scattered all over at the base of the chocolate, I first find three but the more I look the more balls of chocolate I find, I find myself giggling louder with each ball I found like a little child on an Easter hunt, I sit back opening one ball

as I take a bite and chew it slowly savouring the taste before throwing the rest of it inside, I rest on the chair blushing while staring at the flowers, no one has ever done this for me, Keon is so sweet and very romantic

I take my phone and take pictures of the flowers with the chocolates around them

I post them on facebook and instagram

adding a caption "I could get used to starting my day off like this... somebody catch me I'm falling hard!☐♥☐☐"

I also post the same on my WhatsApp status with the same caption.

He views my status first, I smile biting my lip as I notice he's typing, probably going to say something about my status

Indeed his message comes through, I wait for a little bit before opening it.

"(Spilt coffee) I've already fallen, so don't worry, keep falling, I'll catch you☐"

I laugh as I feel my cheeks heating up

Me:" are you really strong enough to catch me?"

He reads immediately and he's already typing

"(Spilt coffee) I've been strong enough babe, don't be afraid, I got you ♥☐"

Me(blushing):" okay then, I'll keep that in mind"

"(Spilt coffee) I hope you don't mind me inviting you to my place but I wanted to prepare something for us even better and a bit more private than restaurants, I know it's Monday and what better way to start the week right?"

Me: "I feel you, I will see you tonight"

"(Spilt coffee) should I pick you up at your place or straight from work?"

Me: "my place will do"

"(Spilt coffee) your place it is, I'll see you later then, have a great day ☐"

Me: "you too have a great day ☐"

"(Spilt coffee)♥☐"

I log off. I go through my contacts and land on mom, I press on her number and call her

"My baby"

Me: "hello mama, unjani kodwa"

(How are you doing?)

"I'm doing much better now that you called, what do I owe this pleasure phela phone calls from my daughters are very rare nowadays"

Me: "hawuuu maahh, I always check up on you mina uLulu umuntu ongafoni"

(It's Lulu who doesn't call you)

"Both of you niyafana you really are twins, even actions"

Me: "okay ke ngiyazixolisela ke mina ke but you have to understand because I was just stressed phela mina nginengane egulayo, uLulu ke yena angaz ukuthi ithini eyakhe iexcuse"

(I'm sorry on my behalf.... But I have a sick baby, with Lulama I don't really know what's her excuse)

She laughs at me

"Look at you blaming your child for neglecting your mother"

Me(laughing):"come on mah nawe unehaba we were literally talking just last week though"

"Yeah whatever, what do you want"

Me:"maahh what makes you think I called because I want something"

"You don't?"

Me(laughing):"okay I do"

"(Laughing) I knew it, what is it?"

Me:"can you please babysit Rain for me, pretty please please please"

"Ayibo isn't he going to school? Why in the during the week?"

Me:"please I'll bring him with his uniform and everything already ironed, I'll be working night shift tonight so I don't want him being late"

Nurse:"doctor the patient is ready to come in"

Me:"okay just a few minutes"

Nurse:"okay"

"You are at work but you will be working night shift?"

Shit!

Me:"yes uhm it's a busy day today one of the doctors are off sick so I was asked to...."

"You don't have to lie to me Mahle, I was also once young, if this is about a man just say you going on a date and zip it I won't be asking you about details until you are ready to tell me, you can bring Rain over"

Me(sighs):"phew, thank you mom, you a life saver and yes, it is a date"

"I'm so happy you are finally moving on and starting over giving other gentlemen out there a chance, you are very beautiful my daughter and you deserve a man who will treat you the way you deserve, this shows that you at a point in your life where you have found your happiness and it's value and now you are ready to share it with someone else, remember be with someone who is happy on their own so that when you two are together you are not depending on

each other to be happy but are happier with each other so should he decide to leave, you won't feel like you didn't know what happiness was before you met him, I'm glad you took your time from dating and focused on yourself and your child, but now he's all grown up and you also need to have a bit of fun, you still very young, you need it, just don't rush it, have your fun, getting to know someone is very important and fun at the same time as you are discovering more and more about them, and keep in mind while you getting attracted more and more you also think about if him being with you will also benefit Rain, his qualities need not to only fulfill you but what's best for your baby as well if you decide to get serious"

Me:"thank you for the words of wisdom mom, I'll keep them in mind, Rain will always come first and if he's not fit to be his father then his not fit to be my man, I'm just scared of falling too hard for him, I don't want to get hurt again"

"Just take it one step at a time, don't over think it, enjoy your date"

Me:"yes mah, thank you again, bye"

"Bye"

I hang up and smile to myself as I go check on the comments, most comments were kind with people admiring I didn't notice any negative comments. I put my phone away and packed the flowers on the side of my desk as I got ready to start the day

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Like wildflowers you must allow yourself to grow in all the places, people thought you never would" (unknown)

Insert 102

•

•

•

•

•

Lowell

•

•

•

•

•

I was at the Fourways mall, in the jewelry store called Arthur Kaplan looking at their rings, their jewelry is very expensive

and I'm having a hard time picking the perfect ring for Bailey

"Oh that is beautiful, cushion cut diamond ring, perfect engagement ring"

I look at her, she's wearing a uniform with the store's logo

Me:"you think she will like it?"

Her:"as long as it's real diamonds any woman will love it"

Me:"okay but I was also looking at this one and I can't make up my mind between the two"

Her:"oh yes the emerald cut is way more sophisticated if your woman is a lady of class, I'd say take this one, but if you want cheaper you can go for...."

Me:"please don't finish that sentence, I don't do cheap neither does my wife, I'll take this one and that big stone one"

She nods and smiles as she leads me towards the transparent glass counter

I look at other jewelry as she was busy at the till

Me:"I also like this necklace too, how many carats?"

Her:"that is 10 carats"

Me:"I'll take it too"

Her:"alrighty I'll get those ready for you"

I nod, my eyes land on the lady looking at rings, she steals a glance at me and quickly looks away, she's been doing that for a while now so this time I decided to not move my eyes from her, she stole a glance again and laughed at herself embarrassingly, I smiled as I proceeded with the payments

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

.

I just finished up surgery, another successful transplant, I've been getting a lot of heart transplant surgeries lately more than other parts of the chest, it was weird but and they've all been successful surgeries I haven't lost a life during heart surgery since the year started which is a good thing but also a bit strange I mean I know I am good but I have never had it this smooth for this long, anyway I wasn't complaining as I was getting a lot of recommendations and good reviews.

I was busy on my laptop getting some work done.

I got a few notifications on my phone

I checked it and it was comments on

pictures of London, Emma posted a few pictures of her, she likes taking her for photoshoots and they take really cute pictures and posts them tagging me in all of them.

I ended up scrolling I stop at Amahle's post, she posted flowers with chocolates, I read her captions

"I could get used to starting my day off like this... somebody catch me I'm falling hard!☐♥☐☐"

I felt something in me move making me uncomfortable as it stang

This might not be a good idea but I went into her account to look at more pictures

She's definitely seeing someone and it's not Lowell, even though she never shows his face, she only shows them holdings hands, or pictures of fancy food with only part of him showing but he's not facing the camera showing the side of his face and his wearing sunglasses, he looks like a big guy, he probably one of those niggars who gym and take steroids or drink shakes to be buff, his dark skinned, I didn't think dark skinned were her type I mean dark girls usually prefer light guys or maybe not.

I sigh staring at her full body pictures

smiling showing off her perfect white straight teeth

I log off and dial Derek

"Boss?"

Me:"hey wassup Derek"

"I'm good boss long time no speak"

Me:"yeah I've been caught up, how is the club doing?"

"Still doing better than ever boss"

Me:"I can see the figures in my bank account keep increasing, impressive so I guess Lowell has been doing a good job managing it"

"Yes, he comes in and check most of the time"

Me:"that good, how are things with the family there, how is Norah doing?"

"Your mother and father got back together"

Me:"what? When did that happen?"

"Four years back, two years after the divorce, your mother tried dating other people but your father secretly scared off all the men and he started being romantic with her and spending more time as "friends" they ended up getting back together"

Me:" wow, I give up with those two"

" I guess it was true love after all"

Me:"yeah, and what's happening with Amahle? Is she doing okay?"

"I don't know boss you told us to stop keeping tabs on her"

Me:"oh yeah, that's correct, uhm well I'll be coming down in a few months for the holidays"

"Yoh a lot has changed this side but you should come, your family will appreciate it"

Me:"yeah, let me get back to work, we will talk"

"Sho boss"

I hang up and continue with my work

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I park inside the school by the parking lot as I make my way out.

I'm wearing my white cape over my formal clothes and stethoscope around my neck, Rain loves it when I come fetch him dressed like a doctor, he says he wants everyone to see his mom is a superhero...I had to knock off an hour early so I'll get enough time to drop him off and prepare myself



I walk towards the school field as I look around for him, after a few seconds I notice him running around with other kids

Me:"Oh my God Rain! This child my God"

I walk closer to the field

Me:"Raaaiin!!"

He paused and looks up at me then waves smiling widely

He fist pumps his friends before taking his bag and shoes and walking on the dusty grass and sand with his grey socks, I shake my head as he approaches me

Rain:"I can explain!"

Me:"there's nothing to explain I've caught you red handed"

Rain:"I'm sorry momma"

Me:"don't give me that, we will talk in the car, give me a hug first"

We share a hug, I attempt to peck him but he moves his face

Me:"what?"

Rain:"not in front of my friends, they will think I'm a baby"

Me:"but you my baby"

Rain:"yeah but they don't have to see that, let's go to the car first"

Me:"woooow"

I held him around his shoulder as we walked to the car

Rain:"my friends said your cape looks cool"

Me:"I'm glad they like it"

We get in the car and I drive out the school heading home

He kisses me multiple times on the cheek as I'm driving I can't help but giggle

Me:"whoa that's how much you've been holding back?"

Rain:"Yes, I missed you"

Me:"I missed you more, we will pass the shops first so you can buy whatever you want to eat when you go to granny's house"

Rain(excited):"we going to granny's house!?"

Me:"mommy has to work at night tonight so you will have to sleep over at granny's, only for tonight okay?"

Rain:"Yessss!!"

Me:"you not mad?"

Rain:"No I love granny's house"

Me(smiling):"right, it's only for tonight though I'll pick you up from school tomorrow"

Rain:"okay!"

After the shops we got home and took his stuff then I quickly rushed him to his Granny's who only lives thirty minutes away but with the speed I was driving at it only took us twenty minutes.

I took his stuff and we head to the house

After pressing the button mom opened

Rain attacks her with a hug

Me:"hey mah"

We also share a hug before walking inside, I give her Rain's things

Me:"thank you so much for doing this, I owe you"

Mom:"don't be silly, I'm his granny it's my duty to babysit while you go out"

Me:"you know I just don't trust these nannies"

Mom:"never ever get one, not while still alive"

Me:"is dad home?"

Mom:"no his at work"

Me:"okay, I'll see you tomorrow then"

She walks me out

Mom:"enjoy and please don't do anything I wouldn't do"

Me:"can't promise anything"

We laugh as I get in the car and drive back to my apartment

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I have already prepared everything nicely, mom cooked the food for me, I just set the table, mom and dad are both here, we just waiting on Bailey to come home from her mother's place, I was a bit nervous, she went home before she knew what she was going to hear from her parents and the lobola negotiations shocked her, we last spoke on the phone when she was asking me what was going on and complaining about why didn't I tell her but she was also excited

Today she's coming back and I know the first thing she'll want to talk about is what happened at home

Me:"do you think she will like this?"

Mom:"which woman wouldn't like this, stop stressing"

Dad:"you acting like this is the first romantic dinner you've ever prepared for her"

Me:"well it is the first engagement dinner, what if she says no"

Dad:"she already knows you want to marry her, she wouldn't have let us continue the negotiations if she was going to say no"

Mom:"don't worry son, she loves you, she'll be thrilled by this, and the fact that you invited us will mean a lot to her"

Me:"she deserves this after everything I put her through, she deserves to be happy"

Mom:"and so do you, I hope you also just as happy and not only thinking about her happiness"

I remain quiet as we continue arranging everything

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

There was a knock at the door

My heart pounded hard against my chest

as I fixed my natural hair one more time

I managed to pull of a cute hairstyle and laid the edges as well, I haven't let out my hair to shine in a while as I always got a weave on, it's a lot of effort to style natural afro it needs me in a certain mood

There was a knock again it was a bit louder this time

I gulped down the bit of wine I had left before throwing in a mentos strawberry sweet, I turned to look at my ass

Me:"mmh not bad babies"

After I was sure I looked perfect I went for the door when there was a knock again

I took a deep breath before opening

Our eyes met and he smiled I smiled back

Me : "hey"

Keon:" hey beautiful"

His voice does something to my lady parts, he is looking too fine, I really hope I can control myself tonight

After locking the door we head to the car and drove off

Keon:"you look fucking stunning love"

I swear I heard "I'm going to fuck you love" my lady parts danced

Me:"pardon?"

Keon:"you look fucking stunning love"

Me(blushing):" thank you, you also look fuc.... handsome"

He chuckled

Keon:"thank you love"

I hate how I always feel like this around him, I really don't know how much longer I can resist, this is too much temptation, I always get wet and all I think about is him dominating my body, but it's still too soon that's why I always fantasize, I used to have only one man's image when touching myself but since Keon came to the picture he has completely taken over my brain

We finally get to this huge house

He parks next to the Lamborghini, he always fetches me with but tonight he fetched me with the bigger car the Rand rover sport

We got in the house and my eyes were wondering all over the place, the transparent staircase had me in awe

Me:"woow you have a beautiful house"

Keon:"thank you, it just need one more thing"

Me:"what could this huge ass gorgeous house possible still need?"

Keon:"it's still just a house, it needs a gorgeous woman to make it a home"

He says that while looking into my eyes

I shy away smiling as he takes my hand and leads us outside in what looks like a flower garden which had a cute set up and little bulbs of lights all over

Me:"this is beautiful Keon..."

He helps me sit down

Keon:"let me go get the food"

He walks back inside the house

I quickly take out my little mirror to check myself, I powdered my nose a little bit more, I breath in my hand and smell my breath, it was still good.

He came back with two trays as he went back inside and came back with glasses

Keon:"sorry about that, I didn't want to leave the food out here while I went to fetch you"

Me:"it's okay, you don't have to explain, this is already very cute"

Keon:"I'm glad you like it"

He opened the tray to some good ass looking food, the steak looked very juicy

Me:"you cooked this yourself?"

Keon:"not the best but I do try"

Me:"no dude you really doing too much, this looks like something prepared by a chef"

I cut and take a bite of the steak and it tasted as juicy as it looked

I looked up at him

Me:"maaan quit playing, you didn't prepare this"

Keon:"I swear on my grandparents graves"

Me:"wow, you good, this is really good"

Keon(smiling):"thank you"

We continued eating while talking and laughing

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

We heard her car pulling up

Me:"that's her"

Dad:"you can do this son, fix your pride and show her how she's blessed to be part of the Nhlabathis"

Mom:"you got this honey"

I went by the door as I head her footsteps getting closer, I knelt on one knee and took out the ring from my pocket

She opened the door and switched on the lights as she startled to see me

Bailey:"Babe! Jeez you scared me...wait what are you doing? Why you on your knees?"

Me:"Bailey, I love you with all my heart and I'm sure that I'll never stop loving you, I've never been so sure about anything in my life, will you do me the honor, and marry me? Please?"

She smiled as she wiped her tears

Bailey:"Yes! Of cause I'll marry you"

I slid in the ring in her finger and it was a perfect fit

Me:"thank God it fits"

I got up and she jumped on me as we hugged

Bailey (crying):"I love you so much Lowell, I really do love you babe!"

We kiss for a while before leading her to the dinning area, she gasped as she saw my parents with the congratulations sign

Bailey:"Ohhhh my Goodd"

Parents:"congratulations!"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were now inside the house watching a movie in the lounge as I had myself wrapped on his body with his arms around me making me feel like a little kid in her father's arms, his cologne, strong arms mixed with the wine I was having was not doing any justice to me

I was so horny that it's getting painful and uncomfortable

I look up at him and his face was so close to mine

Me:" can I have another glass?"

He sat up and took the bottle on the table giving me a refill up to the top of the glass

Me:"whoa that's too much"

Keon:"I also want some, we will share"

Me:"oh okay"

I took a sip then gave him as he also took a sip, we kept exchanging, he didn't take his eyes off me the whole time so did I, his eyes travelled my body slowly from my face to my breasts down to my thighs, I also explored his body, my eyes stopped at the huge bulge which was thick and went along a bit on his thigh

Me(whispers):"fuck!"



That was supposed to be said in my mind

Keon:"with pleasure"

He put the glass down and attacked me with a kiss, I don't know where I got the energy but I kissed him back with just as much hunger getting on top of him, his big hands travelling all over my body and mine all over his as he ripped off my little dress like it was nothing leaving me exposed, he took a short break admiring my body before picking me up and we headed up stairs while I took off his shirt and finally got to see the body I've been fantasizing since I met him, we couldn't stop kissing while also trying to take off his pants as he threw me on the bed, he stopped and took off his pants, I watched him as I slipped off my panties and bra

His big meat was standing proud and long pointing at me while he stroked it looking into my eyes as he came on top of me, my heart thudded faster, I've been craving him so badly and right now he looked like the world's rarest snack, I was drooling, a bit of fear came over me at thought of him tearing my tiny hole....

Me:"please go easy on me"

Keon:"I got you babe"

He kissed intensely as my whole body got heated and.....

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Sometimes you just gotta get straight to the point and let him know, he gives you butterflies in your vagina" (Author)..

Insert 103

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

We were kissing hungrily as his big gun was rubbing back and forth against my vagina my heart was racing as my nerves reacted to the feel of his dick on me. His lips left my mouth as he went to my neck kissing and sucking trailing down to my breasts squeezing and nibbling on my nipples while his fingers were gently massaging my clit

Me(moans softly):...ohhhhh

He kept playing with them sucking and biting them playfully with turned me on as his dick was still rubbing in between my pussy lips

He lips left my boobs while his hand massaged one as he trailed his kisses down my belly, his tongue nibbled my bellybutton liking all the way down till he reached my coochie, I sucked my tummy in as I felt my insides getting excited before I knew it his mouth was doing unspeakable things which made my voice squeak as I was moaning

Me:"aahhh yeah that feels good"

While I was still enjoying that he came back up to kiss my lips

I grabbed his dick as it filled my hand and started stroking it

Me:"it's so big"

Keon:"mmh do you think you can fit it in your little mouth?"

Me:"I can try"

He got up as I got off the bed and knelt between his legs as he sat on the edge of the bed, I admired at his big black cock while stroking it it felt like I've been served chocolate the way I got excited about having him in my mouth, I finally licked and sucked the mushroom top which filled my mouth on it's own, my eyes closed as I enjoyed it's tasteless yet yummy taste, I spat on it as I took it in even deeper in my mouth while massaging his thick balls, I picked up the pace

Keon:"fuuuck yeh baby girl! Just like that mmh"

He got up and started fucking my mouth deep throating making me gag as he went faster and faster as my saliva thickened leaving his dick slimy and sloppy, I choked as tears were streaming down my cheeks

He picked me up like a light feather as I wrapped my legs around his waist

He kissed my messy mouth as I felt him rubbing himself in my entrance, he tried squeezing it in, I flinched as he held me down and pushed himself inside

I closed my eyes as I felt him slowly sliding in me

"Aaahhhh!!!!"

He moved it back and forth as it slipped out as I was dripping wet

Me:"mmh you too big for me"

He slides it back in again and starts moving I tightened my leg grip around him and started bouncing on it as

We kissed hungrily as he grunted stumbling against the wall where he increased the pace fucking me hard

Me(moaning): ohhhh yeeaahh!! Yes yes yes!!

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.  
. .  
Me:"No no no! London! Those are my work documents!"

I rush to her where she spilt her tea on my papers

Me:"what are you doing with my documents!"

She makes a sad face and bursts into tears

Me:"please, don't even try, tears will not get you out of this one"

I take my papers shaking them as she cries even louder

I put them in the table and turn to look at her, she throws her cup causing the tea to spill all over

I close my eyes and sigh before walking up to her and picking her up

Me:"okay calm down, I'm sorry, daddy didn't mean to shout"

I shake her over my shoulder rubbing her back, I walk up to the bedroom

Me:"babe, please take her, she's messing up everything in the office"

Emma:"you know she likes you more, I'm also busy with my work"

Me:"babe, I have really important things to do, it's late and I want to go to bed early tonight....just take her please"

Emma:"are you saying that my work is not important?"

Me:"Emma let's not do this right now, the baby is crying (smells her) and needs a diaper change, I have a deadline and need to get back"

She sighs and gets off the bed as she comes up to me and takes London who cries for me stretching her hands to me

London (crying):"dadaaaa..."

I kiss her brushing her hair

Me:"it's okay princess, daddy will be right back"

I left the room and headed back to my office, I decided to read my messages

I read the message from the bank

"R250 000 withdrawn from account...."

I frown at the amount that was withdrawn from my bank account, I don't remember using this much money today or giving anyone permission, I checked my banking app and it didn't notify me but when I went to check transactions I noticed the amount was indeed withdrawn. How dare they think they can rob me! They thought I wouldn't notice so much money.

I get up and head upstairs to the bedroom

Me:"you not going to believe this"

Emma:"sshhh she's falling asleep"

Me:"R250 000 was taken from my account"

Her eyes widen as she looks up at me

Emma:" uhm babe I'm...."

Me:"I can't believe those scammers thought I wouldn't notice, they even made sure I don't get notifications not knowing I have a back up phone where I keep track of my money"

Emma:"scammers?"

Me:"yeah I'll call the bank to investigate this, I will find whoever is behind this, they will pay"

I dial the bank and wait for them to answer

Me:"yes hello, you talking to..."

Emma:"Babe! Wait, it was me!"

I look at her

"Sir can we help you?"

Me:"no, sorry wrong number"

I hang the call up staring at her

Emma:"I was going to tell you, my brother needed to pay off a dept and he asked me to help him, I didn't have that amount of money and his life was threatened, I knew you wouldn't give me that amou...

Me:"you stole from me?"

Emma:"I will pay it back, I didn't steal I was just....

Me:"you didn't ask either, we steal from each other now?"

Emma:"babe I'm trying to explain, I told you about my brother who...

Me(angrily):"I don't fucken care about your damn brother!! You stole from me! Why would you steal!? Is there anything that I don't do for you! I do everything for you, everything single thing, not once have I denied you money"

Emma:"you wouldn't have given my brother, you hate him"

Me:"your brother is not my responsibility, he's a grown ass man who decided to get himself in the messy situations he's in, why must you or my hard earned money get involved?"

Emma:"I'll pay you back your money, it's not a big deal"

Me:"it's not a....(takes deep breaths) it's not a big deal? Okay, well since it's not that big of a deal, I want my money before the end of this month, lucky for you we just started the month"

Emma:"250 thousand in a month? Okay fine"

Me:" oh and I'm cutting you off"

Emma:"what? I can't pay you all that money in a month, I don't make that much"

Me:"you wanted to play Oprah Winfrey behind my back, I want my money back baby, do whatever it takes, and if I don't have it by the end of this month, you might find yourself in the very same shoes as your brother"

Emma:"you going to kill me?"

Me(shrugged):"if the shoe fits"

I walk back to the office

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

"Ahhh fuck fuck fuck!! Please...wait...

I was on my knees at the edge of the bed

as he was fucking me hard from behind

with his one leg on the bed while the other was on the floor, he pushed my neck down for my breasts to touch the bed as he pumped me faster, I could feel his dick all the way to my belly, so much pleasure was traveling throughout my whole body I didn't know how to act, I was crying tears of pleasure

Me(moaning):"ah ah ah baby! Wait! Fuck! Uuhhh yeah...wait wait aahhh

I grabbed on the sheets as the bed cover was long thrown to the floor along with some of the pillows

My thighs shook weakly as a gush of juices spasmed out,he slid his dick out, I sighed as I thought he'd finally stop but instead he picked me up with my legs around his waist, he slowly slide it in again

Keon(groans):"fuucck I can't get enough of your pussy love"

We looked into each other's eyes as we shared a kiss, he bent down steadily as he lifted my legs over his arms and started clamping me against him, he picked up the pace as our bodies slapped each other, I held on around his neck tighter screaming out loud as the pleasures hypnotized me

"Ohhh fuuuck!!"

Keon:"look at me baby"

I opened my eyes as we looked at each other while he fucked me, it was hard maintaining eyes contact as I kept wanting to flip my eyes over, we were both dripping in sweat

He put me down on my feet as I staggered a bit my legs were very weak

He got on the bed and laid on his back

Keon:"get your ass up here"

I looked at his black veined beast before getting on top of him, he slid inside then wrapped his arms around me pulling him against his body tightly with my head over his shoulder as he fucked me hard hard from beneath, the way he moved his waist drove me crazy

Me(moaning):"mmmhhh Ohhhh fuck!!..."

Keon:"kiss me"

I kissed him as he grunted, I felt him shooting as I also released , our juices were running down his dick as he buried himself deep inside me

Keon(breathing heavy):"fuuuck!"

.

.

.

Rain (Amahle's Son)

.

.

.

Me:"please don't hurt us"

Wonder woman:"don't hurt my baby please"

Me:"just give me my heart!"

Man:"you want this? Come get it"

He squashed it, I screamed as I felt a lot of pain from my chest



\*\*\*

I woke up feeling a lot of pain

Me(crying):"Gogo!!aahhhh!!!!!"

I held my chest, it was very painful and I couldn't breath properly

She opened the door

Granny:" Rain! Are you okay my boy?"

Me:"it hurts"

Granny:"okay I'm sure your mother packed your treatment somewhere"

I pointed at my bag as she rushed for it

"Is everything okay?"

Grandad came in as granny found my medication and made me drink

Me(holding chest trying to breath):"you have to inject me"

Granny:"oh my God, I've never injected anyone my whole life"

Grandad:"let me do it"

He prepared my injection after I showed him which medicine he should inject

He poked it on my shoulders

Me(flinched):"ouch"

He wiped me with wet cotton

After a while I was breathing properly

Granny:"how you feeling now sweetie?"

Me:"it's still paining but better, I want momma"

Granny:"momma is only going come back later today, you only have three hours of sleep then you go to school then you will see momma after school"

I felt my eyes burning because I wanted to cry but I tried to hold them back

Me(sobs):"I want momma now, the nightmare will come back, I need momma"

Granny:"do you want to come sleep with us in our room, I'll make sure it doesn't come back, is that okay?"

I nod

Me:"yes"

Grandad picked me up and we all went to their bedroom and made me sleep in the middle as granny cuddled me like the way momma does, the pain went away

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I was woken up by a bright light hurting my eyes, I stretched hoping to cuddle but the space next to me was empty

I sat up as I rubbed my eyes

I felt my pussy throbbing, it was still wet as I felt my creams leaking between my lips, last night's events invaded my mind as I bit my lip thinking about it, I have been fucked in my lifetime but I don't recall ever being fucked like that

"Morning beautiful"

He came in with a tray

Me(smiles):"Good morning"

He puts the tray on my lap, he served me butt naked as my eyes were glued on his body

Keon:"I figured you might wake up hungry"

Me:"I I am, thank you"

Keon:"I also bought your phone, you left it down stairs"

Me:"thanks"

It was on the tray as well

I took a few bites, he turns my face to look at him and we kiss, he takes the tray and puts it on the side table as he pulled me closer to him, I wrapped my legs around him, he rubbed my clit roughly before sliding inside of me

Me(moans):"hhhhaaa....."

He started moving holding me right against him as we were sleeping on our side, we kissed while moving his waist, I also caught up with his momentum moving with the rhythm, he increased the pace while squeezing my boob nibbling on it

After a while my phone started ringing as I felt I was close

Keon(groaning):"shit! Babe...I'm cumming!..."

Me:"me toooo!"

He buried it all in as he released I followed right after

My phone rang again and we broke the kiss as we tried to catch our breath

Keon:"don't pick up, you should call in sick today, you won't be able to walk around while you like this"

Me(weakly):"I'm fine"

He smiled looking at me, ohh shit I know that look, it's all too familiar, I've seen it before and I'm pretty sure I know what he's about to say, he can't, not this soon

Keon:"you so beautiful Amahle"

Me:"thank you...."

Don't say it, please don't say it

Keon:"I love you"

Shit!

Me:"Keon....

Keon:"no hey you don't have to say it back, it's still soon I know, it's just that I knew my feelings for you the day I met you, and I'm not saying this because we just had the most awesome sex...

We both laugh lightly

Keon:"but I just don't want to bottle my feelings for you, I want you to know them, I really love you"

I move from him as his dick slips out of me, I gather strength to help myself sit up

Me:"okay, before we get serious....

Keon:"I think it's a little too late for that, we just had sex, does it get any more serious than that?"

Me:"okay, let's slow down a bit here shall we...uhm there's something I have to tell you...

Keon:"what is it?"

Me:"I'm sorry I didn't tell you this sooner, I should've told you on our first date but I hope it won't be a problem...

He sits up with a worried frown on his face

Keon:"should I be worried? Please don't tell me you sick...

Me:"no actually I have a...(phone rings)

I look at my phone and it's my mom

Me:"I have to take this"

He nods

Me:"hello mah?"

"Why weren't you picking up I have been calling you"

Me:"I'm sorry it was far from me, is everything okay?"

"We had to rush Rain to the hospital, hurry here now!"

The world shuts off all sounds as there's only the sound of my heartbeat

I weakly get up looking for my clothes as my vision is blurred

Keon:"Amahle!"

He snapped his fingers on my face

I looked at him

Keon:"what's going on where are you going?"

Me:"Rain, he needs me, you have to take me to the hospital..."

Keon:"yeah but what....."

Me(fearfully):"Now!!!..."

I ran out picking up my clothes

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Always remember the secret way to a woman's heart is not through her body, but through her soul... because physical love is short-lived but soulful love lasts an entire lifetime" (unknown)

.....

Insert 104

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

Keon:"Amahle! Wait"

Me:"please we need to get to the hospital"

Keon:" okay but you can't go like....you going to your mother, please let's clean up quickly"

I think about it, I run back upstairs and we head to the bathroom

We get in the shower as he gives me his body wash, I clean myself up as fast as I can and rinse myself specially my vagina

After a few minutes we came out

He gave me his sweatpants and a jacket

My dress was torn since he ripped it off last night

Me:"thank you"

His sneakers were too big so I just wore his flops, he gave me his durag to put over my messy head

I looked at myself, I looked like a complete boy, he wore track pants and a tank top exposing his body

Keon:"you look hot, let's go"

I grabbed my phone and purse and we ran downstairs and out the house

We got in the car, he took the faster car

I was keep checking my phone for any update, my heart is racing in fear, what if his heart is completely giving up, I wasn't even there, what if they took him to the hospital too late, if I was there I would've known how to treat him for him to make it to the hospital while still breathing

Here I was busy being fucked like a slut while my baby was probably crying for me

I covered my face, I couldn't stop the tears from falling

I felt his hand on my thigh

Keon:"don't cry let's try have faith on..."

Me:"Rain"

Keon:"Rain, he or she will be okay"

Me:"he"

I looked at him and he gave me a smile before looking back at the road

He parks in front of the hospital, I quickly opened the door and rushed to the entrance

Me:"how's Rain, where is he?"

Nurse:"he's in his usual ward, the doctors managed to keep him stable"

Me:"what happened?"

Nurse:"he was having a minor heart attack, he is still in pain"

Me:"okay let me go see him"

"Amahle!"

I turn to be met by Keon slowly walking towards me, I turn and meet him halfway

Keon:"I'll wait for you by the waiting area, then you can explain to me what's going on"

Me:"you don't have wait"

Keon:"I don't mind"

Me(sighs):"okay, I'll be right back"

He pulls me close and we share a hug and a quick peck

I walk towards Rain's ward and he's surrounded by family, it was mom, dad, Lowell, Lulama and Thandile looks like I was the late one

Me:"hey..."

They looked at me

Lowell:"where the hell were you?"

Mom:"we all were trying to call"

Me:"I'm sorry I misplaced my phone and it was on silence, but I'm here now"

I look at my baby who has his eyes slightly opened

Me:"hey sweetheart, how you feeling"

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes, I'm here now...."

I touched his hand then pulled it up for a kiss, I placed my hand on his chest and closed my eyes saying an inside prayer

After a while I opened my eyes and looked at him

Me:"how are you feeling now?"

Rain:"much better, please don't leave me again"

I've never left Rain at my mother's house or any house for over a night without me being there as well, sometimes at night if he gets his nightmares of chest pains after giving him his medication my touch makes him feel better, even at the hospital I sleep with him most of the time

Me:"I'm never leaving you alone again, I'm so sorry my baby, mommy wasn't there to cuddle, I feel so bad, my heart hurts too"

Rain:"it's okay, you had to work night shift"

Mom clears her throat as Lulama lets out a chuckle but covers it with a cough

I look at them giving me suspicious looks, they can be so childish sometimes

Me:"I love you okay"

Rain:"I love you more"



We share a hug

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes honey"

Rain:"why are you dressed like a boy?"

Thandile:"yes mommy why are you dressed like a boy?"

Mom:"I was wondering the same thing"

Dad:"now that you bring it up..."

Lulama:"you guys read my mind"

Me:"uh uhm well, I'm dressed like a boy, well uhm..."

Lowell:"uhm what?"

Me:"what happened was, I went to surgery right and I had blood all over me and my changing clothes, uhm they got stained..yes with coffee...so I had to get clothes from, from the lost and found and, this is the only decent clothes I could find..."

Lulama:"those are some really good quality clothes for a lost and found..."

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"yeah well, guess it was my luck"

Lowell:"Mahle, a word with you please, outside"

I look at him, I already sense his energy

I kiss Rain on the cheek as he gets back to his chattery self, I follow Lowell outside

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was in the office busy with a patient, we were still waiting on her tests as she was telling me about her problems

Me:"so you experience uncomfortable pressure, squeezing, fullness or pain in the middle of your chest"

Her:"yes"

Me:"and also discomfort on your arms you neck and back?"

Her:"yeah I do"

Me:"wow I'm glad you came early for a check up, you are experiencing symptoms of a heart attack"

Her:"I see"

I jot down her symptoms, I can feel her eyes on me, I look up at her

Me(smiles):"is there anything else?"

Her:"No nothing"

Me:"okay then"

I get up to go fetch the results

Me:"okay, your results came out, this is your heart and indeed you have a problem, but it can be treated, you came early so you can get started as soon as possible"

Her:"oh thank goodness"

Me:"you will get your treatment by the pharmacy line"

Her:"okay doctor"

She doesn't budge

Me:"that'll be all ma'am you may be excused"

Her:"oh yes of cause"

She gets up and walks through towards the door

Her:"Dr Nhlabathi"

Me" yes"

Her:" I don't mean to invade but, you need to let go of her"

Me:"what are you on about?"

Her:"her spirit is evil because you have kept her here for too long, she's no more an angry spirit but an evil one, she is out for blood, you better get help before you kill someone, again"

Me:"I don't know what you talking about, I've never killed anyone"

Her:"go back home, your family needs you, you need help, please go see a traditional healer, I can't help you but I've just been shown someone who can, I don't know if you know her, when you ready for help this is my number, contact me and I'll reveal the person who can help you"

She takes out a card and gives it to me

then walks out.

I sigh and take her card looking at it thoughtfully

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

Me:"where were you?"

Amahle:" I got caught up at a friend's house, we had a few drinks and passed out"

Me:" since when are you so careless? Our son needed you, had he not arrived at the hospital any minute later than when we bought him we would be talking a different story now"

Amahle:"I know okay and I regret not being there, I just thought I could just live for once just one day, but it won't happen again"

Me:"you smell like a man you even dressed in his clothes, is that what you ditching our son for? For sex? You couldn't even wait for the weekend, you leave him on a Monday, you know how much he needs you specially at night but you chose dick over your child"

A tear drops from her one eye

Amahle:"I know, I got carried away, I already feel bad on my own, please don't add on to it, I will stop seeing him"

Her eyes are fixed behind me

I turn to look at who she's staring at and it's some buff dark skinned nigger with a beared and short wavy haircut...

I look at her

Me:"that's what you risked my son's life for? You can't even walk properly you are busy with big men for "big" fun?"

She looks at me

Amahle:"I was just...(sighs) I said I'll stop seeing him, I promise, my life is tied to Rain and I won't let anything or anyone come between us like that again, I was doing well with just the two of us, I thought I could try dating again but I guess that's not cut out for me, I'll focus on my work and Rain like I always have, I'm sorry for scaring you like that, it won't happen again, I promise"

My heart sinks at her words

Me:"I'm not saying don't date, I mean you a grown woman and you have needs as well, you have been single for a very long time, I don't even know how you survived for that long, I would've died..."

She laughs faintly

Me:"I'm just saying, be with someone who understands your situation and will be able to work with you, he must understand that Rain is a part of your life and there are some things you can't do, like leaving Rain alone, if you want sleepovers he must come to your place, and at least take time to know the guy before introducing him to Rain, now that you starting to date again I don't want my boy to keep seeing different men coming to fetch you every month...

Amahle:"Lowell please stop, I don't go around seeing different men and that's not what I'll do, Rain doesn't know him because I'm not certain about him yet, we were still getting to know each other, but I'm not there anymore, I will focus on my priorities, can we please end this lecture now? Please"

Me(sighs):"okay, I'm sorry, I want you to be happy Mahle, if that guy makes you happy then please continue with him, all I'm saying is you have to be more cautious"

Amahle:"I will"

I smile at her

Me:"come here"

She gets closer and we share a warm hug , I cup her face

Me:"it's only a matter of time before Rain gets a donor and we will all get to live a normal life, maybe even a better one, it won't be like this forever

She nods , I wrap my arms around her waist and we walk back in the ward

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I couldn't think straight after that lady left I was in my feelings and had a terrible headache so I excused myself from work, luckily I got another doctor who was free to take over my urgent appointments and postponed the other's for tomorrow.

I was sitting in my car parked outside my house...

A part of me wanted to fly to KZN to see Nessa but after I remembered six years ago what I did to her, how I brutally murdered her, I know of I go there she might make me go so crazy that I commit suicide, she's been tormenting me all these years, I wanted to get help once, I wanted to fix myself for Amahle but that would mean someone knowing about what I did....

"Hey babe"

I startle looking at her, I attempt to open the door but it was locked, I tried to unlock but it didn't budge

Nessa:"that is so rude, I just came to visit and you running away from me"

Me:"what do you want from me...."

Nessa:"I just want you to be with me, you were meant to be mine"

Me:"till death do us part, you are dead now, you need to move on, don't you have ghost friends or something?"

Nessa(laughing):"oh Noah you so funny, death will do us part once you die too"

Me:"I'm going to see a traditional healer and I'm getting rid of you"

Nessa:"oh sweetie, you can never get rid of me, you do that, I'll have to torment someone else...."

Me:"as long as it's not me you can go to hell for all I care..."

Nessa:"it'd be sad to watch your daughter grow into a psychopath, she'll be really fun to torment and ruin her perfect little life"

Me(angrily):"don't you dare go near my child...."

Nessa:"I'll go near anything I want, go see a healer and watch my wrath"

She gets out of the car and disappears

Me:"Nessa wait, please forgive me...I didn't mean to kill you...

I hold my pounding head

Me(screaming):Nessaaaaaa!!!!!!

(Loud banging on the window)

I startle as I wake up looking around

It looks like I fell asleep in the car

"Noah!!"

I look out the steamy car window as it's not clear who's outside, I press the button sliding the window down, but it gets stuck halfway

Emma:"babe get out of the car hurry!"

Me(confused):"why?"

I smell something burning

Emma:"get out!! Your engine is heating up"

I try to open the door but it was locked

I press the unlock buttons but it doesn't budge

Me:"shit shit...."

Emma(fearfully):"Fire!! Fire is coming out!!...."

Me:"well don't just stand there go get the extinguisher!!..."

She runs to the house, I position myself so that I can kick the door open, I fail the first time and try again as the fire gets stronger and the car getting more heated, Emma comes with the extinguisher

Me:"first come break the window with it!"

She bangs it weakly on the window

Me(shouting):"Come on Emma! Harder!"

She hits it again and it cracks

Me:"just throw it at the window"

I move to the passenger seat as she throws it and the window breaks

Me:"that's my girl"

I just off the window and grap the extinguisher opening it and putting out the fire, after a while it was out

I sat on the ground defeated, that was my favorite car, she sits next to me and holds me

Emma:"ohh my baby, are you okay? Did you get hurt?"

Me:"I'm fine babe"

I pull her into my arms as we watch the smoke on the car

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

The family has left, it was just Rain and I now, I took an emergency sick leave so I can take care of Rain

Rain:"momma"

Me:"mh?"

Rain:"I'm sorry"

Me(frowns):"what for?"

Rain:"for stressing you"

Me:"what? Who told you that, you not stressing me, that's nonsense..."



Rain:"when I get a heart and I grow up to be a man, I will buy you a big house next to the beach, and I will take you out to get a massage....

Me(smiling):"really? You'd do that for me?"

Rain:"I can buy you whatever you want in this world, even this hospital, and all the medicines and cures to help people, I will make sure everyone can get a heart donor easily without waiting for too long"

Me:"how will you do that?"

Rain:"I will tell everyone why it is so important to donate your heart when you don't need it anymore, and also blood and other body insides"

Me:"body organs"

Rain:"body organs"

I laugh smiling at him proudly

Me:"you are so smart you know that?"

Rain:"because my mom is also smart"

Me:"yeah but I didn't go to grade one at five years old, you going to finish school at sixteen, do you know how rare that is?"

He smiles shyly, I kiss his cheek

Me:"I'll be back okay let me just go talk to my friend real quick"

Rain:"are you going to sleep with me momma?"

Me:"of cause I will, we sleeping together tonight, I'll never let you go to bed while I'm not there again"

Rain:"what of you working night shift like yesterday?"

Me:"then you will come to the hospital with me and sleep in my office like we always did"

He smiles happily

Rain:"I like working night shifts with you"

Me(smiling):"I like it too"

I walk out to the waiting room and he was fast asleep with his arms folded on his knees and head over his arms, I didn't think he'd still be here, it's been two hours since we got here

I sit next to him and wake him up rubbing his back, he picks his head up quickly and looks at me with a sleepy frown

Keon:"heey"

Me(smiling):"heey"

Keon:"is everything okay now?"

I nod

Me:"yes, everything is okay now"

Keon:"thank the Lord for that"

Me:"thank the Lord indeed"

Keon:"who was it? Was it your brother? Father?"

Me:"uhm let's go outside"

We get up and head outside as I lead the way next to his car

Keon:"what's going on?"

Me:"...uhm I just realized we didn't use protection"

Keon:"oh shit I'm sorry...."

Me:"I took a pill earlier, I'm just worried about your status, I hope you are..."

Keon:"oh no no no, I'm good, I get tested every after three months, I don't do one night stands, last time I had sex I was in a serious relationship and she was clean, but I was going to get tested next month, I'll show you the results"

Me:"okay, I'll believe you but you can still show me, I'm also clean"

He looks at the car

Keon:" are we leaving orrr?"

I sigh and look at him as we are standing behind the car

(Silence)

Keon:"Amahle? Is everything alright? Talk to me"

Me:"I'm sorry Keon"

Keon:"for what? I should be the one sorry for whatever happened in that hospital, which you still haven't told me"

Me:"I'm sorry for wasting your time, I'm not feeling this, it's just not going to work out for us..."

Keon:"No, wait, you don't mean that, okay I shouldn't have said I love you so soon, I'm sorry I didn't mean to scare you off, I was just...you know what forget it, forget I said it, please, I promise I'll take things slower, I should've...."

Me:"Stop! Please stop talking (sighs)...I'm not looking for a relationship, I thought I was ready but, that's just not the point of my life I'm at right now, you are a good man Keon, a good good looking man and any lady would be very lucky to have you...."

Keon:"is it the sex? It was bad, I went overboard didn't I?"

Me:"it's not the sex, the sex is good, the sex was very good actually, very very awesome, out of this world..."

He bit his lip smirking I smiled a bit too

Me:"but that's not the point! The point is I got a lot going on in my life and I don't need any distractions..."

Keon:"you married...you married to that guy aren't you? I saw the way he looked at you, the nasty look he gave me then touched you marking his territory..."

Me:"I'm not married, Keon please just leave, I don't want to see you again, what we had is over, I'm breaking up with you or ending whatever this was leading to, I'm sorry, it's not you it's me..."

He remains silent, I don't know why but this moment feels like deja vu as I get flashbacks of the time I broke Noah's heart

Keon:"you really going to use that lame line? What did I do to you, is there something I did that turned you off? If there is I at least deserve to know"

Me:"you didn't do anything, you are perfect, everything about you is perfect, in fact that's the problem, You are just too perfect for me! And I'm this messed up person who has nothing but problems always following her, I'm just going to mess up your perfect life, please just leave me alone and get yourself a perfect girl, you deserve it"

Keon:"I'm not perfect Amahle, I have my own share of imperfections too, nobody is perfect..."

Me:"I have a child okay! Rain is my child"

Keon:"a child?"

Me:"Yes a child and he's going through the worst painful thing that needs me to be always there for him, I just can't afford the luxury to date, my baby needs me and he's the only thing I need, he's my everything, there is no room for anyone else...."

Keon:"Amahle I..."

Me:"Please don't Keon, we have had our fun but it ends now, please block my number I'll do the same, I'm not interested in you anymore..."

Keon:" don't say that..."

Me:"I've said it....open the car"

Keon:"what?"

Me:"unlock the car"

He unlocks it, I open the door and take my purse and phone"

Me:"thank you once again for the great night, thank you for brightening my life for a short while and for making me feel like a happy love struck teenager again, but those kind of things are not for a person like me, they are meant to be short lived, it's time I got back to my real life in the real world, not the perfect bubble we were in for the past three weeks, happiness is temporary, that's just how it is, it's a short lived fairytale...but just so you know, it was the best three weeks of my life"

I kiss his cheek and walk away until I reach the entrance, I look back at him and he's still standing there watching me

I swallow a painful lump and force a smile before turning and walking inside the hospital

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Some things are meant to happen, just not meant to be...some things are meant to come into your life, just not meant to stay" (trent shelton)

Insert 105

•

•

•

•

•

A week later

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Me:"well make up your mind boy"

Rain:"I want these ones"

Me:"are you sure?"

Rain:"yes, I will wear this one"

Me:"why don't you wear these ones they darker, we going to the park, you know how you like getting carried away on the sand, if you going to wear this outfit then I will be guarding you like a hawk on what you play"

He sighs

Rain:"why did you even give me the option to choose"

I laugh

Me:"because I want you to make your own choices, but you must also know there are consequences that come with the choices you make"

Rain:"fiine I'll take this one"

Me:"good choice"

After lotioning his body I dress him up in his brown shorts and black t-shirt and his black nike sneakers, I brush his nicely trimmed fresh cut, my baby boy is so handsome though, he has clear caramel skin he, I wish he didn't have to be a copy of his father, the only thing he took from me is the head structure and a few features on his forehead and his smile

After I was done with him I fixed myself as well with brown jeans and a black t-shirt matching his outfit

Rain:"we matching buddies mommy"

Me:"let's take a few pictures first before we go"

He sighs rolling his eyes

Rain:"why do we always have to take pictures?"

Me:"just get your tiny butt here"

He follows me as we head to the car and take pictures there, I ask the security guy to take pictures of us

Me:"okay kiss mommy's cheek"

I bend to his level as he kisses my cheek and the guy captures the picture, after many poses I was satisfied while Rain was very much irritated

Me:"siyabonga bhuti"

Him:"akulutho sisi"

I take out a twenty rand note

Me:"cela uzithengele idrink"

(Please buy yourself cold drink)

Him:"ngyabonga mam"

(Thank you)

We get in the car and drive off

Andiswa and Luca asked us out for a fun day out

Me:"please Rain, I need you to be on your best manners okay?"

Rain:"I will be nice momma"

Me:"I know I've taught you manners, I hope you took them with you, no asking for this and that and crying or sulking when I say no "

Rain:"yes momma, can't we fetch Theo I don't want to be bored at the park"

Me:"maybe next time, not today, you won't be bored we'll play with you"

Rain(sighs):"you will just talk and talk and talk with your friends"

Me:"I won't, we'll play with you, I promise"

He smiles and looks at me

Rain:"pinky promise"

We lock pinkies

Me:"you so dramatic though"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I am fixing myself as I just finished taking a bath

Emma:"babe?"

Me:"yes babe"

Emma:"I thought you were off today"

Me:"I am babe"

Emma:"oh so where are you going?"

Me:"just going out for air"

Emma:"air? We have air here, we have a nice yard with a big pool and the sea view"

Me:"I need different air"

Emma:"so you don't want to tell me where you going?"

Me:"I'm going out with friends"

Emma:"your work friends?"

Me:"what the matter baby? Why the concern?"

Emma:"usually Saturdays are for family"

Me:"I'm not going forever, I will be back"

Emma:"babe"

Me:" yes babe"

Emma:"about the money, I asked my brother to pay it back, he said he will have it by next month"

Me:"I want my money by the end of this month not any later"

Emma:"I won't have that kind of money by then, please can I pay you another way"



Me:"Emma what exactly do you do with the money you work for? Because you hardly even spend it since I take care of most of your needs, besides your taxes, and a few other things what else do you do with it for you to not have more than the money I want?"

Emma:"it's my savings"

Me:"So!?! You stole from me, you owe me, I don't give a fuck about your savings love, you pay me my money then go back to your savings, wow really? Here I thought you didn't really have the money, but no you just enjoy abusing my wallet as if I don't give you money, do you know how expensive you are? Without the kids, just you on your own, then I take care of the kids, I pay for their school fees and buy their uniforms and everything else they need, I take care of them as if they my own because I love you, I give you the freedom to save the money you work for and use it to pamper yourself, instead of borrowing your brother from that money, you steal mine? How selfish can you be? I'm very selfless when it comes to the people I love, but double cross me and I will not hesitate to make you taste my merciless wrath, blood or no blood I do not take betrayal lightly...pay my money before you get to see a side of me that's been asleep for a long time"

Emma:"okay, I'll pay you your money, no need for threats"

I go up to her and we share a kiss

Me:"thank you babe, I love you okay?"

Emma:"I love you too baby"

I grab my keys wallet and phone then head out.

I log into WhatsApp and click on the location the lady sent to me as I drove to her place

.

.

.

Emma

.

.

.

I quickly got dressed and ran downstairs leaving the kids with the nanny

I followed Noah, he was very secretive about where he was going which raised suspicions, Noah had never cheated on me or has ever made me feel like he's cheating but this past week he's been acting weird, I think he's seeing someone or he's doing something he shouldn't be doing hence that's why he's being secretive about where he's going

I take my phone and call my mother

"Hello"

Me:"hey mom"

"Hey Emma how you doing?"

Me:"I'm stressed, I think Noah is cheating on me"

"No way, that can't be, why would he cheat, didn't he just ask you to marry him not so long ago"

Me:"I don't know mom, I think he's doing it to punish me, I kinda took money from him without his permission"

"You stole from him?"

Me:"it was for vincent, he got himself in a messy situation and needed the money, I didn't think he'd notice, I mean that amount is nothing to Noah and I know the only reason he's mad is because I gave it to my brother, if I used it on myself he wouldn't have made it such a big deal"

"I think he made it a big deal because you stole, you should never steal from your man, specially if he treats you like how Noah treats you, he does everything for you, he probably feels betrayed"

Me:"and now he wants to betray me too by cheating, but I can't let that happen, I don't know what I'd do if he left me for someone else"

"Don't worry, remember the covenant? It's still very much powerful, Noah will never leave you, the blood covenant made between the two of you will never be

broken, if you hurt he will hurt too, he does not believe in traditional things therefore he will never know and the covenant will never be broken"

Me:"I don't know, a few weeks ago he talked about getting help from a traditional healer about his anger issues, but I managed to convince him to see a therapist instead and he's been seeing one"

""Good you just make sure he stays away from those people"

Me:"I have made him believe that they are fake and evil"

"Remember if he cheats on you it will effect him greatly, he will become very sick"

Me:"I know, I don't want it to come to that...oh wait, I have to go, he's pulling up"

I park far from him and watch him make his way inside the house, a young lady opens for him, my blood drops as I feel my body heat up

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We get to the park and make our way to the chilling area by the benches, it looks like we are the first ones here

Me:"great these people are going to make us wait"

Rain:"I hate waiting"

Me:"same here buddy same here"

We sit by the benches

Rain:"can I go play in the meantime"

Me:"wait, let me first call them first"

I dial Luca

"Skat"

Me:"Hey Skat, how far are y'all?"

"We are close, give us five minutes"

Me:"come on guys we agreed 14:00 it's half past now, what kind of African time are you guys using?"

"Two o'clock means three babe, you should know that"

Me:"I see Andiswa has rubbed off on you with the late coming, just get here already I cancelled and squeezed you in my very busy schedule, I have places to go, people to meet and things to do"

He bursts into laughter, I hear Andiswa also laughing, I also join in laughing

"Yes Dr Mbokazi we are now two minutes away"

Me:" why can't I hear any car moving?"

"We looking for parking now, bye"

Me:"okay but...."

He hangs up on me, I sigh

"Good afternoon"

A deep voice speaks behind me, I know that voice very well

I look back and it's him

Me(surprised):"Keon?"

Keon:"hey how are you doing?"

Me:"uhm I'm doing good"

I look at the young girl next to him and back at him, she looks a lot like him

Me:"how you doing?"

Keon:"I'm okay I guess, but I feel incomplete you know"

I nod

Keon:"can we join you?"

Me:"oh uhm we kinda expecting people"

My phone beeps and I look at the message from Luca

(Skat):"sorry something came up □ but hope you enjoy the new company"

Wow I can't believe they set me up, I don't understand why they had to involve Rain in this.

Me:"well I guess not anymore"

They sit across us with the table between us

Keon(to the little girl):"This is my friend Sis Amahle the African queen I was telling you about"

Her:"ohhh wow she really is beautiful my dad told me he split coffee on you, sorry about that, he can be very clumsy"

I chuckled smiling with a confused expression

Keon(nudging her):"heey I'm not clumsy it was a mistake...(sighs) Amahle this is Kendall my daughter"

Me:"yyyour daughter?"

Keon:"yes my last born, unfortunately I couldn't bring the first born, I have two angels in my life who mean the world to me"

Me(swallows):"I...uhm...hey Kendall"

Kendall:"hello"

Me:"this is my son Rain"

Kendall:"hello Rain"

Rain(shyly):"hi"

Kendall:"daddy, can Rain and I go play by the swings?"

Keon:"if that's okay with his mother"

Me:"yes, you can go play, just please don't go too far"

Keon:"play where we can see you"

They get up excitedly

Kendall:"last one to the swing is a rotten egg!!"

Rain:"bye rotten egg!"

They race to the swings as Kendall gets to the swing first as she laughs at Rain who sulks for a few seconds before laughing with her, I find myself laughing at them

Keon:"aren't they just cute"

I look at him

Me(smiling):"they are"

Keon:"they already getting along, it must be nice being a child it's easy to make friends"

Me:"yeah they so innocent and pure"

Keon:"they bring so much joy there's never a dull moment"

My smile fades away

Me:"did Luca and Andiswa tell you I was going to be here?"

Keon:"yes, the truth is I asked them to help me meet up with you because you were not answering my calls and you blocked my number, I found out you were friends with Luca after stalking you on Facebook, I talked to him and he agreed to help me, lucky for me you had already told them about me so he didn't mind helping me"

Me:"oh I see"

(Silence)

Me:"so you have kids"

Keon:"yes, there's Madison the oldest, she's 13 and Kendall who is 7"

Me:"from the same mother?"

Keon:"no not from the same mother, Madison's mother was my high school sweetheart, we had our whole life planned out, but hey, you know how those go, it went according to plan for a while, I knocked her up after matric, varsity came we drifted apart she started seeing other people and started giving me a hard time not letting me see my baby and all that crazy stuff, so I decided to take care of her from far, until I went to court and was granted parental rights and responsibilities with visitations, so I only see her on some holidays and weekends...and with Kendall, her mother also left me for another man a month later after Kendall was born she up and left her at the hospital, she didn't want her because she was a very premature baby, she had a lot of complications and well to her she was an ugly incomplete baby that disgusted her, so I was left to stay with her in the hospital and take care of her on my own, it was hard watching her fighting for her life at just a few weeks old, everyday holding my breath that she doesn't stop breathing one day, I took a long leave at work to take care of her until she started growing and growing into a complete baby, her beautiful eyes started opening, her hands and feet started looking normal, to me she was already beautiful from birth but as she grew and her true beauty started showing up, I made an oath to protect her, shower her with so much love that she never ever has to feel the void of not having a mother... after her mother I had to take a long break from dating, it was just my baby girl and I, I started dating after a few years but I never introduced women to her not even once and thank God I didn't because non of those women were serious, and then you came along, I felt something for you, something different, something I never felt with anyone before, I knew it was deep when I couldn't get you off my mind after bumping into you at that coffee shop, my mind kept replaying that scene, how cute you looked when you were angry at me, how you sulked because I ruined your favorite shirt, the way you ran away from me and tried to get rid of me, just everything about you intrigued me, I knew it was deep when I shared that scene with my P.A at work, when I shared it with anyone who was willing to listen to me that day, even with Kendall, that's why I made sure we bumped into each other again so I could try my luck"

Me:"wow, you have been through a lot, but where was Kendall when you invited me to your house?"

Keon:"I asked my brother and sister in law to babysit her for me...I didn't tell you about my kids because we were still getting to know each other and I

wanted to be sure if you not just going to up and leave when we started to get serious"

I look at the kids who are still playing

I look back at him

Me:"is that why you told me you loved me? To see if I was serious?"

Keon:"no, I said that because it's how I truly feel, when you broke things up that day, because of Rain, I knew that you were not putting your best interest at heart but your son's, I know the lengths you'd take to protect your child, you would cut off your happiness to fulfill

his happiness, you didn't give me a chance to explain to you that I understand what you going through, that I don't mind that you have a child, it actually made me more excited about being with you, that we both share something so precious to us and if we had a relationship, we could put our kids first without feeling guilty because we'd both understand each other because we know that it's them before anyone else, I know I wouldn't wanna be with someone who wouldn't understand that my children come first, if we had to go out for a date but my child falls sick or she is really feeling like she wants to be with daddy and watch movies all night and I have to cancel on you, I need a woman who will understand that and we still be cool the next day without any of the guilt trip of how I put my child first"

Me:"that's exactly what I've been scared for, dating someone who wouldn't understand, Rain needs me almost everyday, he hardly does sleepovers because he can't sleep without me, I didn't want to put you through that"

Keon:"you don't have to worry about that with me"

I look down regrettably

Keon(pulls my chin up):" hey, look at me"

I look into his eyes

Keon:"can we please start over"

Me(smiling and nodding):"yes, let's start over, and I'm sorry for the way I...

He puts his fingers over my lips



Keon:" shh we have started over, that's all behind us now"

Me:"can you just promise me one thing"

Keon:"anything"

Me:"please don't break our hearts, it's not only mine that I'm opening up for you but my son's as well and he already has a weak heart"

Keon:"I don't imagine myself ever doing anything that would break your hearts, but we don't know what the future holds and couples tend to break each other's hearts most of the time, most people's heartbreaks come from their spouses, but what I can promise you is to never walk out or give up on you over little fights or misunderstandings, I believe in communication, and with that we can go a long way, I promise to be honest, open, loyal and communicative with you..."

Me(smiling):" I'd appreciate that a lot and I will do the same"

Keon:"I need you to promise me one thing as well... If there comes a time where you feel like you don't have the same feelings for me anymore, please do not cheat, rather tell me so we can come to an understanding and break things off peacefully, I really do not want to go through that road again, do not make a fool out of me, I know I have already introduced you to my daughter something I told you I never do, so when you not feeling me anymore don't be scared to tell me because my child is already attached to you, I will know how to deal with my child if you do leave and we both will be okay as we have been for seven years together"

Me:" I promise, I will never cheat, the last thing I need in my life is drama that our children will be stuck in the middle of, I just want to be happy and settle down so you don't have to worry about cheating"

Keon:"I like how you said our children"

I blush smiling

He stands up and helps me stand as well then pulls me closer

Keon:" can I kiss you"

Me:" yes please"

He bends a bit as I tip toe wrapping my arms around his neck and we share a kiss

"Eeewwww!"

We stop and look at them, I notice Rain's mood has dropped as he walks back to the jungle gym and sits by himself

Keon looks at me

Keon:"is he okay?"

Me:"No he's not okay, I'll go talk to him"

I rush up to him leaving Keon with kendall

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"The most difficult part of dating as a single parent, is deciding how much risk your own child's heart is worth" ( Dan Pearce)

Insert 106

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

- 
- 

I sit next to him at the top of the jungle gym and look at the view he's staring at

Me:"beautiful view hey"

(Silence)

I look at him, he has a sad face

Me:"whats wrong sweetheart, talk to momma"

He looks at me

Rain:"can we go home now"

Me:"home? Don't you want to play with Kendall anymore? We were still going to go to the mall as promised and get you a new toy, you don't want that anymore?"

Rain:"I don't want to pay with Kendall can we go home please"

Me:"did she do something to you? Was she mean to you?"

Rain:"No"

Me:"we not going home until you tell me the real problem, is it Kendall's dad?"

He nods

Me:"what did he do? Did he give you a nasty look?"

Rain:"you just kissed him, you don't even know him"

Me(sighs):"Rain, His name is Keon, remember the guy I told you about, the one who split coffee on my shirt?"

Rain:"that's him?"

Me:"yes, the next day he asked for forgiveness and bought me donuts and coffee without having to wait in the line after that we became friends"

Rain:"do you kiss all your friends like that?"

Me(chuckles):"No, I don't kiss my friends like that and you should never kiss your friends like that, in fact you should never kiss anyone like that because I will give you a hiding...(sighs)... anyway after Keon and I became friends we then became more than friends"

Rain:"boyfriend and girlfriend?"

Me:"yes boyfriend and girlfriend, I like him a lot and he likes me too"

Rain:"is he going to be my new daddy?"

Me:"well Lowell will always be your daddy, Keon will be your step dad, but I want us, you and I to first spend a lot of time with him and get to know him first before he can qualify to be part of our family, we will give him a month to prove himself because we want only the best people in our lives, after a month you and I will make the final decision of whether we keep him or we lose him

if he manages to make us happy the both of us..what do you say, can we give him a shot? I really like him and I think you will also like him too and if we happy with him and he becomes your step dad you will also have sisters, you know how you always say you want a brother or a sister"

Rain:"I want sisters from your tummy"

Me:"if we give him a chance, he can be able to help me put your sister or brother in my tummy when we both pray to God for it, you know for momma to have a baby she needs a man who she will pray with so God can bless us to be a mother and father to beautiful babies.... your father and I prayed for you and God blessed us we were so happy when you came into our lives and we still are very grateful you came, you are the best gift I've ever been blessed with, but as time went on things between Lowell and I didn't work out because we he was not my soulmate, we loved each other but we were not meant to be together because he found someone who was his soulmate....

Rain:"what is a soulmate again?"

Me:" a soulmate is someone who falls in love not with your body or how you look like but has a deeper connection with the person you are on the inside, someone who loves everything about you, not only the perfect side of you that you show to the world like being smart, having the best grades being friendly and always laughing but your soulmate will also love the flaws, parts of you

that are not so perfect, like when you sick and no body wants to be next to you your soulmate will be there, when you fail and feel like giving up cause everyone else is disappointed in you your soulmate will still be there to uplift you and inspire you to do better, your soulmate is that person who sees only the best in you even when everyone else sees evil or crazy or broken, they make you want to become a better person, a soulmate is someone you don't have to explain the pain you feel for them to understand but they will just comfort you because they understand your feelings, it's that one person who will always forgive you in a heartbeat because they don't want to lose you, they will do anything to be with you even when the circumstances don't allow but they will fight to be with you and you will fight to be with them to, it's a person whom no matter what happens between the two of you, the universe will find a way to bring you back together...a soulmate is the person chosen by God for you to spend the rest of your life with them and they will love you and your children whether they his blood or not but because it's your soulmate they will love everything that you love that makes you happy"

Rain:"wow..."

Me:"and that's just a few words to describe a soulmate..."

Rain:"are you looking for your soulmate?"

Me:"well you can't go looking for a soulmate, you kinda just find each other without looking for each other, the universe brings you together"

Rain:"is Keon your soulmate?"

Me:"I don't know yet, we have to give him a chance so that we can find out if he's the one"

Rain:"okay, we can give him a chance to prove himself, but what if I don't like him"

Me:"then he would've failed and we lose him"

Rain:"will you be happy if we lose him?"

Me:"I'll be a bit sad, but I'm always happy when you are happy, you will always be my number one soulmate"

He smiles at me

Rain:"okay, please don't kiss him until he proves himself"

Me:"I won't"

He stands up

Rain:"let's go play"

I get up

Me(smiling):"let's go!"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Before I made my way in she burnt some incense welcoming me inside with it

Gugu:"would you like something to drink?"

Me:"No thank you, it would be nice if we got straight to the point"

Gugu:"oh..okay, my name is Gugulethu but you can call me Gugu"

Me:"nice to meet you Gugu I remember your name from the hospital..."

She nods

Gugu:"I was only shown a dark spirit hovering over you, it's actually here with you right now..."

She shakes as if she got chills all over her body

Gugu:"but she's not inside the house because of the incense, the ancestors are present with us"

I nod

Gugu:" into engizoyenza manje ukukhlola masengikuhlolile, ngizokutshena ukuthi kumele wenzeni ukuze uzothola usizo"

(What I will do is go through consultation with you once I've done that I'll tell you what you have to do to get help)

Me:"yebo..."

Gugu:"thokoza..."

Me:"thokoza gogo"

Gugu:"othi ngiyohlela emsamu ngizokubiza"

(Let me go set up my altar, I will call you)

Me:"thokoza"

She makes her way out the back door

I look through my phone as I wait for her

I go into social media scrolling down, I noticed Amahle posted pictures of herself and her son wearing matching clothes I try to take a closer look at the picture since it looks like it was taken from a distance so I can't really see the boys face but he is light caramel in completion, I zoom...

"Please come this way"

I log off putting my phone in my pocket as I follow her to the back and there's a nice round hut it looks very neat

Gugu:"your shoes"

I take off my shoes, she sprinkles something from a block pot bowl with what looks like a tail, I think it's muthi of some sort as it has a bit of a smell

She sprinkles it on me and around her hut while making funny sounds and calling upon her ancestors before allowing me inside

I walk in and sit on a grass mat

She is now dressed differently I'm her traditional attire and more beads on her head,neck, hands and ankles

She lits the candles, it was a white, blue and yellow and incense

Gugu:"aaiii... Lwandle, yin ndaba ubaleka, hlezi ubaleka owufuni ukubhekana nempfi awufuni ukulwa, izinyanya zakho zizimisele ukuklwelwa kodwa wena uziflathele, owuziboni.....

(Why are you always running you always running away you don't want to face your battles you don't have the fighting spirit, your ancestors are ready to fight for you but you have turned your back on them....)

Me:"bafuna ukungilwelwa? emva kwakhokonke esingikwenzile...negazi e....

(They want to fight for me? Even after all the blood that.....)

Gugu:"igazi eselicithekile

(The blood that has spilt.....)

Gugu:"yes, they are very aware of what you did to your girlfriend...

Me:"my wife, she was my wife....

Gugu:"well they never recognized her as your wife because you never married her the right way, you never involved them, azange wenze izinto ngokwesiko"

(You didn't do things the traditional way)

Gugu:"Vanessa, your girlfriend died and became an angry spirit as she blocked the light inviting her to the world of the spirits she blocked it with the anger she had towards you and the way you brutally murdered her, she wants you to suffer, to never find happiness, never find peace as you took her life while she was not ready to die, the person in you who's always angry and thirsty for blood is not you, it's her, yes you had anger in you since you were a young boy because of the curse that was cast upon your family, your parents might have broken the curse on them but it is still very much intact in you and your brother since birth and doctors confirmed it as bipolar with you as they cursed you with the spirit of confusion and irrationality for your head to always mess with you, and your brother will forever be a womaniser and abuser non of his relationships will ever last, he was cursed with the spirit of Jezebel, the woman who wanted your father was a woman who had a powerful witch as a sister, the most feared witch in KZN uSaqwithi and her curses are very strong only the most powerful healers can break them and there are very few of those, the woman who you are with now is no good, she has made an evil sacrifice to bind your blood with hers, she did an evil enactment a blood covenant, she used your



blood and hers, they were mixed together and blood of a vulture, she drank it and also made you drink it....

Me:"ima ima imakancane, this is getting too much... Emma would never do that, umlungu uEmma akazazi indaba zokuthakatha"

(Emma is white, she doesn't know anything about witchcraft)

Gugu:" Lutho, bakhona nabelungu abakhohlakele bazazi kahle lezizinto they just act like they don't believe but in secret I have consulted a few white people, we also have white sangomas, in the spiritual world there is no such thing as skin color, spirits are very diverse, white people know these things"

I shake my head as I feel my anger building up

Me:"how did she get my blood? How did she make me drink it?"

Gugu:"she sucked your blood using a needle after putting you in deep sleep, she made you drink the mixed blood by spiking it in you alcohol"

Me:"angiyikholwa ke le"

(I don't believe this)

Gugu:"that's not all"

Me:"there's more?"

Gugu:"if anything happens to her it will affect you too, if you die she dies visa versa, if you cheat on her you will get sick, she doesn't love you she lusts you more than she loves you she specially loves the benefits that come with being with you, the luxurious lifestyle....

Me:"I knew that part....(angrily) I swear I will kill that pathetic excuse of a woman!...

Gugu:"you do that you also die..."

Me:"what else don't I know?"

Gugu:"that is all I can reveal to you thus far"

Me:"okay so what do I have to do to get rid of all these curses?"

Gugu:"you need to go back home to your family, once you there, you go to a prophethess named Khanya, you need to stop running away from your fears and face your battles heads on, there is so much you left behind and if you don't go home soon you will lose so much..."

Me:" Khanya? As in Amahle? That Khanya?"

Gugu:" yes, go home before it's too late"

Me:"I don't understand why does it have to be Amahle, can't someone else help me"

Gugu:"I could help you..."

Me:"then do it, I want you to do it...."

Gugu:"do you love her?"

Me:"Amahle?"

She nods

Me:"I...I.. it's complicated..... besides it's too late for Amahle and I too much damage has been done"

Gugu:"it might take long for me to help you and by the time you in your right senses, you will lose a lot, you will get your normal life back but it will cost you a life"

Me:" a life? Who's life?"

Gugu:" I can't tell you who but it will be someone dear to you..."

Me:"why can't you just tell me, is it Amahle? Will she die if she doesn't help me?..."

Gugu:"I can't say who will die..."

Me:"why are ancestors so confusing why can't you just tell me, is it my mother? Is that person blood related or not?"

Gugu:"I'm sorry I can't tell you..."

Me(agitated):"you say you want to help me but you just came to confuse me more, you and your ancestors don't know what you want, you say you can help

me but you also can't help me! How can you help me but threaten someone else's life!? What is wrong with you?

You are no different from all the witches who have cursed my life if that is even true, Emma is many things, but a witch? You were going well but you took it too far, I made a mistake coming here..."

I get up and walk towards the door

"If you don't get help not only will a life be lost but yours as well"

Me:"so be it, if people are so desperate to see me dead then let me die, people die everyday when it's my time it will be my time no one can run away from death, it's sad but we all going to die in the end anyway, death does not scare me, people die in front of me everyday..."

Gugu:"what about your daughter?...."

Me:"she will be okay maybe I'll be a better ancestor to her than her bewitched cursed evil angry alive father"

Gugu:"a precious life might be lost"

Me:"and hows that my fault, of the ancestors are murders let them kill, I'm done with this shit"

.

.

.

.

Emma

.

.

.

I see him coming out of the house and rushing to his car, I start the car and speed off so I can get to the house before he does.

After a while I park the car inside the garage and rush back inside the house

I find the kids playing by the pool

I go chill with them by the chairs and watch them swim

I hear Noah calling for London as he makes his way in, he always does that

"Where's my princess!"

London screams from upstairs, she's probably in her play room

"Where's daddy's girl!"

He makes his way to the pool his eyes land on me

Me:"oh hey babe, you back early"

Noah:"told you I wasn't going forever..."

He walks up to me and gives me a kiss

He doesn't smell like a woman, his cologne is still very strong, he doesn't look like someone who just had sex, but I guess I will only find out tomorrow if he falls sick

Noah:"hey boys!"

Kids:"Hey dad!!...."

Yasmeen:"look what I can do dad!"

He does a back flip under water

Noah:"impressive! Show me more"

They do other tricks as the nanny bring London to him

London (excitedly):"Dadaa!!..."

Noah:"there she is! Why is my baby not in a swimsuit swimming with her brothers?"

Me:"London is scared of water"

Noah:"no way, not on my watch, let's go get our swim suits, we are swimming!!"

London:"swimming!!"

He throws her on the air as she giggles excitedly.

London coughs for long a really rough cough

Noah(worriedly):"hey, princess, are you okay?"

He looks at me

Noah:"does she have the flu?"

Me:"not that I know of maybe she's catching the cold..."

Noah:"shit...."

He checks her before getting up and heading to the house

I watch them disappear inside the house

I've never seen him this worked up and concerned over a little cough

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

We were having lunch at my parents house discussing the wedding

Me:"we don't need all that extra family, we want a small wedding"

Bailey:"but babe, a big wedding won't hurt, I always imagined myself having the most beautiful extravagant wedding, like have you seen the one in family reunion with those people dressed as angels hanging from the ceiling, I want something like that, or remember we watched crazy rich Asians, the theme was nature and as the bride walked down the aisle barefooted there was water on the floor...."

Mom(laughing):"that does sound extravagant"

Me:"but that will mean we'll only get married months later, it'll take a lot of time to plan that"

Bailey:"all you have to do is get a nice tux and show up, leave everything to me, I can make this happen in only a month"

I sigh

Me:"I thought we agreed on a small wedding, why you changing your mind now that we here, are we really going to put so much effort on a one day thing, what really matters is our marriage not our wedding"

Bailey:"I was just saying, it's fine, I don't mind a small wedding, I guess we could do simple but beautiful"

Mom(pityful):" aww come on Lowell, a extravagant wedding is every girls dream, she's carrying your first born..."

Me:"second born"

Mom:"yeah first born that was not a mistake...."

I feel my heart clench

Me(agitated):"you have to stop calling my child a mistake!, I know you don't like Amahle but Rain is my son and he was not a mistake, respect my son, because if I hear such filthy words coming out your mouth again you will have no son at all, please don't ruin this lunch with your little grudge"

Dad:"honey, please stop, that was unnecessary, Rain is our grandson and he was not a mistake"

It goes quiet

Mom:"okay I'm sorry, I shouldn't have said that"

(Silence)

Mom(sips her wine):"anyway do you have any idea how much pain she's still going to go through to bring this baby to life? And spend the rest of her life barring children for you, the wedding of her dreams is the least you could do for her"

And just like that the conversations continue

Dad:"your mother is right, the wedding day is for the woman, let her go all out, somewhere along the line you will go down memory lane dating back to your wedding day, you want it to encourage you through your difficult times, you don't want to look back when things get hard in marriage and think argh even the wedding day was bad, your wedding day can be a reflection of how you want your marriage to be, if you want a boring small wedding you'll probably have a boring short marriage, I'm not saying this is true but hey, she is carrying your child and she is the woman who has your heart, if your goal is to keep her happy then start proving it by giving her the wedding she wants"

I look at Bailey

Bailey:"you don't have to babe, I'm happy with anything"

Me:"we are having a big wedding"

Bailey (smiling):"really!?"

Me(smiling):"yes baby, all I want to do is marry you, big or small as long as we say our I dos"

She smiles and hugs me, I hold her back and we share a kiss

The mood lightens up even more

Mom:"I can't believe I'll have a daughter"

Bailey:"I can't believe he agreed to having a big wedding"

Lowell:"we'll invite all your friends and their friends friends, my friends and their friends friends all our family members, even our next door neighbors, we'll throw the biggest wedding ever thrown in Johannesburg, we should get married at the FNB stadium and invite celebrities as well"

Dad:"aaiii ke sekwiyahaba ke manje"

(That's too much exaggeration now)

We all laugh

Mom(fading smile):"I just wish your brother was here"

Dad:"yeah he probably has a whole family now and is married"

Mom:"I don't understand why he had to cut us off, I know our family is not perfect but we always had each other, I never thought my family would be divided by a girl....

Me:"you can't blame Amahle for Noah's childishness, Noah had a life before Amahle, Noah has been fighting his own demons he did this with Nessa as well when he didn't come home for over a year busy building an "empire" which was the club, he came back though, so when he's done being angry at the world he'll come back he's not a child we can't blame other people for the decisions he makes on his own"

Mom:"please excuse me"

She gets up and heads

Dad(takes the wine):"refill?"

Me:"yes please"

Bailey:"I'll refill on the juice"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We had to leave the mall early cause Rain wasn't feeling well so we spent the rest of the day at my place

Keon bought board games he thought we might enjoy we were now playing twister , it was so much fun Rain was even feeling better

Kendall and Rain were out it was now Keon and I, we were in a very hard position and my leg was starting to hurt

Kendall:"Left foot red"



Keon:"whoa that's impossible!"

Me:"you can always quit"

Keon:"never!"

We try to move, the only way to get his foot to blue was for it to go between my legs, we were now in a very awkward position as he was under me

Me:"I'm going to fall"

Rain:"come on momma don't give up!"

Me:"I'm trying!"

Kendall:"right hand yellow"

I had to wrap my arms around him to get my hand to yellow, he tried to move but his butt touched the floor, I gasped as the kids didn't notice

Keon(whispers):"sshh please don't tell"

Me:"no! Guys he lost his butt touched the floor!"

Keon:"ohh you snitch!"

Me(laughing):"I win!"

He falls on his back and pulls me to fall top of him as he tickles me

Me(laughing):"Help me!!! Kendall!!"

Rain gets on top of me trying to pull me but Keon holds me tighter

Kendall:"let's tickle him!"

They tickle him, he screams laughing as we all tickle him giving me a chance to get off him

Me(laughing):"you lost Keon! accept defeat!"

Keon:"okay whatever let's play something else that game is for girls anyway"

Kendall:"you just saying that cause Mahle and I won!"

Rain:"we let you win"

Keon:"exactly"

Me:"oh please, let me make us something to eat..."

Kendall:"wait can we play a bit longer please"

Rain:"yes I'm not hungry yet"

Me:"okay, so what do you wanna play then?"

Kendall:"hide and seek!"

Keon:"ohh kendall is the master of hide and seek we'll look for her forever"

Rain:"I'm not seekng!"

Me:"we'll have to play rock paper scissors"

We play rock paper scissors until it was Kendall and Rain

Me:"looks like you counting Rain"

Rain:"I'll count up to 50"

He stands against the wall and starts counting we scatter all over the house, I walk in the mini walk in closet in my bedroom, few seconds later the door open and he walks in

Me:"Hey this is my hiding space!"

Keon:"well it's ours now"

He closes the closet and locks it, it was dark as the lights were off

Me:"where are you?"

"Right here"

I feel him close up against me

Me:"oh there you are"

Keon:"I thought we wouldn't get a chance to be alone"

Me:"why didn't we think of this game earlier?"

We laugh quietly as he pulls me in for a kiss, I wrap my arms around his shoulder and he picks me up as the kiss intensifies, he pins me against the wall as one of his hands sneaks up my breasts, my hand sneaks down to his abs as I slide down and touch his boner

He puts me down and unbottons my pants sliding his hand inside my pants and starts playing with my pussy, I unbotton his pants as well and grab his dick massaging it as it fills my hand

rubbing his precum from the tip

"Got you!"

We startle as we stop kissing

"Aw you not under the bed, where are they"

"I thought I was good but dad and Mahle are good"

"I'll find them, I think they in here"

We quickly fix ourselves while kissing

"It's locked"

"Let me unlock it"

They unlock from outside the door opens

Me:"you found us!"

He runs out, we walk behind them as he goes back to where he was counting

Rain:" 1 2 3 block mommy and uncle Keon!"

Me:"he blocked you last so you counting!"

Keon:"ah fine!"

We continue playing until it was late and the kids fell asleep while we were watching a movie

Me:"they fell asleep"

Keon:"we should get going"

Me:"it's so late, why don't you leave in the morning"

Keon:"if you don't mind"

Me:"but you'll have to sleep with kendall in Rain's bedroom and Rain will sleep with me, I don't want him waking up and we on the same bed..."

Keon:"I understand, I think he's warming up to me though"

Me:"yeah he is, it's easy because you very good with kids, I didn't know you were this playful"

Keon:"I had to I blame Kendall she's made me a softie..."

Me:"a big strong softie...(giggles) it's cute, let's take the kids to bed"

We get up and take the kids to bed in different rooms

My phone rings, I take it and it's an unsaved number, I pick it up

Me:"hello?"

(Silence)

My heart skips a beat as I can feel who's on the other side, my heart sinks feeling the heartbreak all over again

Me(trembling):" stay away from me, don't ever try calling me again nyla"

I hang up

A soft knock comes through the door

Me:"come in"

He makes his way in

Keon:"done tucking in"

Me(distraught):"yeah..."

Keon (walking closer):"are you okay?"

I snap out of my thoughts and look at him

Me:"yeah I'm fine..."

He picks me up

Keon:"how about we finish what we started in the closet"

Me(smiling):"please finish me!"

He laughs as we head to the lounge kissing

.

.

.

Three months later

\*\*\*\*

"In any moment of decision, the best thing you can do is the right thing. The worst thing you can do is nothing"

Insert 107

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

•

•

•

•

A few days ago I saw Lowell posted a picture of his hand and a woman's hand that had an engagement ring on, he said he's marrying the mother of his kids, I thought him and Amahle were done but he also mentioned that "after everything they've been through she gave him another chance" they probably got back

together, I can't believe this, I'm flying down to Joburg, I just want to go to the wedding, I'm not going to stop it but I just want to see if Amahle will really marry my brother, maybe if I see her getting married to him and confessing her love for him maybe I'll stop loving her.

Leaving her the way I did was wrong and very hurtful not only for her but for me too, I was ready to be with her, marry her and spend the rest of my life loving her like I promised her, but after remembering what I did to Vanessa, I remembered what kind of a monster I am, I loved Amahle too much for her to witness the monster side of me, the side that blocks out all feelings of love and replaces them with rage and anger and blood thirst, I can't control myself when I'm like that, it's like something else takes over me, I knew if I rejected her the way I did she will hate me forever and never want to be with me again, that's what I needed, I made sure she knew that I wanted nothing to do with her I even threatened her life, it was the most painful thing I've ever done, blocking her everywhere making her look like a desperate bitch, the way she fought for me even after all that just broke my heart, I know she will never forgive me for what I've done, I don't even know where will I start asking for her help...the same person I hurt so much to protect her from myself is the very same person I need to save me from myself

(Rough cough)

Emma:"she's getting worse"

Me:"we almost there first thing tomorrow we taking her to the doctor"

Emma:"I hope she's the best as you say"

Me:"don't worry she's good"

Brian:"are we going to see your whole family?"

Me:"yes, my family is not that big, it's just my brother, mom and father"

Yasmeen:"I thought you were the best doctor, why are we taking London to another best doctor?"

Me:"because I specialize in something else London needs a doctor who specializes in what's bothering her"

Yasmeen:"ohhh okay"

I haven't confronted Emma about the witchcraft she used on me, I'm afraid if I confronted her I would get angry and I'd definitely kill her for playing with my life like that but if I kill her I kill myself and probably London will die as well or someone else precious to me, if it was only my life on the line, she'd be a goner, as soon as this curse is broken she better pray her ancestors work overtime for her protection because I will not tolerate a witch to mess with my family.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"where did you put your bow tie!?"

I was walking around the house half naked looking for Rain's missing bow

Me:"we going to be late! I told you to stop playing with that bow yesterday, but do you listen!?"

"I found it!"

I roll my eyes as I run back to my bedroom, I grab my dress and squeeze myself in it, it hugs my body perfectly, I walk to Rain's bedroom while fixing my weave, he's already dressed in his tuxedo, but he's shirt is a mess and his pants are not pulled up properly

Rain:"I'm all ready momma, I just need to put on my shoes"

I smile shaking my head and sit on his bed

Me:"come let me see you"

Rain:"I can dress myself momma, I'm done"

Me: "I know baby and you look really handsome, but you need a bit of mama's touch"

He walks closer and I fix his pants tucking in his shirt properly and his collar after putting his bow tie.

He puts on his shoes and ties them, he still struggles tying shoelaces

Me: "let me do that for you"

He sadly gives me his leg

Me: "don't worry you getting better at it, we just don't have enough time to wait today we already late"

Rain: "okay"

I brush his hair

Rain: "can I wear my durag?"

Me: "hai Rain we going to a wedding, you can't wear a nice tux like this and a durag?"

Rain(sighs): "you don't know swag momma"

Me: "excuse you Mr swagger, let me go get dressed, fix your room while you wait"

There was a knock at the door

Me: "shit! They here"

"I'll get it!"

Me: "first ask who it is!"

I hear his deep voice all the way in my room and Kendall's tiny voice as they talk to Rain, I continue fixing myself as I was now applying makeup

When I was done I went to the lounge

Me: "I'm ready!"

They all look at me as they get up

Keon: "damn, how did I get so lucky?"



Me(smiling):"you must be serving the same God I'm serving"

We share a hug and a peck

Me:"let get going, we late"

We get in the car and drive off to the venue

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I was staring myself in the mirror

reality was kicking in, I'm really getting married, I'm about to commit myself to one woman for the rest of my life, I've always been a lady's man, I've tried being faithful to one woman in the past but I've always failed it doesn't matter how much I really care about a woman I always find myself between another's legs, I can't help it, women out there are beautiful and some who throw themselves at me are irresistible.

But this is real, I'm getting married, it's time I grow up before I get myself sick, I have a wife and children to think about.

I look towards the door as I hear a knock

Me:"come in"

It opens and she makes her way inside and locks the door

"Hey"

Me:"hey, what are you doing here?"

Lulama:"I just came to check up on you"

She was now heavily pregnant and almost ready to pop

Me:"oh, I'm very nervous"

She sits on the bed next to me

Lulama:"don't be, just relax, everything will go well"

Me:"I've messed up so many potential relationships in my life, but I've never come this far with anyone, I'm just scared I will mess up and I'll lose her, this time there's even more to lose..."

Lulama:"i understand how you feel, but for the fact that you've come this far with Bailey shows that you are capable of being the better version of yourself, I just hope you doing this because you want to, not because I said so, I do not want to be responsible for your unhappiness, I want you to be happy and I really hope Bailey makes you happy"

I sigh looking at her

Me:"can I ask you something?"

She nods

Me:"are you happy?"

She frowns confused with a faint smile

(Silence)

Me:"if you not happy then why are you still in that marriage?"

Lulama:"I..I didn't say I wasn't happy"

Me:"you didn't have to"

She gets up

Lulama:"congratulations once again"

Me;"are you sure you won't pop in the middle of the ceremony?"

She bursts into laughter

Lulama:"I doubt I'm a month away"

I smile looking at her, she's very beautiful and glowing, pregnancy really looks good on her.

I take a few steps closer to her

Me:"I need you to tell me something before I continue with....

Lulama:"Lowell.....

Me:"tell me you don't love me anymore...

Lulama:.....

Me:"please....

Lulama:"don't make me do this Lowell"

Me:"it was supposed to be you, you the one who should be walking down that aisle for me, just tell me you don't love me so I can take myself out of this fantasy and move on happily like you have"

Lulama (whispers):"Lowell....

I move closer to her and pull her in for a kiss, she kisses me back, after a while she pushes me off and slaps me across the face

Lulama (teary):"stop it! I came here to...(sighs) you'll never change, I thought...

Me:"what do you want me to do Lulama! Huh? I love you! To be honest if you stopped this wedding I'd choose you, what happened Lulu? You've always wanted us to be together, you went out of your way to break me up with Amahle,, things were still very complicated back then, you were with my brother married, the huge conflict between the four of us, the truth about everything finally comes out after all the mistakes and the revenge events, I thought we could be together but you had moved on with someone else, I always had hope that you'd break up with him but instead you married him and gave him a baby, I still believed you'd leave him for me when you allowed the affair between us....

A frown welcomes my face as I look into her eyes

Me:"wow, you did exactly what I did to you with Amahle, well I get it now, I get how much I hurt you by leading you on while pushing you away and making you watch me love someone else, the only difference with me is that the circumstances of the way things were forced on me to not be able to be with you...

Lulama:"I didn't move on with Chase for revenge on you, after my miscarriage I hated you and family, I wanted nothing to do with you, the Nhlabathis have done nothing but bring pain, drama and heartache into my life not only mine but my sister's as well, you think the world revolves around you, you turned me into this obsessed bitch, you introduced me to drugs and the thrill of doing illegal things to a point where I took it too far...you were this bad boy and I was a naive teenager in love thinking she's living in a movie, but I got a hard slap from the universe, karma visited me more than once...the Lulama who was obsessed with you died, she's dead so get over her!"

I hold her hand before she walks away

Me:"I don't want the one who was obsessed with me...I want the one who was in love with me, the one who wrote poems for me, the one who sneaked out just to come spend time with me in the car parked outside your parents house until we fell asleep, the one who shared her dreams with me, the one who captured every special moments we had because you wanted our memories to last forever, I want that Lulama, the one I fell madly in love with....

With tears in her eyes she looks at me

Lulama:"she died too...

(Silence)

Tears fall from my eyes as I watch her walk away, I hold my painful chest trying to swallow the painful lump through my suddenly dry throat

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I left Emma and the kids at the hotel we just checked in on, I told her I was going to make an appointment with the doctor when in actual fact I was rushing

to the wedding venue. A lot was running through my mind I don't know if I was ready to face what I was about to witness, it'll be very painful to watch but I had to see it, a part of me wants to trash that wedding, I don't know if I'd survive knowing Amahle is Mrs Nhlabathi and it's not with me, I know I've hurt her and she deserves to be happy but this will not only hurt me but it might kill me I don't know if I could take that much, I never expected her life to stop after I left her but I never expected her to move on with Lowell after everything that happened, when I found they had a baby, I felt my whole world crumbling down, I never ate or spoke to anyone for weeks that's when I even cutt my family off as well.....

I park the car outside the venue, I drink some water trying to calm myself down

I felt like I was having an asthma attack as the walls were closing in on me and I don't even have asthma

.  
.br/>.

Amahle

.  
.br/>.

We all stood up as Bailey walked down the aisle, her dress was the most beautiful dress I've ever seen, the diamonds that were shining all over it were breathtaking, knowing how dramatic the Nhlabathis are, those were definitely real diamonds, it is obvious that a lot of money was used to make this fairytale wedding. I never thought Bailey was one to be into such wedding themes, she always seemed like a down to earth simple girl, everything about her is simple but beautiful but the wedding was way different from what I expected but also this is her wedding day after all you only get this once in a lifetime...well maybe not anymore with the amount of divorces nowadays but hey that's how it should be...

I admire my cute handsome boy who's standing behind Lowell with the rings, he is the flower boy, I signal him to smile as I captured a picture of him

Lowell:"I will take your love to give me hope, give me joy, and make me a better man. I promise to listen, to hear, and to always consider your feelings and thoughts as we travel together on this journey. I vow to love, honor, and cherish you, forsaking all others, as a faithful husband as long as we both shall live"

Bailey:" I want to start by telling you how much I love you. Yes, I love how handsome you are, and how you're cut like an action figure, but that's just the icing on the cake. The absolute best part about you is your kind heart. You are the most giving, selfless person I know and I thank God every day that you have given all of your love to me, without any hesitation.

I promise to walk with you, hand in hand through life, as your biggest fan, your shoulder to lean on, and your best friend.

Your arms are the ones I want wrapped around me at the beginning and end of each day.

Your infectious smile is the one I want our kids to have.

You're the one I want to love completely and forever"

I wiped my tears, this kind of romance makes me so emotional, I thought it was only in movies but it seems like also in real life...

Keon pulls me into his arms

Keon:"hopefully one day it will be you and I up there"

I look at him as my heart skips a beat

Me:"really?"

Keon:"yeah"

He pecks my lips

Pastor:"and do you Bailey take Lowell to be your lawfully wedded husband in holy matrimony, till death do you part?"

Bailey:"I do..."

A bright light comes in as the doors open, we all turn our heads...

My body becomes weak as I watch him make his way in and sitting by the back

Keon:"what's up with that...."

I feel the urge to pee as my tummy is in knots with my blood boiling hot

Me:" we...we have to go ..."

"Aahhh!!"

I look at the front and Rain fell dropping the rings while holding his chest, I get up almost falling as my weak legs carry me to the altar

Me(fearfully):"Raaaiin!!!"

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Remembering a painful past is equivalent to re-injure a healed wound"

Insert 108

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

I stood up to see what was going on, the pain in her voice while screaming for her child I felt it cut through my chest, without hesitation I went up to the altar to see what was happening, it looked like the boy fainted or he was struggling to breath, I couldn't just watch knowing I'm a doctor and I could possibly help

Me:"what's going on...

I push through the crowd as I'm met by Amahle trying to give him air

Amahle (crying):"we need to take him to the hospital"

Lowell:"let me get him.....

Me:"let me help, I think I know what to do....

He looks at me

Lowell:"you are not needed here, leave"

Me:"the child is sick let me help"

I push through and get to the center looking at him struggling to breath

For a minute it felt like I was looking at myself as a little boy

I brushed it off and knelt down next to him

Me:"do you by any chance carry an AED with you"

Amahle:"iiit's in my purse....

She gets up to go take it, I put my hands on the boys chest supressing it to put pressure so he can breath properly...

To my surprise he gets up rubbing his chest looking all better

Me:"are you okay chap?"

He nods as Amahle comes with the little automated external defibrillator (AED)



Amahle: "Rain! My baby, are you okay? Breath for me, is your chest painful?"

She touches him all over with Rain nodding assuring her that he's fine

Rain: "that guy helped me"

She looks at me, her eyes filled with hatred and anger

Amahle: "let's go, we need to get you to the hospital"

Rain: "No mamma I'm fine, please, I don't want to miss daddy's wedding, I have to give him the rings, please"

She cups his face observing his eyes and his whole face, that worry and unconditional love very visible in her eyes is hard to miss

Amahle: "are you sure you okay?"

Rain: "I'm okay, look"

He jumps up and down, everyone laughs

and sighs in relief

"I think he should take his medication first before we continue just to be safe"

I look at him as he stands next to Amahle rubbing her shoulder, it's him, it's the guy she's been posting on social media

Pastor: "he's okay everyone, this is the Lord's house after all, the holy spirit is present with us indeed, let the wedding continue"

Everyone claps excited as they go back to their seats, I look at mom and dad as they are staring at me

I keep eye contact with Amahle, she moves her eyes from me and buries her head on that man's chest as they sit down

I make my way out of the church building

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

After having the late lunch I was tired and ready to go home

I got up from the table where I was sitting with other ladies

Me:"guys I think I'm going to call it a day for me, I can't go on"

Amahle:"yeah me too, it's been a long day"

Andiswa:"so you not staying for the after party"

Me:"yuuuhh I won't survive unless you want me to go to early labor"

Thandile:"it won't be early, you are ready, just by looking at that tummy I can see that baby is ready to come out"

Me:"yoh then he must come out while I'm in my comfy bed not doing vosho in the middle of a crowd with drunk people"

They laugh

Amahle:"I feel sorry for you, you going to go through that again aii mina shame ngright ngo Rain maybe ngizomelamisa in the next ten years"

We all laugh at her

Me:"ten years!? Ha such a gap they'll bore each other one will be too old to play with the other"

Amahle:"yey I don't care they will figure it out, giving birth, that shit is hell"

Me(holding my tummy):"please can we stop talking about birth, you giving him ideas in there to ambush me right now"

Amahle (laughing):"it will only make this day even more beautiful..let's go"

I pick up my purse before hugging everyone goodbye

We head to the guys who are chilling next to the tree having beers and other drinks with braai meat

Amahle:"babe?"

They all turn to look at us and greet us

Keon:"hey love, you good? Come here"

He pulls her hand for her to sit on top of him, I look around for Chase

Me:"has anyone seen Chase?"

Lowell:"he disappeared about an hour ago approximately"

Me:"did he say he he was going?"

Cousin:"he said he is going to make a business phone call"

I sigh

Me:"okay, uhm he's probably in the car, you gentlemen enjoy the rest of the night, Lowell, congratulations once again you have made us proud, good evening everyone"

I walk away

"Wait let me walk you out"

I look at him then carry on with my way

I look around and spot the kids playing by the trampoline

Me:"Theo!.... Theodore!!

Theo:"Mah!?"

Me:"it's home time"

Kids:"aawwwww....

Me:"yes it's late we have to go baby"

Theo:"can we play for five more minutes"

Me:"we have to go Theo, you will visit Rain maybe tomorrow, I'll talk to his mom"

Kids:"Yes!"

He takes his shoes and runs to me as we continue out till we reach a quiet space by the car, he jumps in the car and immediately plays his psp, looks like Chase is not in the car

Lowell:"thank you for coming"

Me:"it was my pleasure, the wedding was beautiful, you out did yourself, she will never forget this day"

Lowell:"I try..."

Me:"where is she anyway I should bid her goodbye before leaving..."

Lowell:"I thought she was with you ladies, but maybe she's with the in laws I remember mom calling her"

Me:"ohh yeah I saw her serving earlier, I guess I'll talk to her tomorrow then"

Lowell:"yeah"

(Silence)

Me(sighs):"uhm let me call this man of mine"

I look for my phone in my purse

Lowell:"Lulama..."

I look at him

Me:"yes?"

Lowell:"were you honest with me earlier?"

Me:"Lowell..."

Lowell:"I just want to know..."

I can see the hurt in his eyes, my heart sinks

Me:"I..I was honest, I'm not the same Lulama who you fell in love with, I've grown and I see the world differently now, love is not what I thought it was back then, everything is different now, please move on Lowell, give your wife the love she deserves, did you hear her vows? That woman really loves you, cherish that because once you've lost her, you might not be so lucky in finding

love again, love is a once in a lifetime thing, when it visits you twice consider yourself very lucky because that is rare"

I kiss his cheek and get in my car then roll down the window

Me:"bye Lowell"

Lowell(forced smile with teary eyes):"goodbye"

After locking eyes with me for a while he turns and walks away.

I blink a few times as the glasses in my eyes break and tears stream down, my heart feeling heavy with a painful dry throat, I break down and cry silently, I didn't mean to cry but it just happened, I blame my hormones, I'm supposed to be strong I don't just cry, it was very hard watching Lowell marry someone else it felt like watching someone you love making love with someone else right in front of your eyes, but I had to happen, I have a family that I love and I don't wish to lose, I'm happy and it'd be selfish for me to not let Lowell get his happiness. This is not the way I thought life would turn out but I guess some things are just not meant to be the way we always thought it would be.

I wipe my tears and call Chase, he picks up right before I was about to cancel the call

"Babe?"

Me:"Babe where are you, I want to go home I'm tired"

"Oh okay, I'm at the toilet, I think it's something I ate, I've been in and out"

Me:"oh my goodness! Are you okay?"

"I'll be fine I'm done where are you?"

Me:"I'm in the car with Theo"

"Okay I'll be right there"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

The wedding continued perfectly after Rain had the mini heart attack, I'm not sure what caused it but he was now fine as if nothing happened, I'm suspecting it had something to do with Noah, at first I thought my eyes were deceiving me, I thought my mind was playing tricks on me but it was really him, I never thought I'd ever be so disgusted to see him, I didn't know how much I hate him until I saw him, in my mind he was dead to me and after all these years I mentally started believing that he was dead, when I accepted his death subconsciously I was able to move on from him without crying myself to sleep every night, I've always been desperate for people's love and acceptance, with Noah it was the last straw I loved him more than I loved myself it took me a while to realize this because I thought I've lost my soulmate, I thought I couldn't live without him he was my everything, boy was I naive and stupid, when I think of the way I fought to get him back making myself look stupid when he made it crystal clear that he was done with me....now I can't even stand breathing the same air as him

Seeing him today brought back the most painful memories, I just hope he's not here to cause havoc, he's been gone so long I was sure I'd never see him again.

"Love?..."

I snap out of my thoughts and look at him

Me: "hm?"

Keon: "why you crying?"

I look at myself by the mirror of the car

I wipe my tears I didn't even realize I had tears

Me: "I don't know...(laughs)...that was random..."

I laugh even more, he looks at me confused and chuckles

Keon: "are you sure you okay love?"

Me:"I'm fine...(laughing)...I was just thinking about how beautiful that wedding was and what happened with Rain and how he miraculously got better without having to take him to the doctor, everything was just so emotional, I felt God's presence it was a blessed day"

Keon(smiles):"you right, it was a beautiful wedding"

Me:"sorry we couldn't stay for the party"

Keon:"it's okay, we parents, some things we have to miss"

I look at the backseat and the kids are fast asleep

Me:"they are so tired"

Keon:"cake and coldrinks are no child's play, they had so much energy running up and down...."

Me(laughing):"kwaphela konke ukphapha"

Keon:"exactly which is good because it means more peace for us"

Me:"you should sleep over tonight"

Keon:"I thought you'd never ask"

We laugh as I take his hand on mine

Me:"Keon"

Keon:"love"

Me:"I love you"

He looks at me

Keon:"I love you too baby"

He looks back at the road and kisses my hand I also kiss his as I rest my head against my seat closing my eyes

.

.

.

Lowell

.  
. .

I don't know whether to say today was a happy day or a confusing day, my emotions were playing with me, a part of me felt like I wasn't ready for this big step but the other part of me was more than ready, I'm not getting any younger and having my own family is something I always wanted...not this soon but I wanted it.

With Noah showing up at my wedding and taking all the attention as always, I don't know how I felt seeing him, I really wanted to punch the bipolar out of him at the same time I wanted to hug him and appreciate him for coming to my wedding, but I know better than getting excited for Noah, he could disappear again the next day like how he only stayed a few minutes at the wedding and left without saying anything to anyone, I've stopped entertaining his little tantrums, when he's ready to grow up then maybe we can talk but he's been childish for the past seven years, faking his death at first and then cutting off his family for all these years because of he failed to be a man to a woman who loved him, mxm....I get agitated just thinking about him..

But today is not about him, it's about my wife and I...

I carried her bridal style to our bedroom

Me:"finally carrying you bridal style as the official bride"

She giggles

Bailey:"I'm just so happy this day is officially over"

Me:"was it that bad?"

Bailey:"it was awesome! But I'm supper tired"

I put her on the bed

Me:"I'm hope you not toooo tired"

Bailey:"of cause I can never be too tired for you my love"



We kiss as we take each other's clothes off, we were finally naked and I was between her legs as we kissed, I trailed my kisses down her neck and down her belly till I reached her honeypot, I kissed her inner thighs, I couldn't help but catch a scent, not a pleasant one...I run my thumb between her pussy lips and she was very wet and creamy...I opened up her vagina and a bit of her creams slid out

I looked at her

Me:"you very wet"

Bailey:"because of you babe"

Me:"it looks like you already came"

Bailey:"I got too excited by your touch, my hormones are in peak even just your kisses make me supper horny"

She was right, she has been addicted to my dick lately, it must be a pregnancy thing, I kiss her mouth as we continue making out, I slide my dick in and it goes in easily, something didn't feel right but I brushed it off, maybe it's because I'm drunk

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I just got back to the hotel, after I left the church I went to the club for a bit of drinks, okay, for a lot of drinks, I needed to get the memory of this day out of my mind, I regret going to that wedding, for a few seconds there I was relieved it wasn't Amahle getting married but after everything else that happened with her child and the nasty looks I got from her, she didn't have to say it, it was in her eyes, it wasn't those sweet kind innocent eyes I loved staring into, they were

different, it was like I was a disgusting hobo that just came out of the trash or a murderer

I got in the room and threw myself on the bed as Emma looked at me

Emma:"you drunk, really Noah?"

Me:"sshhhh, please I just need to sleep"

Emma:"you bring us here and leave us to go make an "appointment" and you come back hours later, drunk! You haven't been picking up your calls all day! Where were you Noah!"

I put a pillow over my head

Me:"I said ssshhhh"

Emma:"our baby is sick and this is what you do when you were supposed to be with her, you know how much she's always happy when you around she doesn't focus on the pain of her chest and throat caused by the cough"

Me:"I'm here now am I not

She continues shouting at me as her voice becomes fainter and fainter as I drift off into a deep slumber

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We put the kids to sleep. When Keon and Kendall started sleeping over often I decided to get another bed in Rain's bedroom because I didn't like them sharing the same bed, nothing was wrong with it because they are innocent kids but I just wasn't comfortable with it and Keon understood, even if they were both my biological kids I would want them to sleep on separate beds, even if it's not

separate rooms although I'd want them to have separate rooms but if that's not possible then separate beds.

We were in bed cuddling as he was plaiting sleeping blocks (amagoda) on my head

Keon:"love"

Me:"babe?"

Keon:"remember I told you my story about the mother of my kids?"

Me:"yes, the very heart breaking story, I'm still sorry that happened to you"

Keon:"don't be it wasn't your fault"

I squeeze him hugging his waist as my head is resting on his abs

Keon:"you've never told me about what happened between you and Rain's father, I'd like to know the story, if you don't mind talking about it"

I look up at him

Keon:"I'm just curious, you guys seem to be getting along so well, it seems like it was a peaceful break up"

Me:"yeah...it..it was peaceful I guess, but it was also very painful... because I loved him, you know..."

Keon:"I understand, what happened? Did he cheat?"

Me:"yes, he was constantly cheating on me and I kept forgiving him, until I got pregnant with Rain, he couldn't handle my hormones and he would go out and come back late...our relationship was just a mess constant heartache, when Rain turned two years old I decided enough was enough, I broke things up, and he also felt suffocated being with me somehow, so we broke up, it wasn't peaceful we fought and we didn't talk for weeks until, we both decided to put our child's feelings and best interest first, we agreed to co-parent, and we did that better than we did our relationship, as years went by we became good friends and our feelings for each other kind of died off along the way..."

Keon(nodding):"oh I see, well, he didn't deserve you, it's a shame that there are men who get to have all of this but take advantage of it because they don't know a queen when she's right in front of them, it's sad what happened between you

two, but I'm glad it happened because I know get to be here and show you what you actually deserve... happiness"

I sit up and look at him

Me:"you are doing well with that..."

Keon:"and I'm not planning on messing it up...I want to take you to Ghana, I want you to meet my family"

Me:"are you serious!?"

Keon:"yes, they will be in Ghana cause they fly back there every holidays but they stay here in South Africa during the rest of the year...."

Me:"babe...are you sure about this? We not moving too fast?"

Keon:"honestly Amahle I don't really care which pace we going on, all I know is that I want this to last my whole life"

Me(smiling and hugging him):" you are so amazing...I love you"

Keon:"I love you too so much"

We share a kiss, we are disturbed by a soft knock on the door as we break the kiss

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes baby"

He gets on the bed

Rain:"I had a nightmare"

Me:"ohh, I'm sorry my love, how you feeling? Does your chest hurt?"

He nods sadly, I pull him to sit on my lap as we hug

Me:"it's okay, momma's here now"

Rain:"I want to cuddle"

I look at Keon, he smiles and nods

Keon:"I'll go sleep with kendall"

Me:"I'm sorry..."

Keon(smiling):"it's fine love, he needs the cuddles more than I do, goodnight"

Me(smiles):"thanks for understanding, goodnight babe"

He pecks my lips multiple times before heading out and switching off the lights for us

I cover us with the blanket as we cuddle

Me:"it's okay my boy, momma will not let the nightmare come true"

Rain(sleepy tone):"I love you momma"

He yawns drifting off, I kiss his forehead

Me:"I love you more"

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Sometimes when I need a miracle I look into my son's eyes ....and realize I've already created one" (unknown)

Insert 109

•

•

•

•

•

A month later

Amahle

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

I am emotionally and physically drained

Rain was admitted in hospital a few days ago, I'm starting to lose hope in getting a donor, it's been a whole full year and it seems like he's getting worse.

I'm working night shift so I can spend nights at the hospital....I'm currently in my office right now

I was talking to Precious over video call

Presh:"this is bad, do you think we losing him"

Me(crying):"it's so bad Presh, I don't think he can take this anymore he needs a heart"

Presh:"Amahle I think it's time you told people the truth about Rain or you will lose him, put your anger and your feelings aside, your son comes first, his health this is not only hurting and killing Rain but if he dies you know that you won't make it you'll never forgive yourself, I know for sure you'd take your life as well, even if it wasn't your fault"

Me:"I can tell the truth but that won't change the fact that Rain still needs a heart, this is not only spiritual, if Rain gets a donor he will be okay he will be healed that is what was communicated with me, Rain was introduced and welcomed to his father's ancestors like requested, but I guess telling the truth might make this process of getting a donor quicker...

Presh:"but you know it's more spiritual than just that and Noah is back in town maybe the ancestors guided him back so you can get the chance to tell him...he just has to know, it doesn't mean you should get back with him"

Me:"I know, it's just I've lived with this secret for so long when Rain learns the truth, he will be so disappointed at me, he might never trust me again, it will confuse him so much....I don't want to hurt him"

Presh:"but this needs to happen, who knows maybe once you've told the truth you will miraculously get a donor"

"Doctor Mbokazi...

I put my finger up for her to give me a minute

Me(sighs):"I have to go friend, we'll talk"

Presh:"okay babe, please do the right thing"

Me:"I will, bye"

I hang up and look at the nurse

Nurse:"good news, Rain has a donor"

My heart skips as my eyes widened in disbelief

It feels like my ears are deceiving me

Me:"what??"

Nurse:"there is a donor for Rain, perfect match"

Me:"are you serious"

Nurse:"yes, he'll be going to surgery tonight...

I get up and run up to his ward to share the news, the joy in my heart is unexplainable as tears escape my eyes blocking my vision

Me(smiling excitedly while running):"Rain!! Oh my God thank you so much...Raaaiin!!..

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

Me:"Where are you going?"

He fixes himself in front of the mirror as he was dressed in smart casual clothes

Chase:"I'm going to work I told you this"

He puffs his cologne

Me:"dressed like that?"

Chase:"how am I dressed?"

Me:"like someone going on a date or to the club"

Chase:"really? That's not what I was going for, I promise you, it's strictly work though"

I'm not proud to admit it but I have cheated before and I know a cheater when I see one, it's like Chase is not even trying to hide that he's cheating, he's acting too suspicious, I don't know whether he thinks I'm plain stupid or he just genuinely can't hide it. He hasn't been touching me, he avoids cuddles, always coming home late and blaming work, always pressing his phone and smiling, bathing twice a day, changed his body wash flavor and by the negligence I'm getting it's differently not for me, I feel my heart sink painfully

Me:"Babe?"

He looks at me

Me:"why?"

Chase:"why what baby?"

Me:"why are you cheating on me?"

He looks at me dumbfounded

Me:"I know we haven't been able to have sex for quite a while now and my big belly and chubby body is probably a turn off for you now, I'm not the same way you met me... but are you losing that much interest for you to cheat?"

He comes sit next to me on the bed

Chase:"I'm not cheating..."



Me: "I know you are, you are bad at hiding it, now I know you've never done this before, it's the first time in the years we've been together you acting like this, with Theodore you were so caring and loving of me, spent so much time with me cut off some days of work just to feed my cravings and attend appointments never have you once let me feel lonely, but now....what is it? What am I doing wrong?"

Chase: "babe, there's nothing you doing wrong I've just been really busy with work, I didn't realize I was making you feel this way"

Me(crying): "please baby I won't be able to handle it.... please don't do this to me, I love you so much I can't handle this pain, please break up with her, end things and let's focus on our family, our soon to be new born baby who will be with us very soon, please can you stop this today, I know you cheating you don't have to explain anything, just please stop it before I start finding proof or catching you red handed cause I wouldn't know how I'd deal with that, you helped me out of deep depression, you came into my life at my lowest and you held my hand and gave me hope, please don't help me sink back into it, I don't want to go back to that dark place of my life that I still once in a while have nightmares about, please, stay with me tonight and let's cuddle"

He looks at me for a while and smiles as he cups my face with his one hand

Chase: "my baby, I understand your concern and why you getting all those ideas in your head about what I'm doing behind your back..."

Me: "you have changed, your acting like someone who's trying to impress someone but that person is not me because I feel neglected"

He sighs and looks at me

Chase: "I'm sorry you feel that way, I guess I've been caught up with this new project I've been working on at work, it'll be good for business in terms of attraction"

I look at him

Me: "Babe?"

Chase: "yes?"

Me:"do you still think I'm beautiful? You know like how you thought when you first met me?"

Chase:"of cause you are still very beautiful it's who you are a naturally beautiful woman so that can never change and you get more beautiful with each passing day"

I smile looking into his eyes

Me:"do you still love me?"

Chase:"very much, I've never stopped and I'm sorry if I made you feel unloved, Lulama, you mean the world to me"

Me:"then why are you cheating on me? Is there something am I not doing?"

Chase:"honey, if you keep saying that you going to make me angry because I am not cheating on you, but I know that I've been distant so I apologise for that, I will change my behavior"

Me:"okay then, so are you still going?"

Chase:"yes I still have work to do I cannot cancel because you think I'm cheating, you don't have to be insecure babe, no woman can ever match up to you in my heart"

Yeah but how about on your dick?

Me:"okay, I'll see you in the morning then"

He kisses my lips

Chase:"I love you"

Me:"I love you too"

I watch him as he walks out, I look at my huge belly and brush it

I get up from the bed and head to Theo's bedroom, he was fast asleep

I get in the blankets next to him, he turns to face me

Theo:"mommy?"

Me:"hey, can I sleep with you?"

Theo:"where's daddy?"

Me:"he went to work and I don't want to sleep alone"

Theo:"it's okay you can sleep with me"

He wraps his arms around my belly then kisses it before resting his face against it

Theo:"goodnight mommy"

Me:"good night sweetie"

Theo:"good night little brother"

I cuddle him as we both drift off my

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I get in the covers as I've just finished getting ready for bed

I take my phone and call my wife

"My love?"

Me:"hey babe, how's work going"

"You know night shifts are the worst, I just want to be in bed, with you"

Me:"me too, I miss you, I might be going out of the province soon for business and I hate that we haven't spent much time together"

"I hate it too"

Me:"it's December how about we go for our honeymoon for a week or two before Christmas or we can go after"

"That sounds great, we should go after Christmas, will it be out of the country?"

Me:"uhm yeah if that's what you want, we can go anywhere you want us to go"

"I always wanted to go to mauritius"

Me:"Mauritius it is then, I'll look it up and see when I can book for us"

"You are the best husband in the world"

Me(smiling):"I try..."

"Oh..babe I have to get back to work, I love you"

Me:"I love you too baby"

She hangs up and I make another phone call

Me:"Hey Aidan, sorry to call you at this time man"

"Who's this?"

Me:"it's Lowell, Lowell Nhlabathi, I got your number from your brother Clyde, I heard you are very good at technology and I need your help"

"Ohh okay, I know you,a Nhlabathi needing help from an O'Brien (chuckles) never thought I'd see the day or should I say the night"

Me:"yeah yeah whatever, are you going to help me or not"

"My skills come at a very high price"

Me:"money is not a problem"

"Good, so what do you need me to do?"

Me:"I think my wife is cheating on me, I need you to prove this to me and help me catch her red handed"

"Okay, easy, I can do that"

Me:"alright then"

"Are you sure that she's cheating though?"

Me:"positive, and the worst part she's doing this with my baby inside her and we just recently got married a few weeks ago, I think she cheated on our wedding day, whoever she's cheating on me with he's a very disrespectful mother fucker"

"That is brutal, nah don't worry I'll be on her tail"

Me:"alright sharp"

"Sho"

I hang up and sigh as I lean against the pillow and stare at the blank wall thoughtfully

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"you going into surgery tomorrow"

Rain:"I really got a heart momma?"

Me(smiling through the tears):"yes, you have a heart"

Rain(smiles weakly):"I'm so happy"

Me:"me too"

I kiss his hand as he looks at me weakly

Rain:"my heart is running out of oxygen, I'm happy I'm getting a new one"

Me:"God has finally answered our prayers, no more coming back to the hospital all the time"

Rain:"I can play any sports that I want"

Me:"yes and you can run as much as want, you won't feel anymore pains and hopefully the nightmares will also go away"

Rain(smiles with sleepy eyes):"I don't have to feel this pain anymore, and it's almost Christmas maybe Santa heard my wish and he asked God to make it come true because I've been a good boy this year, right?"

Me:"yes you have been a very good boy, a strong one too, some kids would've complained and cried all the time, but you were so strong, you always believed and had faith no matter how much pain you felt, you....

I cover my mouth suppressing my sobs

as I feel a sharp pain in my chest

Me:"you never stopped being positive, sometimes it felt like you were more my moral support than I was for you cause sometimes it was so painful to me to watch you go through this.....

I look at him and he long fell asleep

Me(crying):"and to think that it is all my fault makes me the worst mother on earth who doesn't deserve such a wonderful son like you....

"Doctor Mbokazi"

I look up at his Doctor...I'm not allowed to be his Doctor because he's my son and he uses my surname, he's family and it's against code of medical ethics to treat family but I am allowed to work closely to the primary doctor who's treating him, sometimes when I do stop his heart attacks when his doctor is not in and the hospital has let it slide since I do not treat him all the time and he's not my patient

Me:"hey Doctor....

Doctor:"his surgeon agreed to come do the surgery here, he's one of the best heart surgeons in South Africa he's in the rankings he also owns two hospitals, in which one is here in Joburg and the other in Cape town, maybe you've heard of him, Doctor Nhlabathi?"

My heartbeat increases as I try to grasp her words

Me:"pardon me?"

Doctor:"Doctor Nhlabathi, luckily he was in town and he.....

Her voice fades away as the sound of my heart gets louder clogging me

I look at Rain

.

.

.

\*\*

"If you want to keep a secret, you must also hide it from yourself" (George Orwell)

Insert 110

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

•

•

•

•

I came out of the shower wiping my dripping wet body as I make my way to the bedroom and get myself ready for work

Emma:"I can't believe you bought us here only to come work again, aren't we supposed to be on holidays?"

Me:"I have an important surgery I need to carry out, it's my brother's son so I need to do it"

Emma:"but aren't you not allowed to treat family?"

Me:"well no one knows I'm family, and rules were made to be bent"

Emma:"how did they suddenly manage to get a donor I thought you said they've been waiting for over a year now"

Me:"I had to come up with a plan, that boy is close to death...his mother won't... my brother won't be able to take that loss I can watch him go through many things but I won't let her..him go through this, he's already broken, this will finish him off, so I pulled a few strings and got a donor"

Emma:"I hope you didn't kill anyone"

Me:....

Emma:"No! Noah tell me you didn't"

Me:"don't worry about it, the only thing that matters now is that the surgery goes well"

She shakes her head

Emma:"well your brother is very lucky to have a big brother like you"

Me:....

Emma:"speaking of your brother, are we going to meet your family? The kids have been asking, we tired of this hotel"

Me:"we will, I just need to sort out a few things"

I look at my fresh scars on my wrist as I head back to the bathroom, I take a razor blade and cut myself a couple of times, I close my eyes enjoying the sting, I clean up my blood before heading back to the room and

Emma:"babe?"

Me:"yes babe"

Emma:"are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine babe why?"



Emma:"just asking"

I smile to myself

I walk up to her on the bed

Me:"don't worry about me baby, I'm good"

I kiss her lips then take her hand and kiss it, I look at the bleeding wrist

Me:"babe? What happened? Why you have these scares?"

Emma:"uhm I..."

Me(worried):"are you cutting yourself?"

Emma:"Yes (sighs) this whole thing about London getting sick has really put a strain on me and I find pleasure in cutting myself"

Me:"really?"

Emma:"yeah..."

Me:"please stop doing that one day you'll cut too deep... London, Brian Yasmeeen still need you...I still need you"

Emma:"I'll stop..."

I look at her scares which are identical to mine

Me:"you have five scars...I don't want to see any more okay?"

She nods

Emma:"yes babe"

She looks at my arm but it's covered as I've already put on my shirt

After getting myself ready I head out and drive to the hospital

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I called one of the staff that works at the hospital that Bailey works in, I know this Lady as I've once had a one time encounter with her

"I'm just saying, you just stopped talking to me after that weekend, I figured maybe you didn't enjoy my company"

Me:"I did enjoy your company sweetie, I've just been caught up with work and you know I'm now a cuffed man so those fun days are over"

"You can always take a break and eat something different...I mean how do you survive having the same meal everyday for the rest of your life?"

I smile chuckling as I hold my dick

Me:"you know I called you for a different reason right?"

"(Sighs) okay, how can I help you?"

Me:"I've been trying to get hold of Bailey, are you next to her or do you know where she is so you can let her know I'm trying to get hold of her...she was working night shift so I'm just checking on her"

"Bailey took a whole December leave, she said she was gone on honeymoon, isn't she with you?"

Me:"oh is that so?"

"Yes she finished working her day shifts last month"

Me:"oh she was working day shifts last month?"

"Yes, uhm you didn't know this?"

Me:"now I know"

"Oh well I didn't know you didn't know..."

Me(sighs):"okay, thanks for letting me know bye"

"Wait so are we...."

I hang up and throw my phone on the bed angrily

Me:"dammit Bailey!! Dammit!"

I call Aidan

"Sup"

Me:"how far are you with the tracking?"

"Hey I know I'm the Goat but I'm not God we literally just talked last night, it's early in the morning I haven't even kissed my wife and kids good morning yet..so chill"

Me:"well hurry the fuck up!"

I hang up and call Bailey

"Baby?"

I try to calm myself down by taking deep breaths

Me:"hey lovie, I've prepared breakfast for you, I took a day off so we can spend the day together"

"Oh you not going to work?"

Me:"that's what a day off means, instead of us missing each other all the time, today we'll spend the day together so we can talk and arrange our honeymoon"

"Uhm okay babe...I'll see you just now"

Me:"I'll be waiting"

.

.

.

Chase

.

.

.

Bailey:"shit shit shit!....

Me:"what is it?"

I groan as I release my cum inside her

She pushes me off as she gets up and heads to the bathroom, we were at my hotel

I get up with my dick soaking with her creams as I follow her to the bathroom

Me:"what did he say?"

I take a tissue and wipe myself

Bailey (showering):"he's taking a day off, so I have to be home right now"

Me:"but I had plans for us"

Bailey:"yeah well I'm married sooo cancel or invite your wife"

Me:"mxm"

She gets out of the shower and walks up to me

Bailey:"I'm sorry for being rude"

She kisses me

Bailey:"I wish I met you before my husband"

Me:"can't you come up with a story, I really want us to spend time together"

She kisses me and rests her forehead on mine

Bailey:"maybe I should divorce him before we get in too deep in this marriage"

Me:"you'd leave your husband for me?"

Bailey:"I mean Lowell has always cheated on me and I've always turned a blind eye because I loved him, that was before I knew that there are men better than him out there, men like you"

I swallow and a smile creeps on my face, I've got her right where I want her, to my mercy

Me:"just know when you divorce him, I'll be right here waiting for you"

Bailey:"you will also divorce your wife?"

Me:"I promise"

Bailey:"it will be complicated though I am pregnant for him"

Me:"the same way he takes care of his son Rain he can do the same for his unborn"

Bailey:"I'm scared, he's paid so much for my lobola and gave me my dream wedding, it'll be very embarrassing"

Me:"do you still love him?"

She sighs and walks out of the bathroom to get dressed in the bedroom, I put on my boxers and sit on the bed watching her, it's obvious she truly loves Lowell she's just enjoying the thrill of cheating and mistaking it for love

Me:"I asked you a question hun"

She looks at me as she fixes her work uniform

Bailey:"I loved him, but I've been putting him before me for way too long now, it's time I start putting myself first, he's broken me so many times and I've always forgiven him cause my stupid self is crazy in love with him but Lowell will never change, on our wedding day he was smelling like a woman, he had a bit of lipstick on his lips, I was so heartbroken I wanted to stop the wedding, but I couldn't bring myself to..."

Tears fall from her eyes

Bailey:"so when I noticed you being nice to me that night I decided fuck it I flirted with you back and I didn't feel guilty letting you fuck me on my wedding day... Little did I know that I'd catch feelings for you, I'm not sure about them yet but I'm willing to give us a chance, I can't take Lowell's shit anymore"

Me:"it sounds like you still love him to me, are you sure you will divorce him?"

She nods reluctantly

Bailey:"yes...I'm sure"

I walk up to her and pull her into a hug

Me:"I love you so much Bailey, I promise, I'll treat you way better, you deserve so much better than him, a man who will love you and only you..I long fell out of love with my wife, my heart is with you now"

I pull her chin up for her to look at me and we kiss

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"you didn't have to come"

Keon:"I did, this is a big deal for our boy"

Kendall:" we promised we will be here the day he gets his heart surgery when he gets a donor"

Me(smiling):"you guys are the best, thank you for sparing this day for him, he will appreciate it so much"

Keon:"we know, stop thanking us babe"

He pulls me closer into his arms

Keon:"we a family, we got your back"

I smile looking into his eyes as we share a kiss

(Clears throat)

I pull out of the kiss, I startle as I turn to meet Noah standing behind me

Noah:"sorry to disturb, but aren't you Rain's parents?"

Me(stammering):"uhm I we...."

Keon:"yes we are"

He looks at Keon with his one brow up before jotting something down on his pad

Noah(looking at me):"We about to put him to sleep so you have about ten minutes to talk to him for encouragement before we take him for surgery"

Me:"let's go babe, Kendall"

Keon:"thank you doctor"

Keon wraps his arm around my waist as I take Kendall's hand and we walk to Rain's ward leaving him behind

We get to Rain's room, he is so pale and weak, his lips are dry, I've never seen him like this before, he can't even smile, he wasn't like this when I left him

Me:"Rain?"

He looks at me with sad eyes

Me(tearful):"my baby, what happened?"

Keon:"oh my God, what's happening to him?"

I take his hands I gasp at how cold he is

Me:"my baby...you will be okay you hear me? The doctor will put a heart in you and you will be okay"

Tears escape his eyes as he looks at me

Rain:"I...I think I'm going to die momma"

I shake my head repeatedly

Me:"No..No you not going to die, don't even think about that, death is not in our vocabulary, you will live, you will breath in as much oxygen as you need until you grow up to be a very very old man, even older than Santa Clause, okay"

He smiles weakly, I wipe his tears as I try my best not to break down in front of him

Me(smiling faithfully):"I promise you, the I'll be the first person you see when you open your eyes"

Rain:"pinky promise?"

We lock pinkies

Me:"I pinky promise and cross my heart"

I kiss his forehead and peck his cheek and lips

Kendall:"and when you all better, I will let you win when we play twister again"

He smiles at her

Keon:"and we can finally go to the fair and go on any rides that you want"

His face starts lighting up

Noah:"it's time"

I squeeze his hand one more time before making our way out

"Momma"

I look back at him

Rain:"I will see you first"

Me:"I promise"

He nods

Me:"I love you to infinity and beyond"

Rain:"I love you double that"

I smile and walk out

Noah:"his body hasn't been getting enough oxygen, this surgery will be one very risky surgery, at the state he's in, at his age his body might not be able to handle the pain he's already in and the blood he will loose, there's little chance of him making it, there is a high risk of no survival 80%...

Me:"Stop! There's a 20% chance he will make it, I'll put my faith on that"

Noah:"I just prefer to be honest with my patients families, the last thing I do is give false hope, as surgeons we know how the surgery will go before we start off and the end results we usually presume are almost always correct"



Me:"he will survive that surgery, he's stronger than you think, you will do everything in your power, you better save that boy better than you have ever saved anyone in your entire career... you owe him that much"

He frowns locking eyes with me

I walk back to the waiting room and sit next to Keon, he holds me and I fail to hold it in for any longer as I break down in his arms

I get up and start praying as I pace up and down crying my heart out to God to open the gates of heaven and reign upon my child's life

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

After an hour she walks in and comes to me in the lounge

Bailey (sighs);"phew! I'm so tired"

She throws her purse and herself on the couch as she takes off her shoes

Bailey:"I hate night shifts"

Me:"you do?"

Bailey:"yeah they overwork us"

Me:"they do huh"

Bailey:" a lot"

Me:"I can imagine"

She looks at me and smiles

Bailey:"I'm happy you took a day off for me"

Me:"anything for you baby"

She comes and sits on top of me

We hug as I hold her back with a gun in my hand, I'm tempted to pull the trigger as I catch a man's scent on her clothes

Bailey:"I missed you so much"

She kisses my lips, I feel the urge to vomit as I imagine how she was sucking another dick not so long ago, I push her off, as she staggers off me and notices the gun in my hand

Bailey (eyes widened):"bbbabe? Why are you carrying a gun?"

Me:"oh you mean this?"

I point it at her

She steps back in fear

Bailey:"babe...."

Me:"I was going to say let's go shooting today at a shooting range, it'll be a fun activity, plus you need to learn how to use one for self defense, now that you're carrying our baby, you have to be extra protected, we can even buy you a gun"

Bailey(sighs in relief):"babe,.you scared me"

She sits down looking at the gun

Bailey:"did you also do this with Amahle?"

Me:"yes she has a gun as well"

She nods as her phone rings she looks at it, I play with the gun as she looks at it and back at her phone then switches it off

Me:"weren't you going to get that?"

Bailey:"No..."

My phone rings and I pick it up

Me:"hello?"

"Hey Lowell, Sorry to inform you so late but Rain got a donor last night and he's currently at surgery as we speak, I'm so scared....there's a 20% chance of him making it"

My head becomes dizzy as I try to stand up looking around for something

"Lowell? Are you there? Did you hear what I said?..."

Me(breaking voice):"I'm ...I'm on my way"

I grab my car keys

Bailey:"babe? What happened? Where you going?"

Me:"Rain..."

Bailey (panicking):"Rain? What happened? Is he okay?"

Me:"I have to rush to the hospital..."

Bailey:"I'm coming with you"

Me:"No! Stay here! I'm coming..."

Bailey:"but babe..."

Me(angrily):"I SAID STAY!...."

I head out the door

"Lowell!!!"

Me:"I said...."

She throws my shirt and pants at me as I only now realize I was naked, I dress up as I walk towards the car, I get in and speed off

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We've been waiting for hours, I was excused from work for today I couldn't stop praying the holy spirit in me was so present I saw myself standing on the clouds of heaven crying and praying for God's mercy on my child, my one and only child

While I was in this bright hopeful place near the heavens praying, darker clouds hovered above me blocking the light, they went from grey to very black, there was black clouds above me blocking the light, the hope, blocking God's promises

Me(crying):"Nooooo!! No No please, Ungangilahli baba! Do not forsake me Lord!! Please I need you!! Do not forsake me father!! I'm sorry!! Please save my son God, Baba!? Gogo!!? Ngiyanincenga, musani ukungiziba!....(heart wrenching cries)...

I hold my chest as I feel excruciating pain like I'm being cut open

Me:"ahhhhh!!!....

I drop to the floor

"Amahle!!! Doctor!! Somebody help!!...

I hear their voices becoming weak, I take my last breath as I struggle to continue and\*\*\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Death is not the greatest loss in life...the greatest loss is what dies in us while we live" (Norman Cousins)

Insert 111

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

Noah

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

In the middle of the surgery I felt a sharp pain in my chest like I have just cut myself with the scalpel I'm holding

I stop as I listen to the pain hoping it dies down

Doctor:" Doctor? Are you okay?"

Assisting nurse:"he's loosing a lot of blood....

I stand up straight again ignoring the pain as I continue

Me:" shit! His blood vessels are clogging up..no we don't need this right now....

I try to calm myself down as I stop the clogging in his viens which would prevent blood moving in and out his heart through his body

Me:"the new heart please"

They pass me the healthy heart as I place it in it's place, after proper adjustments I take the defibrillator paddles and shock the heart so it can start beating, nothing happens

Me(wiping forehead sweat):"something is wrong..."

I checked if the heart is in the right position, everything looked good

Me:"let's try that again"

I shock him again and again but nothing happens

Nurse:"Doctor the systolic pressure numbers should be between 100 and 130 they are way bellow....

I look at the machine and the numbers dropped to 40 which is very low

Me:"let's try again...

Assisting doctor:"he's gone doctor we've lost him...

Nurse:"dropping dropping very fast

Me:"No! Let's try again...he will make it the diastolic pressure is still in the right numbers and his temperature is still good there's still a chance....

I shock his exposed heart

Me:"come on my boy, you can do this work with me here, mommy is waiting for you...can I have some Dopamine please!

Assisting doctor:"doctor....

Me:"shut up will you! Increase the oxygen power!...

.

.

.

Bailey

.

.

.

I was sitting by the dinning worried about Rain if anything could happen to him it would kill Amahle she wouldn't be able to move on ever Rain is her whole life I don't even know how Lowell would take it, he's very irrational he would definitely go all psycho, I wonder if he'll love our son the way he loves Rain especially if he could find out about my affair

I take my phone and call him

It takes me straight to voicemail

Chase's call comes through

Me:"hey"

"Hey, did you get home safe?"

Me:"yeah"

"Are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine"

"Oh you don't sound fine babe, why you so cold to me, are you next to your husband?"

Me:"No, this is not the right time Chase, forget about us okay, whatever was happening between us ends now"

"I don't understand, did I do something wrong?"

Me:"my husband needs me, he needs me more than ever right now, it was fun sneaking with you but I love Lowell, I'm sorry"

"So what am I supposed to do because I've already talked to my wife about divorce, we already fighting, my home has been wrecked all because of you, you asked me to leave my wife... just to bail on me? How heartless could you be?"

Me:"I...(sighs)...we will talk okay, there's a lot going on right now, I can't think clearly, please give me some space"

"Fine, I'll give you space, but don't make me wait for too long, you don't want me fighting for you because it will cause a lot of drama and embarrassment on the both of us, and when it comes to you, I really don't care as long as I get to be with you"

Me(smiling):"I won't take long, Rain is in hospital something is wrong Lowell didn't tell me what was going on and he's not picking up my calls...I'm very worried about him a lot is going on, I just want to be here with him through this"

"Ohh I understand now, in that case, please be there for him... but don't give me a cold shoulder, don't push me away, I really care about you and it hurts me when you treat me like a mere side nigger it bruises my pride"

Me:"I'm sorry babe, it won't happen again"

"I love you Bailey"

Me:"I love you too"

He hangs up, I stare at my phone...

I take my purse and drive to the hospital

.  
. .  
. .

Keon

.  
. .  
. .

I pacing waiting for the doctors to get back to us, no one is in a good space right now, Amahle's family is all here

everyone is in their emotions anticipating on the doctors who have kept us waiting for hours now. This is not how I imagined meeting her family, I had to introduce myself as they came after Amahle fainted.

I don't understand why they taking so long with Amahle, I mean how long can it take to wake up someone who fainted unless there's more to it.

I sit back down and burry my face in my hands

"It's okay daddy, don't cry"

I look at her

Kendall:"Amahle and Rain will be okay, the doctors will make them better, remember how they also made me better when I was a baby?"



I nod

Me:"yeah you right, they will be okay, daddy is just worried they were in so much pain"

Kendall:"we just have to trust the doctors and God"

I pick her up to sit on my lap as we hold each other

"Mbokazi family....

I look up at the doctor as she looks at us

Doctor:" Doctor Mbokazi is still unconscious"

Amahle's mom:"what? How come? What's wrong with her?"

Doctor:"it seems she had a heart attack, her heartbeat is very faint almost as if it's not there"

Me:"will she be okay though?"

Doctor:"she's not responding to the medications that were supposed to wake her up we also defibrillated her but nothing, we'll just have to wait, she's in a coma"

Me:"no no she can't be, how long do you think she'll be in a coma?"

Doctor:"we don't know we'll just have to wait"

Lowell:"can we go see her?"

Doctor:"yes"

We follow her to the ward

I feel tears threaten as I see her sleeping on the bed lifeless, she looks pale with dry lips, almost exactly like how Rain was

Her mother bursts into tears as she wraps her arms around her

Amahle's mom (crying):"why God... please have mercy on my child, she's been through so much pain and suffering even when good things happen all she knows is pain, if this is to punish me for my sins, please take my life rather and show mercy to my baby please....

She breaks down crying, my heart sinks at the painful sight...

I walk closer to her and take her cold hand

Me:"come on Amahle, I know you won't break your promise to Rain, you pinky promised, you have to be the first one he sees...he needs you..we all do"

After a while the doctor asked us to leave the room

Lowell:"can I have a minute alone with her"

Doctor:"okay"

We lock eyes as I make my way out

as we head back to the waiting room

I answer my phone as it rings

Me:"mom?"

"Hey son, how are you doing?"

Me(sighs):"I'm not okay mom"

"What's da matter"

Me:"it's Amahle she's been admitted in hospital and her son is undergoing surgery everything is a mess, I'm not okay all this is just heartbreaking, she really doesn't deserve this, Amahle is a good girl mama, she's christian and has an amazing gift, she's very humble, kind and loving to everyone, I don't understand why her life is like this, I try to make her happy but our happiness is always shortlived..."

"That is a lot to deal with, I pray God heals them, just keep praying for her son, she will make it through, usually people who go through so much pain always have abundant happiness and blessings waiting for them at the end of the tunnel, all shall be well, do not give up on her, she needs all the support she can get, I know it's not easy for you men to be with a woman who has this much going on and if you were any other man you would've left the minute you found she has a sick child but you didn't instead you made her part of your family with kendall, if she is yours she will forever cherish and love you, you will be happy"

I sigh rubbing my eyes

Me:"I wanted to bring her to Ghana so you can meet her and also show her around the beautiful places in our country just to forget all the stress and pain for a little bit"

"Hopefully God will give y'all another chance"

Me:"yeah hopefully..."

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"it's back, it's working, we did it!"

Assisting doctor:"no doc, you did it, I honestly thought we lost him"

Me:"you do not give up on any patient until you sure you have tried everything you can, even prayer of it needs be"

Nurse:"I guess that's why you the best"

Me:"let's close him up quickly"

We stitch him back together

After about an hour we were done and he was sent to ICU for further treatment and rest

His doctor came into the room right after I just finished changing from my bloody scrubs into new clean ones

Doctor:"I knew we could count on you Doctor, the boy has been struggling for so long and he needed a successful surgery"

Me:"it was an honor, I'll go inform his family, I'm sure they will be thrilled to hear that everything went well"

Doctor (sighs): "yeah, except there's just one problem..."

Me (frowns); "what is it?"

Doctor: "the boy's mother had a heart attack and went into a coma"

Me: "what!?"

Doctor: "I'm sure the pain of her heart caused a lot of pressure and stress on the body resulting to a heart attack, she's breathing through machines because her heartbeat is very faint "

Me: "No, that can't be true, where is she? She has to wake up she can't go on a coma, not now, not ever, let me go check on her"

Doctor: "but aren't you first going to talk to her family about Rain..."

Me: "there's no time for that, Rain will wake up he'll want his mother, where is she? Lead the way"

She leads the way out to the ward where Amahle was in, she was also in ICU but in a different room from Rain

I look at her

Doctor: "it looks as though her body is receiving enough blood now, she was very pale"

Me: "try giving her metoprolol or Toprol XL drugs to decrease the heart's workload and heart rate "

Doctor: "we have already tried that"

I look at her

Me: "can you give me a bit of time alone with her"

Doctor: "of cause"

She turns and walks away, I walk around the bed looking at her, I feel her feet and move my finger up and down the bottom of her foot but there was no reaction

I pull a chair closer and sit beside her

Me: "Amahle?"

I take her hand

Me:"Rain's surgery was successful...

I stare at her hoping for response even if it was a little smile

Me:"I must applaud the boy, he is very strong, it was a very complicated surgery, for his age he really pulled through..(chuckles) he really is his mother's son I mean I thought you were the strongest person I know, but after meeting Rain, I must say you better pull up your socks you getting beaten by a kid I mean if he survived that surely you can wake up from a mere coma...

I chuckle a bit before swallowing the lump on my throat

Me:"I understand that you hate me I hate myself too and if I were you I'd still hate me, I'm not expecting you to forgive me or love me or even like me, but I wish you could see how ashamed and sorry I am for what I did to you, you deserve an explanation and I'm willing to tell you everything, all the wheres whats and whys you have for me, just please wake up, I've lost you once too many I can't lose you again, even if I know we might never be together again but your death is something I wouldn't be able to handle, I don't even want to imagine how Rain would survive, your family, so many people here love you and are not ready to lose you just yet...so please fight, fighting is what you've done best so I'm confident that you will also conquer this fight as well, your life is not only yours anymore but your son's as well....

I look at the machines and the numbers changing going close to what a normal alive person should be like

Me:" you know Rain reminds me a lot of myself, I don't know why because Lowell doesn't look that much like me...maybe he took a lot from his grandma cause I look more like mom so that would explain why he looks like me, Lowell took more of dad's looks (sighs) I still can't believe you were able to conceive, I mean we had accepted that we'd never have our own kids we even blocked out the possibilities of a miracle, the only thing I was excited about was having you as my wife and the love of my life...I guess we were wrong..I'm happy for you, that you were healed and managed to have your own child, even if it was not with me...

I feel her hand moving and holding me back

I look into her eyes as she blinks

Me:"Indy? Oh my God you awake..."

Her eyes wonder around before landing on me, she looks at me for a while before she frowns and let's go of my hand

Amahle (hoarse voice):" Rain?...."

Me:"he's still sleeping, the surgery was successful"

She looks at me, the hate in her eyes is still very visible, she is just tolerating me, if it were up to her I'm sure she'd ask me to leave the hospital and get out of her sight

Amahle:"can I see him?"

Me:"uhm you will see him but aren't you feeling any pains? Maybe you should..."

Amahle:"I'm fine, can I see him now please, he needs to see me as soon as he wakes up, I promised him, please take me to him"

Me:"okay I'll take you to him"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I was put in a wheelchair before heading to Rain's bed, Noah was being dramatic, I can walk for myself and I'm not feeling any pains but because it was a doctor's orders I had to obey, I didn't have the strength to argue with him I just wanted to see my baby.

Noah:"there he is"

Me:"he looks so much better"

Noah:"he is much better"

Me:"were there any complications?"

Noah:"No, everything went smoothly, he's a very strong boy"

Me:"Noah"

Noah:"Amahle?"

Me:"don't lie to me, if everything went smoothly I wouldn't have had a heart attack"

Noah:"okay, we almost lost him, I tried everything but his heart was not budging, my team gave up and told me he was gone and there was nothing left to do, but I couldn't bring myself to stop trying, just when I was about to give up on him his heartbeat came back, it was one of the scariest surgery I've ever done"

Me:"yeah well it was your job to bring him back after all"

Noah:"yeah,you right, it was my job"

I look at Rain

Me:"hey sweetheart, wake up already"

I brush his arm

Me:"come on baby wake up"

Noah:"he might take some time because...."

Rain:"momma?..."

I turn his face to face me as he opens his eyes to be met by mine

Me(smiling):"heey"

He smiles

Rain:"you kept your promise"

Me:"I could never break a pinky promise"

He breaths out a silent chuckle

Rain:"I have a new heart now momma?"

Me:"yes, you have a new heart"

Rain:"can it still love everyone I loved?"

Me:"it sure can"

Rain:"will I still act like me or like someone else?"

Noah chuckles

Me:"you will still act like yourself baby, you are still you, your brain controls everything even your heart so you can teach your heart of who you are and it will work with you"

Rain:"ohhh okay..."

He turns his head and looks at Noah

Rain:"did you put the heart inside of me?"

He nods

Noah:"yes I did"

Rain:"you saved me for the second time now"

Noah:"my lucky stars must be working"

Rain:"are you a heart doctor like my mommy?"

Noah:"yes, yes I am"

Rain:"that is so cool, I also want to be a heart doctor when I grow up"

Noah:"and I'm sure you will be a very good doctor, the best doctor in the world"

Rain:"momma always says that too, she says I'm smart"

Noah:"and she is right to say that"

Rain:"is my heart donor dead?"

(Silence)



I look at Noah as he looks back at me then at Rain

Noah:"yes, unfortunately...donors are people who were going to die but instead of being buried with their organs they decided to help people who still have a chance at life by donating their organs once they die"

Rain:"was my donor a girl or boy?"

Noah:"a boy"

Rain:"I wish I could've met him so I can thank him"

Noah:"maybe some day buddy"

He holds his chest as his smile turns into a frown and looks at me

Rain:"it's painful momma"

Me:"that's because your stitches are still fresh, I'm sorry baby the pain will get better"

Noah:"it will take about six weeks until you can be fully recovered if you follow the rules for your recovery"

Rain:"I will, thank you for helping me doctor....??

Noah:"doctor Nhlabathi"

Rain (gasps):"you have the same surname as my daddy"

Noah:"he is my brother"

I frown looking at him, I can't believe he just blurted that out right now, the last thing Rain needs is confusion, he needs to focus on healing

Rain:"daddy has a brother?"

Me:"uhm yes, speaking of your daddy, can you please call the rest of the family in now?"

Noah:"of cause...uhm Amahle, I'm sorry I didn't mean to..."

Me:"now please...."

Noah:"okay...."

He walks out

Rain:"how come you didn't tell me daddy had a brother?"

Me:"uhm....

"Hey buddy...

Lowell walks in and they hug as the rest of the family walks in as well, we share hugs as mom is very emotional to see me awake

Kendall:"Rain!"

Rain:"Kendall!"

Kendall:"I knew you'd make it, you see daddy, I told you!"

Keon:"yes you did"

He comes towards me and we share a hug

Keon:"you scared us"

Me:"I'm sorry I didn't mean to"

Mom:"you two, you are spending a month with me, how could y'all scare us like that!"

Rain:"sorry gogo"

Me:"sorry mom"

Rain:"but I got a new heart now"

She hugs Rain giving him kisses all over

Lowell comes over to me

Lowell:"you okay?"

Me:"I'm okay"

We share a hug, I quickly let go of him as I could see that Keon was uncomfortable, I hold Rain's hand as I watch him telling everyone about his new heart and showing them his scar on his chest

My eyes wonder around for Noah but he was not in the room anymore

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"After I die if I am buried I will rot. If I am burnt I will become ash but if my body is donated I will live to give life and happiness to many" (heart donor)

Insert 112

•

•

•

•

•

[A FEW DAYS LATER]

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Rain was discharged yesterday, I was excited and so was he, even though he will still be in bed most of the time until he fully recovers...this has been one long painful journey and finally God came through for us, the ancestors kept their promise that once Rain gets a donor all will be well he can now have a normal life like other kids after he heals of cause. The only thing that bothers me now is Noah, him being back in Joburg will only come with drama, he is carrying a lot of burden with him, he has this dark aura that follows him and it's very hard for me to ignore and it seems like it's not only Vanessa's spirit but it also involves very sinister dark witchcraft. I just hope he stays away from us like he's been for the past years, we don't need him anymore, nothing good ever

comes from Noah being close to me, except him saving Rain, bad things always happen.

I thought I had forgiven and forgotten, but the moment I saw him all the memories came crushing back all at once which started the pain, the hate and the anger all over again, everytime I see him the same scene replays in my mind

\*\*\*

Noah:"I love you Indy, but I don't want to hurt you"

Me:"I I don't care who gets hurt, please, don't be afraid of loving me"

He pulls me to stand on my feet

Noah:"You deserve so much better than me, I'm not the person you think I am"

Me:"No, I deserve you"

Noah"I'm leaving, you'll never see me again"

He walks away

I grab his arm before he could past me

Me:"don't go"

Noah:"I'm sorry, but this is it for us"

He gives me one last long passionate kiss before he disappears out the door

I search for my clothes but my tears are blurring my eyes to see where they are

I run after him half naked

"Noah!!! Wait!!!"

I shout for him as I get to the main door, he locked it, I bang it as I hear the engine of his car starting

This can't be happening, I won't allow that dream to come true, it just can't

"Noah!! Don't leave me!! Please!!!"

I wipe my eyes quickly while sniffing looking for the keys, I find the on the floor, he locked me in and threw them back inside, I grab them with my shakey

hands and unlock the door, I run after his car as he speeds off deeper into the woods

"Nooaah!!!"

I trip and fall, I hold on to my chest trying to calm my cries and the pain inside my chest, I look at the direction his car disappeared to, I can still hear it driving away

Me(whispers):"don't leave me...."

\*\*\*

My heart sinks painfully

\*\*

[TWO MONTHS LATER AFTER NOAH LEFT]

Me:"please Derek take me to him, I need to see him, there's something important I have to tell him, I promise I won't ask him to take me back"

Derek:"Noah does not want to see you and it's time you get that through your thick skull, he was never in your life because he loved you, it was always about revenge"

Me:"No! That's not true, at first yes, but we fell in love, the second time it was real, he knows it, he's just being a coward, tell him if he doesn't get back to me soon, he will lose more than just me, forever"

Derek:"okay I'll make sure I tell him"

(Sarcasms)

Me:"you won't tell him will you?"

Derek:"he doesn't want to hear from you, what part of stay away don't you understand? Stop acting like a desperate bitch, Mr Nhlabathi is a lady's man, he's already moved on as we speak, I think you should also move on"

My heart breaks into a million pieces as I look at my tummy, I get up and walk away

\*\*\*\*

I look at Rain who is peacefully sleeping, I take his hand

Me:"we are better off without him, he never wanted us, he rejected us, why should we accept him? I don't want him to hurt you too"

\*\*

[A FEW WEEKS LATER]

I was going to start showing anytime soon I had to let Noah know, he has to come back for his baby, I know deep down somewhere in that cold heart there is still love for me, once he knows I'm pregnant he'll definitely come back.

The fact that he's blocked me everywhere is not helping, I tried using a different number but it seemed as though he also changed numbers as his number didn't exist anymore

I walk in the club and head to Derek's office, he lets me in

He sighs rolling his eyes as he notices me

Derek:"I'm really starting to get annoyed by your presence, you are a beautiful woman Amahle, any man would be happy to have you, come on, you are now embarrassing yourself..."

Me:"you don't understand (sighs)..."

I take out the letter from my purse

Me:"please, give him this letter, it is very important, his life depends on it, please make sure he reads this..."

He sighs and takes it

Derek:"I'll give it to him"

Me:"promise?"

Derek(chuckles):"what are you five? Yeah whatever, I promise"

I look at him and his smirk makes me lose all hope

\*\*\*\*

Me:"I tried everything, I really did....

\*\*

Me:"I've booked my flight I'm leaving for Cape town in a few hours"

Presh:"are you sure about this?"

Me:"yes I am sure, once he finds that I'm carrying his child he will come back, I will help him get rid of Vanessa, he will be so happy to know that I can actually fall pregnant, even though he never wanted to admit it but I know a child of his own is something he always wanted"

Presh:"I would never go through so much trouble for someone who treated me like shit after the way he left you"

Me:"you wouldn't understand, it's not Noah doing this, it's Vanessa"

Presh:"Vanessa or not, he knows he is haunted he knows he needs help and you can help him...Noah is just a coward and he's the one pushing you away, of he can run a hospital he can definitely control his own mind"

Me:"if he still rejects me after this then I will give up, let me get going, my Uber is here"

I bid her goodbye before getting in the Uber and driving off.

Me:"uhm I think you took the wrong route?"

He was driving me in a shady quiet neighborhood, my heart starts pounding

Me:"excuse me, please drop me off, I want to get out"

I try to open the doors but they were locked, my blood rushed as I felt myself getting weak from fear, he stopped at the bushes where Derek opened the door

Me:"Derek! Thank God, please help me, I need to get to the airport"

Derek(sighs):"you just don't listen do you? Do you have to feel physical pain for you to get the message and stay away from uNhlabathi?"

I drag me out of the car with other scary looking men

Me(fearfully):"no please don't hurt me, I'll stay away, I promise.....

They push me to the floor as he takes a sjambok

Me:"please Derek I'll stop I get the message Noah hates me, he doesn't want to see me, I'll stay away please don't hurt me!!...

They point guns and me as I feel a stinging pain of two stokes on my back with the sjambok, I scream in agony

Me(crying):"I'm sorry please!!...

Derek:"you want Dick so bad we'll give you dick! Is that what you want? A dick?"

I shake my head repeatedly

Me:"No no no I don't want a dick or dicks please I'll never try contacting Noah, I'll never talk to him, I'll never try look for him... please spare my life!....

One of the men know kick my tummy multiple times as I scream shouting for help

Me(crying):"please stooopp you going to kill my baby!!...

My pleadings fell into deaf ears

One of the men looked over me as I struggled to breath

"Should we hear you looking or even talking about Noah, next time we won't be so kind"

They sped off with their cars leaving dust as I broke down stranded in a place I didn't know crying to God to save my baby's life, I held my paining tummy crying

Me(crying):"please hang in there for momma I promise I'll make a plan, don't leave me too, please be strong for me, I really need you, please.....

I look around trying to figure out how am I going to get back home

\*\*\*

I felt strong arms holding me

"Its okay"

I can't help but break down into his arms



Keon:"everything is going to be okay"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I park outside the house, I get out the car closing the door as I walk towards the door, I put in the code but it's not the same code anymore so I ring the bell

After a few minutes mom opens the door

Me:"hey"

She doesn't look surprised or happy to see me, she looks more disappointed

Me:"I... I was in the neighborhood, I thought I'd pop by..."

Unexpectedly she welcomes me into her arms and we share a long warm hug, I close my eyes enjoying her embrace, I've missed her so much, I've never been away from her for this long and I felt really bad for putting her through that

Me:"I'm so sorry momma"

Mom:"all that matters is that you here now"

Me:"I missed you"

Mom:"I missed you more"

After a while and a few shed tears she let me inside

"Honey who's by the door!?"

Mom:"it's Noah!"

It goes quiet as she looks at me

Me:"so you and dad....?"

Mom:"yeah we worked things out"

Me:"he hasn't hurt you?"

Mom:"not a single finger, he's not the violet angry man anymore, he's the sweet yet authoritative gentleman I fell in love with in the beginning, he does get angry we do fight but we solve things differently now"

Me:"oh I see....

He comes towards us by the lounge

Dad:"awu ngiboniswani kodwa, ndodana? Nguwe lo?"

(Am I seeing things? Son? Is that you?)

Me:"awuboniswa yimi...

(You not seeing things, it's me)

We share a brief but felt hug

Dad:"ucashephi sonke leskhathi esingaka?"

(Where were you hiding all this time)

Me:"I wasn't hiding, I was in Cape town, I have a hospital there"

Mom:"we heard...

Dad:"yeah we saw on the news...

Me:"I'm sorry you had to find out that way"

Mom:"I just hope you will stay away from people who make you feel the need to run away from home this time, you can't keep disappearing on us all the time because of that one person, we do not all deserve this kind of punishment, you are my son and years without you were hell, my heart broke everytime I thought about you I thought you hated us as well...why did you cut us off?"

Me:"I..I was...I just had a lot going on, I'm sorry"

Dad:"you will explain to us properly when you ready, for now can we all just enjoy the festive season and focus on having a family fun filled Christmas, everyone is here and we can all get to catch up"

Me:"speaking of catching up, there's people I'd like to introduce..

Mom:"who?"

Me:"my family..."

Mom&dad:"family?"

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I was sitting in the lounge waiting for her to get home, I was in my fifth glass of whiskey and it's not even noon yet.

I hear the door opening and her heels clicking their way closer

"Babe?"

Me:"this side my love"

She gets to the lounge and sits opposite me

Me:"good morning my wife"

Bailey:"good morning baby"

Me:"where are you coming from?"

Bailey:"from work"

Me:"I've played a fool for too long now, tell me the truth love before I lose my mind"

Bailey:"err....

Me:"err what? Talk my love I don't have all day, I need to get to work"

She sighs

Bailey:"I didn't want to have to do this now because of everything that's just happened with Rain and all...

Me:"get to the point"

Bailey:"I want a divorce"

I close my eyes and open them again looking at her

Me:"Chase must be dickmatizing you good huh? For you to want to divorce me, just like that, like you didn't just say the sweetest vows a few weeks ago...I don't get it...

Bailey:"I've put up with your bullshit for far too long, you are nothing but a lying, cheating, womanizing manwhore who will never ever change no matter how many chances I give you, you'll never appreciate me no matter what I do for you, I thought since I got pregnant you'd change but you didn't...

Me:"I never cheated on you Bailey I promise, after you got pregnant I told you I'd change and I did I never fucked around I was faithful...

Bailey:"faithful? Can you even spell that word?..

Me:"f a i...

Bailey:"shut up! You don't know the meaning of faithful...

Me:"Says the woman who got fucked on our wedding day, of all days you chose to sleep around on our special day, you let another man in before me, do you know how disgusting that sex was? You are a disgrace Bailey!!..

She stands up furious

Bailey:"disgrace? I'm the disgrace!?! That was my very first time cheating on you, and I don't regret..had you not cheated on me on our wedding day before coming to say our I dos I would have never got the guts to do what I did! You think you the only one who can fuck..well news flash I can also use my pussy it doesn't only function on you, in fact it functions even better on bigger dicks!....

I angrily throw the glass on the floor missing her just by an inch

Me:"I never cheated on our wedding day!! Why would I do something so heartless!?!....

Bailey:"you take me for a fool way too much! I had to kiss the red lipstick on your mouth, I had to smell the woman's cologne on your neck, do you have any idea how that broke me!?! You are a bitch Lowell, even dogs don't whore as much as you do...(spits) you are a disgusting excuse of a man! Sies!....

She turns her heels and walks away to the bedroom I follow her, I watch her as she takes all her clothes from the closet to the bed

Me:"Bailey....

Bailey:"just leave me alone!"

Me:"I'm sorry Bailey, please don't leave me...

I stumble towards her and wrap my arms around her, she roughly Yanks her body off me

Bailey(angrily):"leave me the fuck alone!! You a fucking Jerk! I hate you!"

She packs her clothes in two suitcases

Bailey:"I'll come fetch the rest later, or you can burn them whatever!...

She walks past me bumping my shoulder, I almost fall but balance on the wall, I grab my whiskey bottle and follow her out

Me:"what about my baby! Our baby! You the one that cheated here!! I'm the one who caught you!! Why are you turning this all around!?! Come back here!!

I run after her car as she drives off

Me(screaming angrily):"Fuck You Bailey!! Fuck You!! Don't even come back here you...you husbandnizing bitch!...

I gulp down a bit of the whiskey before I throw it at the gate as it breaks crashing on the closing gate

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were eating ice cream and watching a movie, I was now calm as he kept telling me funny stories the movie was now watching us as we were laughing and making out here and there

Me:"you are crazy you know that?"

Keon:"I get that a lot"

I look at him for a while

Me(sighs):"thank you"

Keon:"what for..?"

Me:"for being by my side..."

Keon:"who's side would I be on if not yours"

Me:"I just...I didn't think we'd last this long, I'm sorry, but I keep waiting for you to show me a different side of you, I keep thinking you going to wake up and say you can't take this anymore that my life is too difficult for you, even when you get angry you handle yourself so well...I just..."

Keon:"you waiting for me to switch?"

Me:"...."

Keon:"it's okay if you don't trust me just as yet, but I promise you, I have no hidden agendas, I am not displaying a fake version of me, I find pretending very hard ask kendall she'll tell you how I suck at it, what you see is what you get but I understand your concern and please take your time, just know that if anyone is going to walk away from this beautiful thing we've got going on here, it definitely will not be me"

I smile as my heart melts

Me:"I'm happy to hear that cause I'm not planning on walking away either"

We share a deep kiss

I pull out as I was running out of breath and starting to feel too heated

He stares at me in the eyes

Me(smiles):"what?"

Keon:"I can't get over how beautiful you are"

I blush looking down, he pulls my chin up

Keon:"I hope the you that you've introduced Kendall and I to the real you, I want us to have an open relationship in terms of communication and honesty, I value that a lot, I hate secrets, if it's not our secrets that we keep from the world but share with each other then there should be no secrets at all, if we keep things from each other those things will have a way of coming out some how and it will hurt the both of us a great deal...I hope we started of on a honest truthful relationship, if not I'll be happy if you used this moment right here to tell me whatever you feel i should know even if it will hurt me or you feel it will change my perspective about you, just let me decide how I feel about it, don't decide that for me because that's why you'll keep secrets in the first place of you decide on how I'll feel about it.... from me, I can assure you that I've told you everything there is to know about myself, there are no skeletons that I know of so far"

I sigh looking at him

I put my ice cream tub down

Me:"Keon..."

I look back at him as he sits up curiously

Me:"I haven't been completely honest with you...."

Keon:"okay... about what?"

Me:"about... about Rain's father and my relationship with him, what I told you the other day about how we broke up...I made it up"

Keon:"I knew it, I knew there was more to it...."

Me:"I hope this won't change how you feel about me"

Keon:"I cannot promise you anything, just be honest with me, and whatever happens happens, usually things of the past I don't let them interfere with my present and future... but this will depend on your truth...

Me:"you know Lowell...

Keon:"yeah...

Me:"he's not Rain's father, his brother is, the one who performed the surgery on him....

Keon:"what?...

.

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"The truth is like a surgery, it hurts but cures. Lie is like a pain killer, it gives instant relief but has side effects forever" (unknown)

Insert 113

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•



- 
- 

Me:"it's the truth..."

Keon:"how, how come?"

Me:"His name is Noah, I was dating him, well before I dated him I dated Lowell first a lot happened, Noah led me on using his charms on me I tried to resist him but he tried even harder to tempt me, offered me a bursary I couldn't refuse that came with a secured job after varsity and during varsity in his hospital, he painted himself to be everything I admired, he treated me like I was the only girl in the world and on the other hand Lowell was cheating on me and going on countless business trips distancing himself from me while he was busy giving all the attention, I'm not justifying my reasons but I had an affair with him, I did feel bad most especially because I caught feelings, only to find out that he was using me, getting me to fall in love with him and sleeping with me behind his brother's back was all for some stupid revenge and I fell deep right into his trap...when I found out this I had already broken up with Lowell because he was physically abusing me..."

Keon(concerned):"abusing you ?..."

Me:"yeah when I made a decision to leave him because there was no chemistry or sparks between us, no love, he didn't take it too well, he locked me up like a dog, controlled my life and made me drop out from school, while he was beating me senselessly, I had a womb problem as well and was told I'd never conceive and he'd kick my tummy saying that it was useless anyway....(sighs tearfully)..."

Me:"after a few weeks I think Noah came to my rescue and took me in to his hide out place, he took care of me and from the months we spent together in that hide out, we bonded and our love for each other grew fast like a burning fire, despite of everything he did to me, he was sincerely sorry and he showed me love, so much love, the kind I thought only existed in movies, I was naive and stupidly blindly in love with him and I was so sure he loved me the same way...to cut the long story short, we knew our love was forbidden and would acquire a few obstacles, I was even afraid to tell his parents about us because I was ashamed of jumping from one brother to the next it felt wrong... things didn't turn out so well, we broke up somewhere in between that but forgave and

got back together again, but when we got back together it was only for a few minutes or hours, since our break up was my fault I was the one begging for the love back, but he had a change of heart by then it was a little too late for me and my stupid heart couldn't accept rejection I just couldn't, I took deep measures to make him change his mind, I even sacrificed giving him the cookie while I was supposed to be respecting my gift as I was still new to it and wait for him to get cleansed before I could sleep with him but that didn't matter to me at that moment, only him giving us another chance was all that mattered...so we had sex, it was the most horrible sex I've ever experienced my whole life, he left me bleeding, but I understood why because somehow I knew him more than he knows himself and my gift showed me the problem...he was fighting demons, after that sex he uped and left me there no matter how much I pleaded and begged for him to stay, he was and still is a coward who couldn't face his battles he chose to run away... even after the painful way he left me I tried reaching out for him to let him know he left a seed in me while still hoping he'd take me back, desperate I know but that's how stupid in love I was, he made sure I never found him or communicated with him anyhow to a point of threatening my life...so I made a decision and gave up on him, hatred and anger grew and replaced the love I had for him till this day, my focus and new love was now my Rain, since I'm a spiritual person Rain had to be introduced and welcomed by his father's ancestors, I couldn't get hold of Noah and he hated me so much that he sent people to harm me and my baby...sooo I did what I had to... Lowell was my only choice, I went back to him...

Keon(shocked):"whoa...that is a lot

I wipe my tears

Me:"I understand if you don't want to be with me anymore... but Lowell was my only choice for things to be done...

He sits back and there is silence for a while

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Mom:"if you not married or panning to marry her why do you want to introduce her to us, we don't want another girlfriend scandal...

Me:"I wanted to marry her but I don't anymore, there's just too much that's being revealed to me about her and she's not the woman I thought, we long planned this trip when I asked her marry me but what I found out about her later on didn't sit well with me so I don't want to marry her anymore"

Dad:"then why are we meeting her again?"

Me:"I have a child with, a baby girl, her name is London..."

Mom jumps up for joy

Mom:"ohhh finally, I thought I'd never live to see this day, I'm so happy for you son"

I smile

Dad:"we could've just met London without bringing her along"

Me:"the thing is her kids are also here and I promised them they'd meet my family, I just need time to get my shit together before I can break up with them without making it seem like it was me who left their mother, those kids have become like my very own and it wasn't easy building a relationship with them and now we are so tight, they've already accepted me as their father, you know I could never bring myself to break children's hearts like that..."

Mom:"you've always been so fond of kids...."

Dad:"how old is this woman anyway she already had kids of her own? How old are her kids? "

Me:"she's two years older than me she's 33, she has a fifteen year old boy and a ten year old boy"

Dad:"mhm ai mina angaz umdala mawumgaka do what you see is best thina nje sicela ukubona umzukulu wethu"

(You are old enough now.....we just want to meet our grandchild)

Mom:" she's older than you, a matured woman, sounds stable to me, maybe she will stick to one of my sons, I'm sure whatever you found out about her, you guys can work it through for the sake of your child, children since you basically adopted the boys"

Me:"I don't think we can work it out, I just want a peaceful break up for the sake of the kids"

Dad:"well then, when are we meeting your complicated family?"

Me:"today, we checking out of the hotel"

Mom:"today?"

.

.

.

Bailey

.

.

.

I relaxed on the hotel bed as I just ordered room service and I was enjoying my white sparkling champaign and snacks while staring out at the beautiful view as the curtains were open and you can see the view from the bed

I did expect it to hurt leaving Lowell but not this much, I am trying to be strong and convincing myself that it's his loss not mine but God knows how much I loved that man but he has never loved me the way I love him, I'm always the one trying harder to keep us together and honestly it was getting draining, he will never change.

I looked at my phone and he hasn't even tried calling or texting me.

I texted Chase

Me:"babe, it's done I left him, now all that's left is to serve him the divorce papers ☐"

He blue ticked me immediately but took a while to reply, I saved him as a girl's name since I never wanted to get caught

(Lorain):" that's good news babe"

Me:"I'm at the hotel, I need you by my side, I hope you broke it down to your wife about the divorce"

(Lorain):"I did, she is not taking it so well, she is willing to fight but not to worry I will put her in her place, I will see you a bit later babe"

I sigh, at least he asked her to divorce, a part of me didn't believe he would do it, men don't easily leave their wives unlike fed up women like me

Me:"okay happy to hear that, she will survive, don't take too long"

(Lorain):"I will try not to, wear something sexy for me, tonight we celebrating our love"

Me(smiling):"okay☐☐☐ I can't wait, I love you"

He takes a while to respond

(Lorain):"I love you more my love ❤️☐"

I get off the bed and put on some music and unpack my bags looking for something sexy

My phone beeps as a message comes through and R3000 was payed into my bank account, a WhatsApp message comes through

(Lorain):"for something sexy☐☐"

.  
. .  
. .

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"please, say something"

He sighs and brushes his face

Keon:"I don't know what to say"

Me:"I understand....for what it's worth I really really liked you, you reminded me of how it felt to be loved but you gave me a love I have never experienced before, an effortless, stress less, peaceful and accepting kind of love, something I've always yearned for from the wrong people, something I gave up on searching, you have sparked up my heart again and showed it genuine kind love, you loved my child as your own and you were very patient with him, you took your time to understand him and I and I think that's why he accepted you so quickly, you and kendall brought some light and happiness into our world, we will never forget you guys, thank you Keon"

He looks at me with a frown

Keon:"are you breaking up with me?"

I look at him with a confused frown

Me:"No.. I..I thought you were going to break up with me, I mean after everything I've just told you I thought..."

Keon:"that is your problem, you always making conclusions for me, that's what you did when you told me about Rain, you concluded I wouldn't want to be with you cause you have a child, and now you doing the same thing..."

Me:"I'm sorry, it's just I know that this is a lot to take in, I mean I...."

Keon:"shut up Amahle"

I shut my mouth before continuing

Keon:"you have a painful past and you were played by love, you made some sacrifices for the sake of your child and that is absolutely okay, it's okay that you have a past I'm not saying what you went through was okay but it is part of"

your journey in life...your story is more painful but a bit similar to mine, we were both hurt by people who we would've taken bullets for, it's fine, I'm not going to judge your mistakes or the choices you made, that was you and it was what was best for you...I'm just glad you told me"

I look at him in disbelief

Me:"aren't you going to need some space? Or time to think things through..."

Keon:"No, you were honest with me and opened up old wounds by talking about you past honestly with me, a truthful past that you haven't even shared with your own son just as yet..."

Me:"not even my family, they all know Rain as Lowell's son"

Keon:"your secret is safe with me, until you ready"

Me(tearfully):"thank you so much Keon"

Keon:"I just need you to assure me with one thing"

Me:"what?"

Keon:"do you still love Noah?"

I shake my head continuously

Me:"No, no I don't love him anymore, I stopped as soon as I gave birth to my son, all the love I had for him went all to my son and his place was replaced by other emotions, resentment, I've done well not dwelling in those emotions for the sake of my gift, but when I saw him again in Lowell's wedding, all the anger and the hateful emotions came back, I do not love Noah and I assure you I will never ever love Noah"

He looks at me nodding

Keon:"I'm kind of glad to hear that even though that is not healthy for you, you need to tell him about his son and Rain about his father, as much as he hurt you, that was a fight between you and him, Rain deserves to know the truth and have his own emotions towards him not yours, he doesn't deserve Rain but it's the right thing to do it's his seed"

Me:"I don't know Keon this will just break me all over again, I'm not ready for the fights, his family, my family, him and my son who will be disappointed in me...

I feel my heart aching

Me:"I don't know if I'll survive it, Rain is my world, what if he takes him? Or his family, they are evil people they can turn my son against me and he'll grow to hate me, they'll use the lies against me to punish me for deceiving their ancestors...I can't lose Rain, I can lose it all but not my blessing...he is a big part of me, if they take him away I'll lose a part of me I won't function, I can't, I'll die...

I break down into tears, crying my heart out, he pulls me into his arms

Keon:"sshhh you not going to lose Rain...

.

.

.

Chase

.

.

.

Me:"it's okay baby, I'm not leaving"

Lulama:"I think the baby will come anytime soon, you can't go to work and leave me by myself"

Chase:"I'll cancel my meeting, I'll be right

here next to you, it wasn't that important anyway"

I rub her big belly and she closes her eyes trying to calm her pain down

Me:"I think we should drive to the hospital now before it gets worse"

Lulama:"no don't worry, it's nothing, just a little cramp, I think he's turning over"



Me:"come let's go get something to eat then, you can't cook for us while you like this love....(shouting) Theo!!!

"Dad!!"

Me:"get ready we going to get something to eat"

"Can we get pizza!!"

Me:"yeah whatever we can get pizza, dress up"

I look at my wife who has her eyes closed with a frown enduring pain

Me:"will you be able to come? We could just bring the food here"

Lulama:"No, I'll come, I think walking will help"

I help her stand up and the spot she was sitting on is wet

Me(frowns):"babe? Did you pee yourself?"

She looks at the spot

Lulama:"no, oh shit I think my water broke!"

Me:"Shit! Theo get the baby bag we are having a baby!!..."

He comes in running

Theo(excitedly):"my brother is coming!?"

Me:"yes get the bags"

Theo:"on it!!"

He runs off as I grab my car keys and pick her up, she is very heavy but I managed, she screamed even louder

Lulama (screaming in pain):"aahhh okay, he's definitely coming!"

Theo got in the car and we sped off

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"You can close your eyes from things you don't want to see, but you can't close your heart from things you don't want to feel" (Jonny deep)

Insert 114

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Lulama

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I was in the worst most uncomfortable pain I've ever felt, it felt like this was my first time going through this, it seems as though it only gets even more painful on the next child, Theo gave me pain but I'm sure it was not this much, this was unbearable, I needed to push as soon as possible, we finally got to the hospital and was immediately attended too and rushed to the maternity ward.

Me(sweating):"please call my family!"

Chase:"I'm on it"

Doctor:"sir will you stay in the room or wait outside?"

Chase:"I'll st....."

Me:"wait outside! Theo can't be in here and I don't want him sitting alone there"

Chase:"Okay I'll wait outside"

They walk out as Theodore runs up to me

Theo:"good luck mommy, I love you"

Me(emotional):"thank you baby, I love you more"

He walks out the room as I scream in agony involuntarily pushing as the doctors opened my legs wide motivating me to push. I swear to God I'm never doing this shit again, they should close my ovaries after this, No more!!

Me(screaming):"aahhhhh fuuuuuck!!! Please get it out of meeee!!!

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Yasmeen:"we going now!?"

Me:"yes pack up quickly"

They excitedly run to their rooms leaving Emma and I with London as she packs our clothes, she is awfully quiet and distant as she packs our clothes while London is sleeping on the bed

I watch her pack as I relax on the bed taking a good look at her, Emma is a beautiful woman no lie, you would never even think of accusing her of witchcraft

She looks very innocent, how I crave to poke little needles all over her body just to hear her wrenching screams of pain

and pull out every single bit of her hair using my hands, chop out her nails watch her cry blood while she dies a

very slow very painful death

She looks up at me

Emma(smiles):"what?"

Me:"nothing"

Emma:"why you staring at me?"

Me:"am I not allowed to admire my fiancee"

Emma:"I'm nervous"

Me:"I noticed"

Emma:"what if your parents don't like me, I already bought two kids in our relationship, I'm a divorcee, I'm older than you, I have a feeling they will not like me at all"

Me:"whether they like you or not, what matters is that I love you and you going to marry me, not them"

Emma(sighs):"I know, I'm just a little worried"

Me:"don't worry yourself over little things"

She sighs and looks at me nodding as she continues packing.

I pick my baby up as she awakes from her sleep and attempts crying

Emma:"babe don't wake her up"

Me:"heey it's only daddy, don't cry, please don't cry"

She sniffs with a sad sleepy face, I let her rest on my chest as she gets back to her beauty sleep

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were in the bedroom as he was on top of me giving it to me good, nice and slow under the covers, we were making love, I forgot how good slow sex is, the way he was moving his waist in circles, he kept picking up the pace and slowing down again as my hands brushed all over his body with my head tilted and eyes closed enjoying the sweet pleasures.

My phone rang

Keon:"I'm almost there...."

He picked up the pace and started fucking me, I couldn't hold back my moan as I finally released my juices as he continued a little while longer before pulling out and cumming on top of my pussy. Although the thought of Rain having a brother or sister sounds tempting, I can not have another child out of wedlock, I have disrespected my gift enough for things I've done because of men that I wasn't supposed to do, this time we doing things the right way. I am allowed to have sex idlozi lam doesn't mind it understands and I am old enough now, unlike back then I was still very young and new to my gift.

We share a kiss as my phone rings again, he gets off me and heads to the bathroom to get something to clean us up

I pick up my phone without checking the caller ID

Me:"hello?"

"Hi Amahle, it's Chase..."

I roll my eyes sitting up

Me:"yeah what's up?"

"Lulama is in labor and...."

Me:"which hospital?"

"The Nhlabathi hospital..."

Me:"I'll be right there"

I get off the bed as I bump into Keon coming out of the bathroom

Me:"back to the bathroom"

Keon:"what's going on?"

Me:"Lulama is having a baby, I promised I'd be there"

He picks me up wrapping my legs around his naked body

Keon:"well then in that case I guess we should take that shower"

We head to the shower and he opens the water as it falls on us, he kisses me as we have a naughty shower as he couldn't keep his hands off me

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I wake up feeling nauseous from the amount of alcohol I consumed, I checked the time of was still the same day, the same day my wife left me for another dick.

I get up with my heavy head from the bed and head to the kitchen passing the dirty lounge with broken glass.

I open the fridge and stare, I'm feeling hungry and there's nothing to eat, Bailey hasn't been cooking for me for the past few days, there's a lot to cook but I don't have the energy, the mood nor the skill to prepare myself something, I close the fridge and head to the lounge and sit in the dark for a few minutes staring at the blank wall, my heart is heavy on me and very painful I'm experiencing severe chest pains, I can't believe I've been played, by Bailey of all people, after all these years of never giving up on me, only to make me wife her, pay half a million for lobola, throw a huge ass wedding that even made it to the news, trended on twitter and Facebook, I put her through a lot yes but I've also done a lot for her which doesn't even matter to me, I was ready to love someone and be

loyal, I was ready for a family, she can't take that away from me, the baby she's carrying has to be raised by both parents, if she thinks I'll let her go that easily she has another thing coming.

.

.

.

Bailey

.

.

.

I was all dressed up with a full face beat in my sexy outfit ready for Chase, I was sitting by the couch scrolling through social media while waiting for him, he was supposed to be here a while ago.

I scroll to his contact and video call him

He pops up on my screen looking as cute as ever, Chase is one of those very handsome white men with the black hair and dreamy eyes, the sexy tattoos, he has that dangerous yet mesmerizing aura about him, you could legit get lost in his blue eyes, he's every girl's fantasy.

Me:"babe, where are you?"

Chase:"I'm sorry babe, something came up, I won't make it"

Me:"what? But I got so excited"

Chase:"I know but my wife...I mean Lulama went to labor, she's giving birth to my baby, I had to be there for my child, you understand right?"

I sigh disappointedly

Me:"yeah I guess I understand"

Chase:"wow, by the way you look very sexy"

Me(blushes):"thank you"

Chase:"I promise I'll make it up to you soon, we could celebrate once you've served Lowell those divorce papers, by next week maybe, I would have also served my wife..Lulama the divorce papers and make necessary arrangements for our kids"

Me:"okay, I talked to my lawyers, we have to go discuss how we dividing our property"

Chase:"oh I thought you married out of community?"

Me:"Yes but it was with accrual"

Chase:"yeah but you were not married long enough to have acquired a lot in your marriage"

Me:"we did purchase a new house but we were planning on moving in after our honeymoon"

Chase:"I see, let me get going babe, I'll call you later"

Me:"okay bye"

I hang up and sit back thinking about our honeymoon, we didn't even get to go to our honeymoon, he was very excited about it...I log into my WhatsApp and go to his contact, he was last seen yesterday. He still hasn't tried contacting me, I don't even know why I'm feeling so bad about leaving him, he long had it coming. I feel tears threaten me as I get up and head to the shower to wash myself clean and cry as much as I needed to

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

We were warmly welcomed to a nice dinner by mom, Dad kept his cool but was friendly enough even though I could sense the boys weren't comfortable around



him as he was wearing his usual serious face, mom made things less tense by keeping conversations going

London was awfully quiet, it's been a while since she's been her cheerful playful self, she's just been quiet and moody, I'm not sure what's wrong with my baby but I do not like it and if it has something to do with Emma's witch magic things, she will regret involving my daughter into this.

I just wish my help didn't lie on the hands of someone who hates my guts, I don't even know how I'll start approaching her about this, if I apologize first then ask for her help it'll be like I just apologized because I needed her help, if I ask for her help without apologizing that would be cruel of me, I've broken that woman so much now I need her to fix me, I really don't know how this is going to play out.

I'll just take it one day at a time, I'm sure we can work it out. At least I hope so.

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

The doctor gave me my baby boy all cleaned up and fresh crying for my boob, I took out my boob before taking him from the doctor

My heart skipped a beat pounding very fast against my chest as my eyes land on my baby, he's not light skinned, he's brown like a complete black baby

Me:"uhm...is this my baby?"

I ask the doctor

Doctor:"Yes this is your baby, is there something wrong?"

Me:"uhm is he...does he look like a colored baby to you?"

Doctor:"well it's hard to tell with new borns, they can come out any skin color and change as they grow up, some come out very white only to grow to be darker, so you can never be too sure, if you want to be sure about being the parent you just have to do DNA test"

Me:"I see"

I look at him as he sucks my boob

Me:"please call in my husband and family"

She calls them in, Chase comes next to me and looks at the baby with a bit of a frown, I look at him to see if he'll notice what I noticed, my heart is beating uncontrollably I fear I might drop the baby the way I'm shaking

He smiles widely

Chase:"I see this one wanted your skin color he's darker than how Theo was"

Me(chuckles nervously):"yeah that's what I also saw"

Chase:"let me hold my boy"

He takes him from me, surprisingly he doesn't cry but instead looks comfortable in his arms

My family walks in after a while

Mom:"hey honey, how you feeling?"

Me:"I'm just glad it's over"

Amahle:"uhh look at my cute nephew , it seems like we'll only have nephews we are only blessed with boys"

Mom:"it's because the generation before you were mostly girls, I had five sisters and only one brother"

Dad:"the more boys the better"

Amahle:"haa but Dad we'll only be paying waya waya no cows coming in they only leaving, we'll be bankrupt mos"

We all laugh

Dad:"boys carry your surname forever while girl's go take another family surname, we need boys to carry the surname"

Nkosi:"at least there's me to carry the surname"

He says walking in I gasp surprised as Amahle runs up to him and hugs him, he's been gone for almost two full years studying abroad

Me:"Nkosi!"

He comes up to me and we hug as he greets everyone else

Me:"wow this is my son's best birthday ever"

Chase (laughs):"it's his first babe, it has to be the best"

Theo:"can I hold him dad?"

Chase:"few seconds"

He bows to his level and gives him for a short while before taking him again

Amahle:"haibo can I see your baby?"

I look at her concerned expression as Chase gives her the baby

She stares into his eyes for a while before looking at me with a fearful look, we communicate with our eyes as I plead with her

Mom:"ayibo Makhosi is everything okay with the baby?"

She notices the tension on her face

Amahle (smiles):"no of cause not, he's perfect, I thought I sensed something but it was nothing, this baby needs mommy's milk"

She gives me my baby as the room goes back to being cheerful again, I look at Chase who has his hands in his pockets staring at his baby with a faint smile

.

.

.

\*\*

"You may choose your sin, but you can never choose the consequences"  
(unknown)

Insert 115

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

[A WEEK LATER]

Chase

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I wasn't shocked when the baby came out looking like that I expected it.

It just confirmed my already gathered evidence that she's been fooling around with that idiot.

He will regret messing with what's mine

I'm not going to leave Lulama, that'll make things very easy and joyful for him, the worst punishment he can get is watching me love Lulama even more while his marriage is destroyed to the ground and raising his child as my own, if my wife here ever finds the courage to tell the truth about the baby's father and Lowell wants a relationship with him, it might be too late cause he'll resent him I'll make sure he hates him, even if the truth comes out soon I'll still make sure that he knows that he'll only be visiting the baby I'll be the full time father, that will kill him inside.

I truly love Lulama that's why I married her even after what I did to her, that was revenge from Precious, she wanted her to go through what she went through, if I listened to her she would've at least spent the whole year being a drug mule and sleeping with different men, but I loved her too much to put her through that, it was hard enough making her go through a gang rape which scared her really badly and I'll always feel bad about that but we moved on. I'm really hurt that she cheated on me but there are other ways to punish her than leaving her, playing with people's minds and emotions is my specialty.

Lulama:"this baby cott is cuter than the one at home, we should get this one"

Me:"whatever you want my love"

She calls the assistant of the shop

My phone vibrates I take it from my pocket. I read the text from Bailey

"I've just signed the papers, just waiting for signature, then we'll be free"

.

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

.

Bailey just left my office after dropping off the divorce papers.

This really pained me, the way she's so confident and not feeling any remorse for leaving me for a married man, I've tried making her stay but failed, my only resort was physically hurting her but I learnt the hard way with Amahle and I don't wish to do that to any woman ever I'm even ashamed it crossed my mind...

I take my phone and call Lulama

It rings until it sends me to voicemail

I've been trying to contact her for a while since I heard she gave birth to congratulate her and find out how she's taking the divorce, I can't believe that dude is leaving Lulama when she just gave him a baby.

I've been contemplating sending her pictures of Chase and Bailey that Aidan sent me but I was afraid since she was pregnant but now that she's given birth and Bailey really left me I guess there's nothing holding me back from sending them.

I log into WhatsApp and send her all the pictures of Chase and Bailey being cosy

in hotels and restaurants

Me:(Bailey just divorced me for your husband, please get back to me, we need to talk)

Me:"oh yeah she blocked me"

I bang my phone on the table and sigh looking at the divorce papers and reading through them

I call my lawyer to talk about the agreement on the divorce privately

.

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I decided to go check up on the club

it has been very long since I've come here and everything was still exactly like how it was, nothing has changed.

Me:"I really hired very uncreative people here, you mean for the past five years you guys haven't changed or upgraded anything? Nothing at all!?"

Derek:"we didn't want to do anything without your consent"

Me:"really? Where has Lowell been?"

Derek:"he's been more focused on his own company he only comes in here to check on the place or chill with friends"

I shake my head as I look at other employees

Me:"you may be excused"

They all walk out as derek also attempts to get up

Me:"except you"

He looks at me then sits back down

Me:"tell me, how far did you go with making Amahle stay away from me..I know I said I never want to hear it, but I need to know right now"

Derek:"eish boss, we did everything we possibly could, she came here so many times trying to get me to get messages to you but I always had to chase her out, she'd also come with letters but I'd burn them and tell her that you read them and you think they stupid and she should stop, the woman never gave up tht easily until the day we threatened her life like you asked, that's when she decided she was done..."

Me:"how exactly did you threaten her life?"

Derek:"eish boss you promised you wouldn't wanna know cause you might not like what you hear"

Me:"just tell me Derek"

Derek:"I can't..."

Me(angrily):"tell me what you fucken did!!"

Derek:"we hijacked her Uber when she was planning on flying to Cape town to look for you, I came with the gang, we pointed guns at her, we told her if she doesn't stop looking for you we'd kill her...she got scared and promised to stay away"

Me:"that's all?"

Derek:"yeah that's all"

Me:"did you read the letters she sent?"

Derek:"no I never read them"

I sigh looking at him

Me:"I hope you told me everything, because if not, uzowukhomba umzi onotshwala" (you will regret it)

Derek:"if you planning on getting her back, yeah I think your chances are 0 to negative 5, that woman despises you and after the way I treated her knowing that it was orders from you (whistles)...you can just forget"

Me:"I just want to go apologise and maybe have a civil relationship with her, I don't want her back I know that's impossible I've already done too much damage"

Derek (shaking his head):" yah neh, there is something that she kept mentioning while we had guns pointed at her"

Me:"what is it?"

Derek:"she begged us not to hurt her and her baby, she kept repeating that but I never put much thought into it...now that I come to think of it, it was before she got back together with Lowell"

Me:"No... no that cannot be, do you think that maybe...that would explain the resemblance...but Nah she wouldn't lie like that, Amahle is many things but she is not capable of that, maybe she had already slept with Lowell since that happened a while after I left...right?"

Derek:"that's what I thought cause it had been a while since you left and right after that she publicized her relationship with Lowell and then announced her pregnancy"

Me:"I see..."

.

.



.

Bailey

.

.

.

I get up and meet him halfway as we share a hug

Me:"it's finally done"

Chase:"this is the best news I've heard in forever"

I let go and look at him

Me:"Lies, when your wife gave birth to a healthy bouncing baby boy, that's the best news surely"

Chase:"yeah those were second best, you know that you come first"

We go sit by the reserved seats

Me:"so how's it going with you and the wife?"

Chase:"my lawyer will have the papers ready by next week"

Me:"next week?"

Chase:"unlike you, Lulama and I have been married for years, so there's way much more admin involved and things to lose, the custody of the kids, living arrangements and all that shit and she's not taking this lightly so it'll take time"

I look at his hand

Me:"you still wearing the ring"

Chase:"yeah is it a problem?"

Me:"you should take it off to show her that you mean business"

Chase:"chill babe, she knows I mean business, let's go to the room for a little privacy, there are things I want to do to you"

Me(blushing):"okay"

We head up to the room

.  
. .  
. .

Amahle

.  
. .  
. .

It's almost Christmas and this has been the best December of my life, Rain has a healthy painless heart and is free to do whatever he wants, I've never seen him this happy, I've never been this happy in years it's like a big burden has been lifted off my shoulders.

Keon is absolutely the best, he's the most supportive, caring and loving person I've ever met, sometimes I think he's too good for me and I really don't deserve him, I just hope he really doesn't have any hidden skeletons because I really like him a lot and I've grown to love him specially the bond he has with Rain its the cutest.

We left the kids at my mother's place

it's been a week now since we've left them as we went to Ghana to meet his parents, they are kind people and very welcoming, he also showed me very beautiful places around, it was very exciting and peaceful, I couldn't get enough of the cute romantic dates

The girl was spoilt rotten, from spree shopping to skin care spar dates, the awesome sex, I was feeling really rejuvenated...I never knew how beautiful Ghana actually is, the parts they don't show us in Nollywood movies.

We arrived in Joburg two days ago and were at my place, we decided we have a bit of more time together before fetching the kids and prepare for Christmas since in a few days it'll be Christmas.

We are busy wrapping their gifts and decorating the house, I've never went all out on decorating my place for Christmas, I stopped putting much excitement to it cause my baby would get sick or have to be rushed to hospital.

I tried making it fun for him by buying him gifts but as far as Christmas tree and decorations go that only happened when we would visit mom.

Keon(singing):"Eh Single

I've been searching

I want to mingle

Mio ti marry

Me:"Single ati Searching

He want to mingle Kole marry

Ti gbe gbe

Ti gbe gbe all because of

Ti gbe gbe....

He laughs at me as I couldn't pronounce the lyrics properly as the song was ghanaiian english

Keon (laughing):"what you saying love?"

Me:"Ti gwegwe ti gwegwe all because of ti gwegwe...

He places his fist over his mouth laughing at me

Me(laughing):"don't laugh at me nah you know I can't speak your talk nah....

Keon:"I'm not laughing...

Me:"mxxxm....

Keon:"I must give it to you, even though you flop the Yoruba language you nailed the attitude, with that gele as well..

Me:"gele?..."

Keon(laughs):"the head wrap on your head"

I laugh touching my head

Me:"ohh this so that's what it's called"

Keon:"yes babe, it suits you very well"

He leans closer and we kiss, what I thought would be a quick kiss went on and on evoking more emotions, he leans too close I end up falling on my back on the carpet as he gets on top of me

I giggle and push him off

Me:"whoa chineke igwe slow down nah"

He bursts into laughter getting up while helping me up as well

Keon(laughing):"igwe? Really nah? You just blurt out anything that comes to your mind"

Me:"I'm trying here... don't make fun of me I dey beg oo

Keon(laughing):"babe my tummy is sore nah... stop it!"

I laugh pushing him.

We continue decorating while dancing to some nigerian music as he teaches me their dances, I was having so much fun I didn't want the night to come to an end.

.

.

.

\*\*

"You will never have to force anything that's truly meant to be" (Author)

Insert 116

•

- 
- 
- 
- 

[Two Days Later]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

The kids were out with Keon, he took them with him to go sort out a few things in his company before taking them out for an ice cream drive, I stayed behind as I was on call at work and I have just been called to come in.

He will bring Rain back later as he's not staying over tonight, even though we almost always together we do give each other space to be alone with just our kids, Rain loves our special time and as much as he loves having Keon and Kendall over but he says he likes it that they visit but they must not move in with us, he likes it when it's just him and I watching movies, reading or playing together, I understand him I mean it's only been him and I for years. I don't know how it's going to work if Keon ever asks us to take things to the next level like moving in together or getting married, Rain will not take it well at all. I'm not even sure how I will take it I'm too attached to my child, even now when he takes him and I'm not there I literally call every minute to check on them, I don't want to be blinded by vitamin D and give a man all my trust even with my child, I'm not easily trusting when it comes to Rain, he hardly takes him without me only when I'm really stranded like today and I can't go with them.

I take my phone and video call him

Keon:"for the hundredth time in the past thirty minutes, we are still fine babe"

Me(laughing):"hey it's not my fault that you guys decided on a fun day when I had to work"

Keon:" we about to go play some games, then get that ice cream"

Me:"please they should eat food before ice cream"

"Aww mom is so boring"

Me:"hey! Who said that?"

He shows Rain as he giggles hiding himself

Rain:"it was kendall!"

Kendall:"was not!!"

We laugh

Keon:"babe, we are okay, we will see you later okay"

Me:"okay you guys have fun"

Keon:"we will"

Me;"and food first!!"

Rain:"byeeee"

They hang up, I laugh shaking my head

I was surprised by the visitor I had today as she made her way inside

Me:"to what do I owe this wonderful visit"

Lulama:"I just came to check on my sister, is that a crime"

We share a hug

Me:"not at all but considering how rare this is, I hope you didn't commit any crime"

Lulama:"are you coming home for Christmas lunch?"

Me:"obviously we'll come, how's baby Owen doing?"

Lulama:"he's a happy baby I can't complain..well I could complain about the sleepless nights, constant crying buut...

Me:"it comes as a package"

She smiles looking at me and her smile disappears

Lulama:"Amahle, I have a problem"

Me:"I know"

Lulama:"I don't know what to do"

Me:"you do know what to do, you just afraid of the outcome"

Lulama:"I didn't think that Lowell could've been the one that knocked me up, I was so sure that it was Chase"

Me:"I long warned you about this affair of yours with Lowell, you know very well that you love him you guys have opened up to each other about your feelings but you still let people come between you two"

Lulama:"now everything is a mess, Chase believes that the child is his, I think I should take this one to the grave, Lowell is crazy if the truth could come out and Chase wants to fight him Lowell would definitely kill him, you know what kind of people the Nhlabathis are"

Me:"you don't think Chase is capable of worse?"

Lulama:"No, Chase is a strong guy and all but come on you know how psycho the Nhlabathis are, specially the brothers "

Me(chuckles):"I know, but don't underestimate Chase, I just don't trust that guy, there's way more to him than he lets out, after that time you disappeared, I was so sure you were in deep trouble my spirit was restless, and then the same place I was shown you were at where girls were raped and killed, you were not there, and boom, you are peacefully sleeping at Chase's place... something went down that day and I don't know what he did to you but I know some day the truth will come out even if it's years later"

Lulama:"if Chase has ever done something to harm me, I would know, Chase is the sweetest guy ever, I know you don't like him but I love him, you have no idea what he's helped me go through, the things he's done for me, the love he's

shown me, he's never made me feel like I'm in competition with other women or desperate...(sighs)...it's only now that he's starting to misbehave but we talked about it and I think he stopped whatever he was doing or planning on doing behind my back"

Me:"so what are you going to do?"

Lulama:"I don't know, I was hoping you'd advise me"

Me:"I am not the perfect person to give you advise on that..."

Lulama:"why not? You help people all the time you have a gift of being the voice of reason in people's life to heal and save life's not only professionally but spiritually as well"

Me:"well that doesn't make me perfect, and if you really believed in my gift you would believe me about Chase not being good but ke advise I would give you from a perfect person point of view would be...tell the truth now while it's still early, because the longer you wait the more painful the consequences, Owen is still a baby, he knows nothing, if everything is solved and tackled now, he will never know, he'll grow up with the truth and he won't have to hate anyone, but if he grows up to understand things that happen around him and the truth comes out, he might never forgive you...a lot could happen and it won't be nice at all, so rather tell the truth now"

Lulama:"I'm scared..."

Me:"I know but whatever happens just know that I'll always be here for you and everything will be okay"

She smiles faintly and takes my hands into hers as we hold each other

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.



We decided to meet up at the restaurant

Me:"here, all signed, I hope you happy now that you have not only broke my heart but you have also embarrassed me a great deal"

Bailey:"thank you for signing the papers"

Me:"yeah whatever Bailey, congratulations on wrecking two

homes, you know I would understand if you were leaving me because you were really leaving me for all the bullshit I've put you through, but as for leaving me for another man, that is so low of you, I never expected this from you"

Bailey:"cut the crap Lowell, you bought this unto yourself, this is a result of all your cheating, all those fake business trips, all those times you came home smelling of cheap perfume and I'd act blind, I was really giving you one last chance, I thought a baby and getting married would knock some maturity and loyalty into you, but I guess you can only ever be loyal to someone you truly love, you never loved me, do you know how much it hurts to love someone who doesn't see you or appreciate you, I've always managed to get myself in these kind of relationships, maybe it's a curse, but do not make me feel guilty for leaving you..don't do that"

She gets up, I grab her hand

Me:"Bailey please, I promise I'll do better, I've changed, I was stupid for treating you like that, look we don't have to be married but please I really love you, please don't make us go through this, our baby deserves better"

Bailey (tears rolling down):"it's a little too late for that now, it's already been done, you are my past now"

Me(tearful):"don't say that please, if this is all for Chase, it's not worth it, he doesn't love you like I do Bailey, he's not even divorcing his wife for you, he's just playing you...(sighs) he knows that I had an affair with his wife, that's why he's doing this, for revenge, please don't leave me for that fool, don't let him fool you, yes I admit I did kiss a woman on our wedding day, it was his wife Lulama, we had long ended the affair, the day I found you were pregnant, I stopped fooling around with her, we've been friends since we were very young and along the way we dated but it never worked out...on our wedding day she

came to congratulate me and tell me that she was proud that I was finally making a good change with my life and that I was lucky to have a woman like you by my side, we made a pact to never ever have any kind of relationship, we broke our friendship too, that was a peck and a hug that she gave me, I'm sorry I didn't make the effort to notice the lipstick or cover the cologne, all I could think about was making you my wife...come on Bailey, let's tear these papers, Chase is playing a game here, let's beat him at his own game, let's love each other... please....

Bailey:"I don't believe anything that comes out of your mouth, you've lost my trust a long time ago...bye Lowell"

She yanks her arm off my hand and clicks her heels as she walks away

.  
. .  
. .

Noah

.  
. .  
. .

I was parked a bit far from Amahle's place waiting for her to get back from work.

I am shaking, I'm not sure how all this is going to work out, I've treated a number of people badly, but the way I treated Amahle was the worst I've ever treated anyone, it was the worst because she didn't deserve it and I claim to love her so much, she's literally the keeper of my heart she trusted me with hers and I squashed it into nothing. If she doesn't want to forgive me or help me I'll understand because I'd probably act the same if someone did what I did to her to me.

I'm so nervous it feels like I'm attending my first job interview, I'm contemplating heading back home and just stay away from her, my life is already a mess anyway I probably deserve living like this, with witches and ghosts tormenting me for the rest of my life, I only fear for my child she doesn't

deserve to die, if I give up on myself I'm giving up on her as well. Why does life have to be so complicated?

.

.

.

Bailey

.

.

.

Me(smiling):"we are now divorced"

He has been reading over the papers

Chase:"wow, so it's really done, you officially divorced?"

Me:"yes, you know, he tried to change my mind and I almost fell for his charming lies again, talking about how you are playing me and that you not going to leave your wife for me and how this is all a game to you..(chuckles).. he is so manipulative and he manipulated me for far too long"

Chase:"he is manipulative indeed love, I'm happy you left that fool, he was too toxic for a good woman like yourself"

Me:"I can't wait for us to start our new life together"

He looks at his phone

Chase:"that's my wife, I have to get going"

Me:"why?"

Chase:"I have to help her with the cooking around the house since she's taking care of the baby, and there are a few things I have to pick up for Christmas..I'll call you when I'm free, okay love?"

Me:"but why are you doing all these things for her, you guys are going through a divorce, you should've moved out by now, it seems as though you are still being lovey dovey to each other, have you told her about us yet?"

Chase:"I am divorcing her just be patient I told you this year will not end without me being a happily divorced man, and then we could be together and start a new life"

He gets up and takes his keys, phone and wallet

Chase:"but for now I need to be there for my family..."

He kisses my forehead

Chase:"don't worry babe, we just being civil for the kids, we have to let them at least enjoy their last Christmas with their parents still together before we break it down to Theo, you understand right?"

I nod

Chase:"for who baby?"

Me:"for the kids"

Chase:"for the kids"

He winks at me and walks away

I feel my heart sink as a part of me is starting to not trust him

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

I couldn't concentrate at work no matter how hard I tried, but I somehow managed to get through the day, today we had a small closing party, with snacks and drinks as it's almost Christmas, we close pretty late at our company but that's because it's a demanding job and work begins again on the 5th of January, that's how soon we reopen.

I didn't stay very long for the party as I drove home, I was feeling very lonely.

I miss my boy Rain, I should go fetch him just for him to spend the night and maybe take him out tomorrow, it's been a while since he's visited me and I'm missing him like crazy

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I made my way inside the house and started packing the little items I picked up from the supermarket.

I take off my shoes and unhook my bra from beneath my shirt as I walk to the lounge throwing my tired ass on the couch, I took off my shirt and bra throwing them on the coffee table as I lay on my back switching on the TV while taking off my pants and I can finally breath as I kick them off to the floor, the things I do when I'm home alone.

I throw my one leg over the couch with my legs wide open as I get fresh air in all the right places, I hate December heat, a few minutes out of the car with no air conditioner and you already sweating.

I get up from the couch and go take an ice pop from the freezer, I sigh as soon as it's in my mouth

Me(closing my eyes):"mmmmhh"

My moment is disturbed by a knock at the door, I walk out the kitchen and startle dropping my ice pop as the door is wide open and Noah is standing on the other side of the burglar gate, for a moment I freeze in shock looking at him

He clears his throat as his eyes explore my body, my mind only then registers that I'm half naked and I should cover my boobs.

I cover my boobs

Me:"what are you doing here?"

Noah:"I just want to talk to you"

Me:"there's nothing to talk about, and who showed you my flat? How did the security let you in without informing me first"

Noah:"it's really hard to concentrate and take you seriously while you like that"

I turn and walk to the bathroom and grab a towel to cover my body before walking back to the door and he's already let himself inside

Me:"get out Noah, you not welcome here"

Noah:"calm down sweetheart, let's not get aggressive, it's a very hot day today, can we just please have a calm civil conversation like two grown adults, I know I came by unannounced and my apologies on that part but it was the only way I could come see you...now we have a lot to catch up on, questions that need to be answered, truths that need to be spilled, bottled emotions that need to be set free and amends that need to be made....it's about time

He walks closer to me as I take a few steps back

Noah:"good evening sweetheart, how are you doing?"

.

.

.

\*\*

"When it's time it's time...and it's time"( Jim Leyland)

Insert 117

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle:"cut the bullshit Noah and crawl back to whatever hell you came from"

I walk closer to her

Me:"I know you angry and hurting..."

She takes steps back

Amahle:"don't take another step closer to me or I swear I won't hesitate attacking you"

I find myself wanting to smile at the same time the rage in her eyes holds me back as I stop moving

Me:"can we just talk, please"

Amahle:"I have nothing to say to you"

Me:"I have a lot to say to you"

Amahle:"I don't want to hear anything that comes out of your mouth"

Me:"I'm sorry Amahle"

Amahle (angrily):"I said I don't want to hear it Noah! Take your sorry ass and leave my house!"

Me:"Amahle...."

Amahle:"what do you want from me Noah? A thank you for saving my son?

well you not going to get it because I didn't ask you for shit, it was your job and I paid you for it...."

Me:"I don't need a thank you, I just want to come fix the mess I made....

Amahle:"nothing needs to be fixed, please get out, your presence makes me sick, uyanginyanyisa" (you disgust me)

My throat is painful and dry as I find it hard to swallow the lump on my throat

My palms get sweaty and my heart beating painfully

Me(walking closer):"sweetheart, please...

She moves back

Amahle:"stop it! Why can't you just leave me alone? what makes you feel

so entitled to walk into my house, my

life as you please, you left me in the most horrible way almost six years ago, I tried reaching out to you, talking to you, I tried with everything in me, and what did you do!?! You shut me out, and now, now that you the one who wants to talk, you the one who wants to apologise, you the one who's ready to give answers, now that you have collected all the courage you needed for the past years suddenly it's about time!?! It's about time now because it's about you and your guilt!?! It's about time now because you need something from me right? You need my help....

A frown welcomes my face as I look at her

Amahle:"oh you think I don't know? I know you only here because you need my help, you got yourself in a witchful situation and there's nobody in the world that can help you except me, the ghost of your beloved wife is threatening your life and she'll never leave you... unless I help you"

Me:"how did.....

Amahle:"how did I know you need my help? Honey, I knew before you knew, you are such a self centered selfish fool, you thought you could come here and act like you sorry for what you did to me, call me sweetheart, touch me and I'd fall to your mercy? That I'd be weak and not be able to resist you? You thought I'd look in those golden eyes and get lost, Well maybe if it was five years ago, yes, that would've worked while you still had that affect on me, not now, you've lost that privilege, you killed that part of my heart, now everything about you



makes me want to vomit, and those eyes, they are an evil serpent's devil eyes!...it's always been about you, what you want and what is best for you, things should always go your way, To hell with that! well if you can kindly get out of my house, stay away from my life as perfectly as you've been doing and go jump off the highest cliff for all I care,

I'm at a very happy place with my life right now after a very long time of suffering and pain, I finally found someone who truly cares for me with pure intentions, we have kids, I'm not going to let you ruin this for me...go Noah, just never set your foot anywhere near me or my family...get out!"

Me:"Amahle....

Amahle (shouting):"Get out!! Get the fuck out!!"

She pushes me towards the door

Me:"Indy please wait just let me explain...

I harden myself and she's not strong enough to push me as we were about to reach the door, we were next to the kitchen entrance

Amahle:"phuma kwami Lwandle marhn!!

Phuma!! (Screaming angrily) phuma wenja!!....

She angrily walks to the kitchen and comes back throwing glasses at me

I blocked myself using my arms as I

felt pieces of the glass slice through

my skin

Amahle (furious):"you need me to threaten your life for you to leave me alone! Huh!? Is that how we get messages through to each other now!!?"

You want me to send people to kill you!!? Yilokho okufunayo!!?" (Is that what you want!?)

She keeps throwing stuff at me as I keep trying to dodge them

Me:"I'm sorry!! I didn't know what else to do!! I thought I was protecting you!! I'm sorry..

Amahle:"protecting me!?! How!?! You cold hearted Liar!! You sent people to kill me!! You sent them to rape me!! You wanted me dead!! You are so evil!! I can't believe I ever loved you!! You are a monster!! And I'll never forgive you!! I'll never forgive you!! I hate you Noah Lwandle Nhlabathi!! Ngiyakuzonda ngakhokonke okukimi!! Yezwa!! Ngiqalekisa usuku engahlangana nawe ngalo ninonke nihlagene boNhlabathi!!...

My heart sinks painfully as tears sting

my eyes, she's still throwing things at me and her towel has slipped off but she's too agitated to care or notice

I can't take the cuts from the glass anymore, I walk closer to her and

grab her hand as she was about to throw another glass at me, all the anger, all the emotions she's bottled for so many years she was expressing them all and it wasn't a pretty sight, it is heartbreaking and I can't stand seeing her like this, it's not the person she is, there was now more fear than anger in her eyes

Me:"I'm sorry...

Amahle (defeatedly breaks down crying):" I hate you!!....

She tries fighting me but I hold her against me as she cries even more

Amahle (weakly trying to break free from my embrace):"leave me alone!  
Please....

Me(crying):"I'm so so sorry I was stupid to do what I did, please, I'm deeply sorry....

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

Me:"okay guys, that's enough games for a day, it's getting late, mommy is probably getting worried about us, let's go!"

Rain:"five more minutes please!"

Kendall:"yes please daddy!"

Me:"No, I have given you more than enough five minutes"

They sigh sulking as they walk towards me

Me(smiling):"you guys look so cute when sulking, you should do it more often"

I pick them up as Rain goes on my back while I carry Kendall from the front and we walk out to the car

I drive off to Amahle's place

Me:"I don't know about you guys but I miss mommy, don't y'all miss mommy?"

I look at them sitting at the back sulking

Me:"well I don't care I'm going back to my baby whether you like it or not"

Kendall:"you big meanie!"

Me:"you guys are still sulking, you know I thought maybe we could buy more ice cream but since you want to sulk you can forget"

Rain:"I'm not sulking! I'm happy, you see"

He smiles widely

Kendall:"me too!"

Me:"good but too bad we almost home now"

Rain:"you tricked us!"

Me:"there's ice cream at home"

Kendall:"yeeey!"

I shake my head

Me:"kids"

Rain (shaking his head): "adults"

I burst into laughter

Me: "really now"

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

I was pacing in the lounge while waiting for Chase to get home, I already put the baby to sleep and Theo was in his gaming room playing games.

A lot was running through my mind

if I don't tell him the truth the truth will come out on it's own eventually, although the baby is still too young I can tell that he looks like Lowell and as he grows he'll be his copy and Chase is many things but not a fool, even though the Nhlabathis has a history of colored blood in them but it's not enough to make Owen a colored, that child is fully black, he has Lowell's eyes his ears, everything.

I'm very scared I'm trembling, this might be the end of my marriage, it will break my family apart, Chase will be devastated and who knows what war this will bring

"Hey babe"

I startle as I stop on my tracks and look at him

Me: "hey baby"

He walks towards me in the lounge as he drops his bag on the couch while loosening his tie

Chase:"so tired"

Me:"long day?"

Chase:"yes, I got the things you asked me for, sorry but I can't cook so I bought take away, I left them in the kitchen on my way in"

Me:"okay, that's fine too"

I take off his tie for him and unbutton his shirt

Me:"how was your day?"

Chase:"pretty good I can't complain, everything is going according to plan"

Me:"according to what plan?"

Chase:"the plan to keep the hotel very busy for these festive holidays"

Me:"oh that's good"

I take off his shirt

Chase:"you okay my love? You look distraught"

Me:"there's something I have to tell you"

He pulls me closer to him and we share a kiss

Chase:"can I also tell you something"

Me:"yeah sure, you go first"

Chase:"I wanted it to be a surprise but I can't keep it to myself anymore, I have organised a Christmas wedding for us"

Me:"wedding?..."

Chase:"yes wedding, it's nothing big, just to celebrate our love, it'll be something small and very intimate, I've talked to your mother and she has agreed, we'll have it at her place since that's where everyone goes for Christmas lunch, we never celebrated our anniversary in a special way this year so I wanted to do this for you, so that our Owen also gets to witness the love that's been burning between us for all these years, that is still burning"

My heart melts as a smile creeps on my face and I feel a tingle of joy inside me

Me:"that is so thoughtful, romantic and sweet of you"

Chase:"we will renew our vows as we Mark the fifth year down and dusted, I can't believe we've come this far and yet you still make me feel this way, I love you, I love you with all my heart, thank you for loving me, your love has shielded my heart from pain and I'll forever be grateful for that"

He moves his head closer, I close my eyes and we share a passionate kiss

He pulls out as I was starting to lose myself in the bliss of the moment

Chase(smiling):"now, what did you want to tell me?"

Me(sighs):"after all that, I even forgot..."

Chase:"you sure?"

Me:"yeah, it wasn't that important anyway, it was probably about something to do with Christmas, I'll tell you when I remember again"

Chase(smiles):"okay then, the house is so peaceful, this is the perfect moment to do as we please with each other"

Me:"no sex though remember"

Chase:"not everything about intimacy is about penetration, come I'll teach you a thing or two"

I giggle as he picks me up and we head to the guest bedroom which was closer

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I decided to go to my parents house instead, I cannot let Rain see me like this, I'm a mess it'll be no fun being

with me, I will see him on Christmas.

Mom:"I can't believe Bailey did this, I did not expect this from her, that bitch just married you for the benefits, after such a big wedding, so much money spent on her! And she embarrasses us like this, she knows very well the public will come for us, is she doing this for fame?"

Dad:"I know Bailey truly loved you, I know a woman who loves a man, that woman knew the kind of person you were but still stuck up with you and gave you countless chances, she always came here complaining about you, I was surprised she actually married you after everything you put her through, you mother and I have been wiping the tears you've been putting in that girl's face...what did you do? You clearly did something that she finally decided this was the last straw, what did you do?"

Mom:"stop blaming my son, even if he did do something, her vows are still fresh, what happened to for better or worse? Till death do us part? Working things out no matter how hard it gets? She was now a wife for crying out loud not a girlfriend! We are getting our money back, we didn't pay so much money for lobola just for a five minute marriage!?! Bullshit!"

Dad:"you can't keep defending these men babe, they are grown ass men, one is approaching his forties and this one his thirties! He messed up he should fix it, they not babies we can't keep peeping after them! They must take responsibility for their actions, own up to your mistakes and bullshit stop hiding behind a woman! Have some balls man!"

I look down ashamed

Me:"it was my fault, I kissed Lulama on our wedding day..."

Dad(shaking his head):"I knew it (looks at mom) this is the nonsense we defending? After everything we've been through as a family you'd think they'd learn from it and become better men These boys will never learn!I'm glad that woman divorced you after sucking you dry! Maybe after this you'll grow the fuck up!..."

He gets up and walks away, I cover my teary eyes with my hands as I feel mom's arm around me

Mom:"it's okay, mommy's here for you, no matter what, you'll get through this too, don't be discouraged...I love you and I'll always be here for you, you not alone"

I hold her back feeling safe in her arms as I rest my head on her chest

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I feel my chest closing in on me as I start wheezing, while he's holding me

Noah:"where's your asthma pump?"

Me(wheezing):" iiiin my bbbedroom, in the draw....

He leaves me sitting on the floor, I hold my chest trying to get air but I was struggling

He gets back kneeling in front of me as he help me breath pumping it in my mouth, after a while my breath goes back to normal...

Noah:"are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine..."

Noah:"I know my reasons for leaving you are probably selfish, I thought I was putting your best interest first but it was my best interest for you...I will leave you if that's what you want but not until you tell me just one thing..."

I look up at me with my foggy vision blocked by tears

Noah:"is Rain my son?"

Me(looks away):"No, Rain is Lowell's son"



Noah:"Amahle I know when you lying...look at me in the eyes and tell me Rain is not my son"

I look into his eyes, this is the moment of truth, if I tell him the truth, everything will change, it could by little chance be for the better or it could be for the worst

Knowing Noah, it will be war.

Me:"I...I did what I had to okay, Rain is not your son, not after your people tried to kill him after you sent them to physically hurt me, I almost lost my baby, had I not made it to the hospital in time...you do not deserve Rain...

Noah:"so I'm the father? Rain is my son...

Me:"he's my son, and if you really ever cared you will stay away from us, Rain deserves so much better, he does not need your narcissist self in his life, I will not let you break my baby's heart, Lowell is the father and it will stay that way...

I get up from the floor as he also gets up

Noah:"I am truly sorry for everything I've done, I never meant to hurt you, the truth is I was a coward, afraid of losing you...

Me:"how were you afraid of losing me when you left me!?!...

Noah:"I knew leaving you I'd lose you as my lover but I wouldn't lose you to death, the night I left you, all the flashbacks came to me stronger than ever, I remembered everything, how I...you see, you have no idea what kind of person I am, Vanessa, she (tears escape his eyes)....the way she died I...

Me:"you killed her...

He looks at me

Me:"I know, I've always known, when I answered my calling, it was revealed to me what you did....

Noah:"I didn't want you to end up like her, I killed a woman I claimed to love with all my heart, I cold bloodedly murdered her...you saw how I was, I was crazy, I still am and sometimes I can't control my anger, little things tick me off, I shut down and I could kill anything or anyone that stands in my way...I've once almost took my own mother's life...I loved you so much, I couldn't let you go through that, if I ever took your life, I would never ever forgive myself I'd

lose it, I'd definitely be thrown in a mental institution because I'd never be the same, I was protecting you from myself...

Me:"I didn't ask for your protection! You ruined everything! You know what, please continue protecting me from yourself because you are right, you are a crazy psychopath, the least you could do is go back to Cape town and protect Rain and I from the monster you are before you cold bloodedly murder us too, and if you don't stay away from us, you will not only spend your whole life in a mental institution but you will rot in jail for what you did to Vanessa..."

Noah(whispers):"you wouldn't...."

Me:"try me"

Noah:"this is not you Amahle..."

Me:"damn right it's not me! You bring out the worst in me! Do you see what you turn me into!?! The closer you get to me, the more I become like you, crazy...I'm not supposed to be like this but your love has turned into poison in my heart, like the devil you only come to steal, kill and destroy..."

I look around for my towel as I only now come to notice that it had fallen off

I find it and pick it up

He grabs my arms before I could cover myself with tears running down his face

Noah:"I made mistakes, please forgive me..."

Me(crying):"Noah..."

He pins me against the wall locking me between his arm as he moves really close to me not giving me much space to move

Noah(crying):"please...."

I shake my head

Me:....

He moves his face closer as his lips were a few inches away from mine

He kisses my forehead

Noah(whispers crying):"I love you, I can't get over you...I'm sorry...."

Me:"please go before my boyfriend and kids come home and find you here...

"It's a little too late for that"

My blood drops pale as I turn to look at him

Rain:"momma? What's going on?..."

Keon:"let's go, momma and her friend need privacy..."

He pulls the kids hands and they walk out

Me(whispers defeated):"Keon wait..."

.

.

.

\*\*

"What lies behind us, and what lies before us, are tiny matters compared to what lies within us" (unknown)

Insert 118

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle (crying): "oh no...now look what you've done, let go of me!"

Me: "Amahle listen to me..."

Amahle: "No!! No I don't want to listen!! Let go of me Noah! You ruining my life again!! The only man who has shown me true love and happiness ever since you left is going to leave me because of you!! He loves me and now you see what this position looks like to him, I'm naked and you pinning me against the wall, leave Noah so I can go after the man that loves me..."

Me (shouting): "I LOVE YOU!! I'M THE MAN THAT LOVES YOU!! WHY CAN'T YOU SEE THAT!! I FUCKEN LOVE YOU DAMNIT!!..."

Amahle: "No! You don't, You hate me, you've made my life a living hell, Now you about to make me lose someone that makes me happy!! You never want to see me happy, ever since I've met you you've put me through nothing but painful situations, even loving you was painful, happiness was always short lived!! Why do you hate me so much!! Let go of me Noah, look what you made my child witness!! What is he going to think of me!?!...(defeated)...why can't you just let me go?"

I attack her with a kiss, she holds me back kissing me making me weak as my hands caress her body, her touch giving me goosebumps

I groan in pain as she kicked me in the balls

Amahle: "I told you to let go of me!!!"

She walks away...I hold my painful crotch as I watch her wrapping a gown around her as she walks out the house crying and shouting for Keon.

I wipe my tears and pull my face together, I take off my bloody shirt

and walk out of the house stepping on broken glass...

I walk towards them as Amahle is trying to explain to him while he's standing confidently against the car and the kids inside the car. Our eyes lock as he looks at me up and down, I feel my blood boil

as anger brews inside of me as I keep my eyes on his, I look at Amahle as I pass them, in the car Rain rolls down the window and looks at me, he has a frown on his face.

I turn and continue with my way.

If he thinks he can just take what's mine and move on with his life perfectly, well he has another thing coming because giving up on my child and my heart its the last thing I'm willing to do, I've failed them once, I'm not failing them again, I don't care what they share, I'm fighting and taking what's mine.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"babe, I tried to get rid of him, I swear but he fought me, he didn't wanna leave"

Keon:"I really don't know what to believe, you were naked, you only got rid of him because you didn't want me and the kids to find him there not because you really wanted him gone"

I pull him away from the car because I did not want the kids hearing us argue as it seemed like that's where it was going

We stand far from the car and houses

Me:"I did! I fought him, didn't you notice the broken glass, did you see that he's bleeding, I threw glass, plates everything just for him to leave but he wasn't having it until he locked me against the wall and he was too strong for me...

Keon:"how do you explain yourself being half naked and your boobs all over his chest?"

Me(sighs):"when I got back from work, it was very hot, I came and took off my clothes first thing when I walked in and threw them on the floor as I only wanted to relax on the couch, you felt how hot it was today right?..."

He shrugs his shoulders with a pissed attitude on his face

Me:"after that I got up from the couch and went to get myself a ice pop, I was home alone I usually like walking around the house naked, you know that....there was a knock at the door and you know how when you come out of the kitchen the main door is right there, it was wide open and he was standing outside, I left it open for fresh air to come in cause I know no one can come visit me without the security letting me know first, but Noah is sneaky I don't know how he even knew where I lived probably sent people to spy on me and bribed the security or something, I told him to leave then I went to wrap a towel around me thinking I'd come back and he's left but he made his way inside uninvited...I've been trying to throw him out while we fought confronting each other about the past...I got so caught up in our fight I was burning in anger I started throwing things at him, I didn't even notice my towel fell off, he was hurting my feelings cause he didn't want to leave and he brought back pain that I have buried deep inside me, I broke down that's when he pinned me against the wall trying to calm me down, I was too weak to push him away he was begging for forgiveness and that's when you walked in.....

Keon:"and the kiss?..."

My heart pounds fearfully

Me:"kiss?"

Keon:"I came to put the kids in the car, I was about to come back for you but you were kissing him....

Me:"I...he kissed me..

Keon(angrily):"you kissed him back!!

Me:"only for him to leave me alone!!

Keon:"so you kiss him!!!? I can't take this, I need time..."

Me:"please don't leave me, I only kissed him back to weaken him so he would let me go!! It didn't mean anything!!..."

He walks away from me as tears escape my eyes

Me:"Keon!!...

I run after him a bit and grab his arm but he yanks me off

Keon:"don't touch me! Look, there's just too much going on with your life at the moment, I thought I could support you but it just keeps getting worse..and the secrets!! The lies, once it's all out there's still more drama to follow and honestly, I don't want to put my child through this or my fragile heart, it's obvious Noah still carries your heart, who am I to compete with the father of your first born, your first love?.....

I feel my heart sinking to my knees

Me:"Keon please don't do this to me, don't make me go through this again....I love you, please, you breaking my heart, I'm sorry, I'm sorry my life is messed up, but I did warn you from the beginning, but you persisted, you supported me, you made me grow so fond of you and Kendall, please don't leave, I thought I'd never ever fall in love again I gave up on love.... please my heart won't take this"

Keon:"what about my heart Amahle? Ive also had my share of heartbreaks, it's not just about us but our kids as well, I'm sorry but Kendall will always come first...

Me:"I understand...so this is it? You leaving me?"

He looks at me with tearful eyes

Keon:"I just need some space and time to think about it...

Me(smiling hopefully):"does that mean you might give us another chance?"

Keon:"I don't know Amahle, we will see, please take Rain, we have to go"

I wipe my tears fixing my face and put on a smile as I open the car door

Me:"come boy let's go"

He gets out and attacks me with a hug

I hug him back confused as Kendall comes in and joins, I go on my knees so I can hug and squeeze them properly

Me:"what is this for?"

I look at them

Rain:"because you are sad"

Kendall:"we saw you crying"

Me:"aww babies I'm fine, I'm not sad anymore, thank you for making me feel better"

"Kendall, let's go home"

Kendall:"bye momma"

Me:"bye baby"

I kiss her cheek as she gets in the car and they drive off.

Rain and I walk back to the house

Rain:"what happened momma?"

Me(sighs):"a mess, a big fat mess"

Rain:"we should clean up"

Me:"you can go to your room I'll clean"

Rain:"but I want to help"

Me(blushing):"okay then go get the broom"

Rain:"okay"

Me:"be careful of glass!!"

.

.



.

Chase

.

.

.

We just finished making love as she was trying to catch her breath since I was doing all the pleasure for her

Lulama (heavy breathing):"babe! That was awesome! You keep getting better at this"

Me:" I'm glad you enjoyed it my love"

I pull her chin as we kiss but my phone disturbs us

Me:"let me get that"

Lulama:"okay you'll find me in the shower"

She winks, I smile and wink back biting my lip as I answer my phone

Me:"sup?"

"Hey babe, I was just checking on you"

Me:"you have to stop doing that"

"What? Why?"

Me:"because I'm a married man Bailey, and I'm always with my wife"

"But I thought she already knew about us? Aren't you divorcing her?"

Me(chuckles):"are you really this blond or you pretending? Why would I divorce my wife?"

"But you said! You said once I've left Lowell that we would be together! You said you'll divorce her after Christmas! You still are divorcing her right!?"

Me:"I do not remember myself saying that, I'm getting married to my wife again on Christmas, we renewing our vows, I promised to be faithful and be by her

side loving her till death do us part, not till Bailey do us part, now I'd appreciate if you stopped trying to

wreck my home and never call this number again"

"What!? Chase!? Are you drunk? Is she threatening you? You can't do this to me, you wrecked my home first!!....

Me:"goodbye love"

"Ch...

I hang up then block her number and go join Lulama in the shower

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

"I'm sorry!!....

I continue punching him over and over again, he was bleeding badly, I have lost myself in my anger and all I wanted to do was see him dead

Me(angrily):"you were going to rape her!! Who gave you that authority huh!! Who!!...you fucken kicked her while you knew she was pregnant with my baby!!, You son of a bitch, you going to die today!!....

I felt strong hands all over me pulling me off

Me(screaming):"leave me aloonne!!! Leave me before I kill all of you!!!"

I take my gun out and they all step back, all eyes in the club were on me as people had their hands up

Me:"this is my fucken club!! You don't put your filthy hands on me!! You don't do that!!! (Pointing on a man's forehead)

Do you understand!!!...

He nods repeatedly with fear in his eyes

Me:"I'll kill all of you, I'm not scared of any of you...(pointing at another man's forehead) do you want to try me!?.

He shakes his head continuously

I hold my head as it starts pounding painfully

Me (looking at weak bleeding Derek on the floor):"you!! I'm not done with you, your day is coming!"

I rush out of the building in need of air before I collapse

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

Me:"there you go"

I gave her a plate of food

She shakes her head pushing it away

Kendall (sadly):"I'm not hungry"

Me:"but you haven't eaten"

Kendall:"I'm not hungry dad"

Me:"okay fine, when you hungry you will find it in the microwave"

Kendall:"okay"

I sit down as she gets up heading upstairs

Me:"kendall wait!"

She stops and looks at me

Me:"come back here"

She walks back to me

Me:"sit"

She sits down

Me:"what's wrong? You are sad and you know daddy doesn't like it when you sad"

Kendall:"did you break up with Amahle?"

I sigh and brush my head

Me:"why do you say that?"

Kendall:"because she was hugging that other man who is the doctor that saved Rain's heart"

Me:"so you think I broke up with her because of that?"

Kendall:"I saw you two fighting outside the car, she was crying"

I look at her as the room falls silent

Me:" I think Amahle and Rain need their space, things are just complicated, I don't want us getting our hearts broken or putting you in danger"

Kendall:"danger of what? Amahle and Rain are nice people, they not dangerous, Rain said he can be my little brother and I'll be his big sister, we are best friends"

A smile creeps on my face

Me:"I know..."

She breaks into tears

Kendall(crying):"please don't break up with her, I love her, she is like my mother, she said I can also call her momma like how Rain does"

Me:"heeyy come here"

I take her to sit on my lap

Me:"don't cry, I'm not breaking up with her, I'm just giving her a little bit of space so we can think about a few things, but we will still be together again"

Kendall:"really?"

I pull her into my embrace

Me(sighs):"we can't force some things Kendall we have to let God guide us, sometimes God will make us leave things that makes us happy because they are not meant for us they are meant for someone else's happiness..."

Kendall:"but what about our happiness?"

Me:"he will lead us to that if we pray"

Kendall:"how come Amahle and Rain are not meant for us?"

Me:"maybe they are, we'll just have to wait on God and pray about it"

She buries her face on my chest, I hold her as she cries

Kendall:"I just wanted a mommy, why God doesn't want me to have a mommy who will do my hair nicely and play dress up with me..."

Me:"hey I do your hair and play dress up"

Kendall:"you a boy you can't do it nicely like Amahle and I"

Me:.....

Me:"come on it's bed time"

I pick her up as we head to her bedroom, after changing into her PJs, I read her a bedtime story

.

.

.

Thulile

.

.

.

I have packed all my clothes, I was going to sneak out again, this time I planned it clear fully, the car that's taking me is already outside, big daddy is not home so this is my chance.

I'm going back home, I don't care what mom does or how she'll continue surviving without me but I'm done with Joburg.

I get in the car and it speeds off

Me:"thank you so much for helping me"

He turns to look at me

Him:"no problem"

My heart drops as I notice it's not the guy who was supposed to help me, it was one of big daddy's men

Me(bursts into tears):"Noooooooooo!!"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were now sitting on the couch watching a cartoon movie called Sing

as I had my head on top of Rain's lap

while he was scratching my scalp, his hands made me feel relaxed...a lot was running through my mind, after everything that has happened today, I had a heavy heart I was feeling nothing but heart ache.

A part of me was disappointed in myself, I saw history repeating itself when Keon

threatened to leave me, and there I was

begging yet another man to stay in my

life. I promised myself I'd never put myself in that position again but I just did and I hate it. It was first Lowell who threw me out in the cold with all my bags and made me sleep outside, after I begged him, then it was Noah who left me in the woods after begging him to not leave me, Now it's Keon...

I do not want my son witnessing all of this, he is supposed to have a less dramatic life from me a less disappointing one but I guess anyone who is attached to me has to suffer with me, I wish I could protect him from all of this

"Momma?"

Me:"yes baby?"

Rain:"what was the doctor doing to you?"

I look up at him"

Me:"uhm why you ask that?"

Rain:"I saw him blocking you and you were crying, he was also crying, did he hurt you?"

Me:"No, no he didn't hurt me, we were just talking"

Rain:"he saw your boobs?"

Me:"momma's towel fell by mistake while we were talking"

Rain:"uncle Keon looked very angry at you"

Me:"you know how you sometimes fight with your friends but then you make up again?"

He nods

Me:"well, grown ups do that too sometimes and today was that day, but we will make up"

Rain:"okay, if he breaks your heart you should tell me, I will sort him out"

I laugh blushing

Me:"I will tell you"

Rain:"okay come back I was still playing with your hair"

I lay back on his laps as he continues playing with my hair

I'm so mad about how Noah handled himself today, couldn't he have approached me like a normal human being instead of invading my privacy, but then again Noah is not normal...he did it again he stole my happiness, he ruined my relationship, to be honest I was starting to love Keon very much, he is a good man, but I know every good person has their limit he was understanding of me and my life but after finding me with Noah like that, that was his limit, I would've probably reacted the same way had tables been turned, I just wish he would give us a chance.

I know, I have to help Noah but if he really wants my help, he'll have to humble himself and respect my life, he cannot be forcefully inviting himself in my private space and demanding to talk to me like he owns me, until he changes his attitude towards me I am not forced to helping him, he knows what he has to lose, it's his daughter's life in the line, I do not owe him any help, he owes his daughter her life so he should do things the right way, all that matters to me is my son, nothing else...with everything else it's honestly whatever happens happens as long as my son is still with me as my son

My heart starts pounding as I remember that he now knows the truth... Noah is capable of many things and I do not want Rain to experience his wrath.

He might tell everyone the truth.

I notice Rain has stopped massaging my scalp, I look up at him and he's fast asleep

I pick him up and go out tuck him in bed.



I switch off his light and make my way back to the lounge as I call Lowell

"Hello?"

Me:"Lowell"

"Hey babe What's up?"

Me:"he knows"

"Shit! How?"

Me:"he came here and everything went out of control, he knows Rain is his child, everything is just a mess, he will tell everyone"

"I knew it wouldn't take him long to find out once he's seen him, Don't worry I'll talk to him, I'll take care of it"

Me:"how?"

"Leave that to me"

Me:"okay"

I sigh and hang up

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"When I said "things can not get any worse"

life took it as a challenge" (Author)

Insert 119

•

•

•

- 
- 

[Few days Later]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I was back here again by the Mzimkhulu river near home, it feels so peaceful, I'm sitting next to it watching the water flow

it was sparkling and beautiful which drew me to it even more.

I stood up and went towards it until my feet were inside, I walked further inside until it was just my head sticking out, I hold my breath and swim deeper in the water until I reached the ground and there was no more water it was just a very beautiful land, I look up and the water was above me like the sky

I walked around there were beautiful huts and elderly men and women walking around and children playing,

I notice my grandmother's hut

She was sitting outside and came towards me and welcomes me with a hug

Gogo:"wamukelekile" (you are welcome)

Me:"gogo"

She leads me inside her hut that has candles all over

Gogo:"hlala phansi unethezeke ngan yam"

(Sit down and make yourself comfortable my child)

Me:"thokoza gogo"

Gogo:"thokoza"

Gogo:"ubukeka ukhathazekile"

(You look troubled)

Me:"Gogo, ngilahlekile angaz ukuthi ngenze njani, umoya wam udiniwe, futhi ngiyaz ukuthi lokhu engikugcine phakathi kwam akulungile, wangipha lesisipho ukuze ngisize abantu, kodwa lomuntu ekumele ngimsize ungiziswe ubuhlungu angikwazi nokumbuka emehlweni ngingavukelwa ulaka, uziphethe ngobudlabha futhi akazimisele ukuzithoba ucabaga ukuthi ungiiphethe ukuthi ngiyamkweleta, angimkweleti lutho mina gogo uLwandle! Uyena okweleta mina...(sighs)...bese kubekhona uMvula angifuni ukumzwise ubuhlungu abantu bakwaNhlabathi bonakele bangayiphuca ingane yami...ngyacela bandla gogo cela uLwandle athole usizo komunye umuntu, ngoba ngalendlela engizizwa ngayo ngaye, angiboni ngimnika usizo ngendlela efanele"

(Gogo, I am lost, I don't know what to do, my spirit is angry, and I know all this that I'm keeping inside of me is toxic, you gave me this gift so I could help people, but this specific person that I have to help has hurt me so much, I can't even look him in the eyes without awakening so much anger, he's arrogant and he's not willing to humble himself to me he thinks he owns me, he thinks I owe him, I don't owe Lwandle anything gogo, matter of fact he owes me! (Sighs) then there's Rain, I don't want to hurt him, the Nhlabathis are evil they capable of taking my baby, please gogo can Lwandle get help from someone else because the way I feel about him, I don't see myself helping him the way he needs)

She sighs shaking her head

.

.

.

Emma

.

.

I look at my bruised arm, chest and stomach it's little painful cuts

Me(sighs): "oh Noah, what did you get up to this time...."

I sometimes regret the blood covenant, I've grown to realize that I fell in love with a psycho, if I knew that Noah would change to be this kind of person, the man who abuses me physically and emotionally, I would've never tied my

life to him, he was never like this at first he was this fun sweet gentleman a bit of bad boy but not that deep, he made me fall madly in love with him until I was obsessed with his love for me I didn't want to ever lose him and the way women don't hide the fact that they want him even when he's walking with me in public, I couldn't allow that to happen I couldn't lose him to another woman so I did what I had to cause at that time he was still fooling around and was not looking for anything serious with me, but after I binded our lives he stopped loving me he became possessive of me, he asked me to leave my husband for him, I still liked it cause I love him but then he started showing a side of him that made me tolerate him and love him at the same time, now I regret binding us cause he hurts himself a lot and it affects me too, I can't even force him to stop cutting himself, he actually enjoys it but I don't, it's really painful.

It was now early in the morning and Noah never came back home, he left us here the whole day yesterday, he wasn't answering my calls or replying to my messages, this has been going on for a few days now. He brought us to his family but he leaves us here when he should be here with us for us to all bond as a family, it was embarrassing when his parents couldn't reach him and I didn't as well, his father already doesn't like me, he is not very good at hiding it and I think the kids can sense it too.

The worst part is that it's Christmas today.

I look at my baby who is sleeping peacefully, I don't know what is wrong with my baby at first I thought it was just a bad flue but now she's starting bad sores all over her body, it first starts of as if it's mosquito bites when it's still red and itchy then it turns into sores, this started yesterday

He makes his way in the bedroom in a dirty shirt drunk as hell, he stands by the door and just stares at me.

I feel the urge to shout and strangle him the way

I am so angered, Noah can really be inconsiderate sometimes I just don't understand him and how his mind works.

Me:"where are you coming from?"

Noah:"out"

He stumbles towards the bed and throw himself on it mistakenly hitting his head on the baby's head as she wakes up bursting into tears

Me(angrily):"Noah! What the hell man!"

I pick her up trying to calm her down while rubbing the part she got hurt in

Me:"Noah!"

I shake him but he is dozing off

Me:"we were supposed to take London to hospital yesterday but you decided to disappear for the whole day! She is getting worse, yesterday she hardly stopped coughing and crying...

He doesn't respond

Me:"Noah!! Do you even care about your child! It seems like since we've came here you couldn't care less about us, about London!"

Noah(sleepy tone):"london doesn't need the hospital....she..she needs...Ama....(mumbles)..

Me:"what!? What are you talking about?"

He remains quiet and I shake him but instead he starts snoring

I sigh as I keep moving up and down trying to calm London down

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Gogo:"engizokusho ukuthi ulaka lolu onalo alulungile kodwa ngiyazi ukuthi ukuziswe ubuhlungu, ekugcineni nawe uwumuntu kumele uzwe izinto ozizwayo. Kodwa ke uLwandle kumele asizwe nguwe, uzomsiza uma ezithoba akucele kahle axolise kwabakwa Mbokazi ngokushisa impepho namakhandlele axolise ngenhliziyo engadiniwe, axolisele lendlela ahlukumeze ingane yethu uMvula, nendlela akuphathe ngayo...uma ehluleka yilokhu ngikunika imvumo yokuthi ungamsizi, nonkulunkulu usiza laba abazithoba kuye usiza laba abazisizayo"

(All I'm going to say is the anger that you carrying in you is not good for you but I know that he has hurt you deeply, at the end of the day you also human you have to feel the things you feel...but as for Lwandle he has to be helped by you, you will only help him if he humbles himself to you and asks for forgiveness in a proper way, he firsts has to apologise to your ancestors using incense and candles he has to apologise wholeheartedly for the way he treated you and our grandson Rain...if he fails to do this you have my blessing to not help him, even God helps those who humble themselves to him those who help themselves)

Me:"thokoza gogo"

Me:"enye inkinga ngibona ongathi ufuna ukungimoshela izinto noweslisa enginaye, ufuna ukusihlukanisa ngoba ethi usangthanda, ngiyamthanda lobhuti angifuni ukuthi uLwandle angene phakathi kwethu, lobhuti ngibona ongathi

unezinhloso ezinhle futhi uzimisele ukungishada, kodwa inkinga manje uLwandle"

(Another problem I see is that he wants to ruin things between the man that I'm currently with, he wants to break us up because he still claims to love me, I love the man I'm with, I don't want Lwandle to come between us, I see this man has pure intentions with me and he might even marry me, but the only problem is Lwandle)

Gogo:"bayakuthanda bobabili labobhuthi kukwena ukuthi ukhetha bani phakathi kwabo, sizokwesekela noma ukhetha bani, kodwa qaphela isinqumo sakho ngoba bazokulwela, bakuthanda kakhulu futhi bobabili bafisa ukukshada...qaphela ngoba nje oyedwa unothando olungakulungele, uthando oluncolile...

(They both love you, it's up to you who you choose we will be by your side no matter who you choose, but be careful with your decision...these men will fight for you, they both love you dearly and they wish to marry you, be very careful because one of them has a very toxic love that is not good for you....)

Me:"omuphi lowo gogo?"

(Which one gogo?)

Gogo:"angikwazi ukuvezela lokhu, inhliziyo yakho izokuvezela, ukuthi uyayilandela kukwena"

(I can't reveal that to you, your heart will reveal it to you, it's up to you if you follow it)

Me:"what if I choose the wrong man?"

Gogo:"ezinye izinto kumele udlule kuzo njengabanye abantu, uzofunda phambili... "

(Some things you have to go through them like other people, you will learn as you go)

Me:"the toxic one has to be Lwandle, the Nhlabathis are all toxic and besides I don't have to choose, I love Keon now, Lwandle's time past he blew it, maybe some day we can be civil with each other but being together, I don't see a future with him anymore"

Gogo:"yenze lokhu okujabulisayo, mamela inhliziyoy"

(Do what makes you happy, listen to the heart)

\*\*

I open my eyes looking at my surroundings and I'm in my prayer closet

I must've feel asleep while praying last night. I get up and run to wake Rain up

Me:"Wake up!! It's Christmas!!..."

I jump on his bed as he sits up looking at me with a sleepy confused face while bouncing with the bed

Me:"Merry Christmas!!! Merry Christmas!! Wake up!!..."

He smiles

Rain:"mooom!!"

Me(laughing):"come jump with me"

He gets up and we jump together holding hands, I was getting tired so I fell on the bed while he continued

Me:"stop Rain"

Rain:"No get up, it's Christmas!!"

He gets on top of me and tickles me with his little hands, I laugh as I flip him over tickling him and he screams into cute giggles

Rain(laughing):"okay mommy stop!! I'm sorry!! Pleeese!!....I'm going to pee!!"

I stop looking at him



Me:"we have to hurry so we can get ready to go to granny's house for your Aunty's wedding"

Rain:"another wedding! I love weddings"

Me(laughing):"me too"

I piggy ride him to the lounge towards the Christmas tree

Rain:"presents!!"

He jumps off me running to the tree and starts shaking the boxes

Me:"calm down, they all yours"

Rain:"can I open them?"

Me:"we should have breakfast first"

He frowns sadly

Me:"I'm kidding, open up go crazy!"

He giggles excitedly tearing the wrapped box

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me(shouting):"I LOVE YOU!! I'M THE MAN THAT LOVES YOU!! WHY CAN'T YOU SEE THAT!! I FUCKEN LOVE YOU DAMNIT!!..."

Amahle:"No! You don't, You hate me, you've made my life a living hell, Now you about to make me lose someone that makes me happy!! You never want to see me happy, ever since I've met you you've put me through nothing but painful situations, even loving you was painful, happiness was always short lived!! Why do you hate me so much!! Let go of me Noah, look what you made

my child witness!! What is he going to think of me!?(defeated)...why can't you just let me go?"

I attack her with a kiss, she holds me back kissing me making me weak as my hands caress her body, her touch giving me goosebumps...

I pick her up as she wraps her legs around, my hard boner against her warm cooch is the best feeling in the world

The kiss gets heated as I move down to her neck her moans get me even harder

Amahle (breathlessly):"put it in Lwandle, I need you inside me"

I pull down my pants and massage my guy before brushing him against her wet pussy, I feel warmth as her walls hug my dick

Amahle (moaning):"aahhh yeahh....

Me(groaning):"oohhhh fuck baby you still feel like home...

"It's not your home anymore..."

I look at him as Keon points a gun at us, Amahle jumps off me

Amahle:"babe it's not what it looks like"

Keon:"shut up and get your ass here"

She runs up to him as he pulls the slide

Amahle:"don't kill him please"

Keon:"too late"

Rain:"Nooooo daddy!!"

He jumps towards me as the gun goes off and Rain falls to the floor

Me:"Nooooo!!!!

\*\*\*

I wake up panting desperate for air and sweating, I look around me and I'm in bed at home. I don't even know how I got here, I hold my painful head.

Emma makes her way in

Emma:"look who finally decided to wake up, where were you Noah we were supposed to....

Me:"Yoh Emma awumekancane please"

(Stop talking)

Emma (looking at my pants):"wow looks like you had a nice dream...

I look down at my hard dick pointing up

I hold it down as I walk to the bathroom Emma:"your baby is getting worse she needed you but you busy doing who know what with who, do you even care about London!? Cause since we've been here you've been paying her no attention, all you know is leaving and coming back late"

After washing my face and changing my dirty clothes I wrap a towel around my waist and head back to the bedroom

Emma:"did you see this? It's all over the internet"

She shows me a video of me at the club pointing people with a gun and beating up Derek

Me:"people can't mind their own businesses... when did this video link out?"

Emma:"today, Noah, what is wrong you? You know the police will be here to take you, we supposed to be taking London to the clinic"

Me:"Emma, calm your titties, London will get help, I'm still trying to talk to the doctor I know will heal her, she's just a bit mad at me, she's the only one who can help her"

Emma:"there are thousands of doctors what's so special about her?"

Me:"she's just special, trust me, London will get help, just be patient"

Emma:"patient? My baby is in pain and you telling me about patience for someone who doesn't want to help us?"

Me:"she will, London will be okay"

I kiss her lips

Me:"merry Christmas babe, want to join me in the shower?"

She smiles looking at me

Emma:"merry Christmas, I'd love to"

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

She looks at her present smiling a bit

Me:"well do you like them?"

Kendall:"yes daddy, thank you"

Me:"you don't sound happy though"

Kendall:"I'm happy dad"

Me:"come here"

She walks up to me and stands between my legs

Me:"come on baby, it's Christmas aren't you happy?"

Kendall:"Boity didn't visit this Christmas"

Me:"you know how her mother is, she refused for her to visit these holidays because they have an important ceremony they doing at her home"

Kendall:"I feel like I don't have a sister, she never visits"

My heart sinks

Me:"she's almost eighteen, she will come stay with us just two more years left"

Kendall:"I also miss Rain and Amahle"

Me(sighs):"I miss them too"

She sits on my lap and hugs me as she lays her head on my chest

Me:"tell you what, how about we go visit them for Christmas lunch?"

She gets up smiling excitedly

Kendall:"really!?"

Me:"she invited me for her sister's wedding, I will call her and tell her we will come"

Kendall (jumping):"Yess!! I'll go fetch your phone"

She runs up to go fetch my phone and comes back down within seconds

Kendall:"there you go"

I press on her number as she looks at me smiling

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

We were all having breakfast around the table at the parents house, mom was busy telling the boys about the mischief Noah and I used to get into when we were young, everyone was laughing.

There was someone at the door as the bell rang

Dad:"anyone expecting someone?"

We all shake our heads as I go open the door

"Hey"

Me:"Bailey?"

Bailey:"Lowell, I made a mistake, I'm sorry, please let me in"

I was about to answer her when a police car pulled up by the gate, I signaled for the security to let them in as they parked in front of the house

One officer came out towards the door

Officer:"good morning"

Me:"officer, is someone in trouble?"

Officer:"we here for Doctor Noah Nhlabathi"

"What's going on....."

I turn to look at him as he approaches from behind me

Officer:"Dr Nhlabathi, you are under arrest, if you could please come with us to the police station..."

He calmly walks up to them as they attempt to cuff him

Noah:"you don't have to cuff me, I'll go willingly"

He looks at me

Noah:"call my lawyer"

Me:"I will"

He gets at the back of the small car as it drives off

Bailey:"Lowell..."

Me:"look, I don't have time for this, I need to help my brother, so if you could kindly go back to wherever you coming from"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We were having our breakfast

Rain:" I can't wait to play my bike"

Me:"can you even ride a bicycle?"

Rain:"No, but you can teach me"

Me:"I'd be happy to"

My phone rings from the lounge

Me"Rain go get my phone for me"

He runs to the lounge to get it and hands it to me, my heart skips a beat as I notice the caller

Me:"hello?"

"Hey"

Me(low tone):"how you doing? It's been a while"

"I'm not okay, is the invite still valid?"

Me(smiling):"yes, it's still valid"

"Kendall and I will be there in a few"

Me:"oh my gosh really!?"

"Yeah we miss you"

Me:"we miss you guys too"

"Okay I'll see you in just now then"

Me:"okay, I love you"

"I love you too"

I hang up smiling like a retard

Rain:"was that uncle Keon?"

Me:"yes"

Rain(smiling):"they coming to spend Christmas with us?"

I nod

Rain:"yeeahh!"

Me:"okay we need to hurry and get ready"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Officer:"can you explain what was happened at the club two days ago?"

Me:"I don't have to explain anything to you without my lawyer"

Officer:"threatening people's lives with a gun and physically injuring someone is a serious crime Mr Nhlabathi..."

Me:"calling me Mr while I studied more than seven years for my doctor title is a serious crime Mr policeman..."

He frowns folding his arms looking at me, I look at him as I fold my arms and sit back on the chair

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"A silent night I know it's gonna be, joy to the world but it's gonna be sad for me..merry Christmas" (Author)



S2 finale

Insert 120

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

[A Week later]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Things have gone back to being normal,

It was nice having Keon and Kendall around again, they truly make our lives brighter and I'm so thankful for them.

It is the 31st of December and it is a very hot day today so we were at Keon's place so that we'd be able to swim and braai at his back yard. I usually spend New Year's Eve with my family and friends

but since I spent Christmas with them I just want to be with my little family today.

I was sitting by the pool chairs while watching Keon teaching Rain how to swim, while Kendall was swimming perfectly

Rain: "I'm scared"

Keon: "Don't worry I got you"

Rain:"you promise you will not let go?"

Keon:"I promise"

He lets his guard down as he relaxes his body to float

Rain:"I'm floating!! Momma look!!"

Me:"wooww that's so cool!"

Rain:"come swim with us mom"

Keon:"yes mom please come join us"

Kendall:"come on momma!"

Me(giggles):"okay! I'm coming"

I walk towards the pool and put my legs in first

Me:"it's cold"

Keon:"take your time baby"

He comes closer to me as I'm sitting on the edge of the pool with my legs inside

He pulls me in for a kiss as I bend over

Unexpectedly he pulls me into the water I scream at the coldness, holding my breath as we were under the water

Me:"aahhh why did you do that?"

I ask wiping my face using my hand

Rain (laughing):"hahaaaa uncle got you momma!!"

I look at them laughing at me

Me:"wow so much for family, I thought you had my back"

Keon:"I got your back"

He says holding me from behind, I turn to face him wrapping my arms around his neck

Me:"you a traitor"

We share a kiss as we swim to the corner of the pool in the deep end, he pulls me in between his legs with our bodies against each other

Keon:"so in a few hours you'll be officially 25"

Me:"yeah, I can't believe I'm almost thirty"

Keon(laughs):"you still far from thirty love"

Me:"I'm getting old"

Keon:"I'm ten years older than you, so don't tell me about being old"

Me:"yeah whatever"

Keon:"so while everyone was screaming haaapy new year!! You mom was screaming get her out of meee!!"

I burst into laughter

Me:"don't joke about my birthday like that"

He smiles looking at me

Keon:"Amahle"

Me:"yes?"

Keon:"I really appreciate you, and I'm so happy that you are a part of my life, you and Rain brighten up our world..."

Me(blushing):"I appreciate you too..."

Keon:"I hope and pray we will not let anything or anyone come between us"

Me:"nothing and no one will come between us...I promise"

He nods smiling, I cup his face kissing him

Me:"I love you"

Keon:"I love you more"

Rain:"catch!!"

He throws the ball at us as we throw it back and end up playing and passing it around

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

The charges that were laid against me were dropped apparently dad is close friends with the lieutenant and he got the charges to be dropped.

I was in the gym room blowing off some steam on the punching bag

I've been trying to reach out to Amahle but after she saw that video it just made her hate me even more, she doesn't want to hear from me, I don't know for how long is she going to pretend to be happy with that foreign nigger, I know I've hurt her but she can't have possibly completely stopped loving me, I mean I understand her anger but the hate, did I really do her that bad that she'd hate me so much, it's like she never loved me like I was imagining that love we shared years ago...

"Bro"

Maybe it wasn't as deep as I thought it was...

"Hey man..."

I truly thought we had some kind of connection, I guess I only felt it alone, maybe I was just a phase to her...

"Noah!..."

Can someone really hate someone they claimed to love even before they knew them this much?

I feel a hard punch across my face

Me:"what the fuck man!?"

Lowell:"that's for ignoring me after I called you more than five times"

I punch him back, he pushes me to the ground and we start wrestling

I was on my back while I had him from behind locked in my arms and legs as I strangled him, he was stuck unable to move until he tapped out

I let him go

Me:"I see you still weak"

Lowell:"you just caught me off guard, you already had time to warm up"

Me(laughs):"psh excuses, I'll forever be champion just accept defeat boy"

Lowell(laughing):"never"

We sit by the chairs in the balcony as I gulp down my cold water in a bottle and wipe off my sweat

Me:"wassup my boy?"

Lowell:"I just came to check up on you, are you okay?"

Me:"how can I be okay when my baby girl is rotting right before my eyes and I as a doctor cannot do anything about it, the only person who can help hates me with passion"

Lowell:"Amahle doesn't hate you"

Me:"you have no idea"

Lowell:"I know you Noah you probably didn't even ask her properly, you probably just went to her and expected her to fall for your charms like she used to and use them to make her weak and do anything you want from her, like how you've done to all the women in your life"

Me:"that's not true..."

Lowell:"you should find another way, make her see and understand why you need her help, humble yourself just for once in your life, it's your baby's life at risk here, lick and kiss her feet together with her boyfriend's if it needs be..."

Me:"suyahlanya ke I'm never kissing no niggas's feet..."

Lowell:"just put your child's life first, forget your pride and ego for just a few days and think about your baby girl"

I sigh

Me:"yeah you right...but there's just something about that guy, he's just too perfect for my liking, I don't trust him around my son or Amahle"

Lowell:"if there was something wrong with him Amahle would know, she's gifted remember?"

Me:"yeah but some things are not always seen spiritually sometimes you have to do your own digging, I will find out what are his skeletons and I'll dish them out to the world leaving him naked for Amahle to see him for who he truly is, he can't be that successful without something illegal on the side, he can't be looking like that and also be attending church on Sundays, he coincidentally like everything Amahle like including being God fearing whatever...no there has to be something wrong with him"

Lowell:"Noah just leave it, yes no body is perfect, we not perfect either, but that didn't change Amahle from loving you until you fucked up, let them be, he's not perfect he will fuck up at some point and they might break up...okay let's say you do find something on him, and you show Amahle, and she does break up with him, bit what if she moves on from him with someone else and she doesn't come back to you?...or what if she decides to forgive him and accept him the way he is? I've tried this with Lulama but look she just got married for the second time to that bastard...you can't force love man"

Me:"she will come back to me, once she finds that Keon is not the guy she thinks he is...I'll be there to give her a shoulder, like how I got her in the first place when you were messing up"

Lowell:"you seriously going to remind me of that?"

Me:"sorry, just an example, Amahle is my girl she always has been and always will be"

Lowell:"I hope you won't use Rain to get to her"

I look at him

Me:"Rain, no I won't use Rain, but I do want to have a relationship with him, he's my son and I want to get to know him"

Lowell:"you will but you have to keep up with the uncle title"

Me:"until when though? Amahle can't hide the truth forever, the boy has to know that I'm his father at some point"

Lowell:"you had a chance to do things your way and you decided to run, now it's not up to you anymore, with Rain's life we will do things Amahle's way, if she wants me to be Rain's father forever then that's how it'll be, you've disappointed Amahle and Rain once don't do it again by exposing the truth against her will, wait for her"

(Silence)

Lowell:"I hope we understand each other bro?"

Me:"yeah I get it"

Lowell:"good"

He gets up and leaves the room

I take my phone and make a call

"Awu Nhlabathi"

Me:"how far are you with the research, did you find anything?"

" a few things actually, you might wanna come see this, you were right this guy is not as perfect as he seems"

Me:"I'll be right there"

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

I was staring at him as he was busy grilling some meat, I was starting to question myself on the decisions I've made, this man has always been this

perfect loving person, sometimes I thought I didn't deserve him. But now that I know that he knew about the affair with Lowell all this time but kept it to himself and went ahead and avenged himself by having an affair with Bailey making her divorce Lowell only to ditch her and continue with me.

Bailey reached out to me and told me everything I told Lowell and he said he tried telling me...

Now it makes me wonder if does he already know that the baby is not his?

Chase:"there you go my love"

Me:"thank you"

I take my food and look at it

What if he knows that I know he knows

I feel like I don't even know him anymore, I wonder how many things he knows about me that he's never confronted me about but instead dealt with them behind my back

Chase:"babe?"

Me:"hm?"

Chase:"are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine baby"

Chase:"I know this year new year will be a little different because we have to babysit but in the next two years I promise it'll be be fun"

Me:"yeah"

He sits next to me and takes my food from me then puts it on the side as he turns me to look at him

Chase:"okay, talk to me love, what is eating you"

Me:"I don't want to go in the new year with lies, there's something I have to tell you"

Chase:"what is it?"

Me:"Owen is not your baby, it's Lowell's, I cheated on you, I'm so sorry..."



Chase:"You got pregnant for him?"

Me:"I'm sorry Chase, I thought I was careful but I wasn't, it was wrong to cheat and I'm so sorry, it only happened for a little while then I broke things off with him, I know what I did was very wrong and there's no good explanation on why I did what I did, but all I know is that I love you and I don't want to lose you"

Chase:"can I be honest with you"

I nod

Chase:"I knew you cheated on me, but I couldn't bring myself to confront you because I didn't want to lose you either, so I had an affair with Bailey to get back at Lowell for sleeping with my wife, the only difference between you and his wife is that his wife didn't love him enough to stay with him she fell for the other guy and left her husband for the side, but you gave up your side and stuck with your husband, when you gave birth I instantly knew it wasn't mine, I was very hurt but I couldn't bring myself to leave you, if you had kept this baby a secret I would've went and also had a baby with someone else outside, you see I fight fire with fire because I don't like using energy for arguments or changing relationships like I'm changing underwear, I only stick with one girl, I literally cannot move from one girl to the next unless they die like the last woman that I was with before you"

I look at his calm face and find myself fearful of him

Me:"I understand..."

Chase:"we will attend therapy and work on our problems, I'm never leaving you"

Me:"uhm..."

Chase:"promise me you will never leave me as well"

Me:"I...I promise I will never leave you"

He takes my hand

Chase:"let's just forget about this conversation for now as we about to celebrate the new year we will deal with everything else next year"

Me:"okay"

He pecks my lips and gives me back my plate

Chase:"eat up my love"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

He showed me his history there was not a lot of things he was a pretty clean, no illegal businesses, no shady reasons for being in South Africa, nothing, his two baby mamas, one left him for another man while the other also left him for another man, there must be something wrong with this guy for women to leave him for other men, maybe they both found out the truth about him and what he did

Me:"Amahle would never be with someone like this, once she finds out, she's definitely leaving him"

Man:"what if she doesn't?"

Me:"then he will just have to be involved in an accident and not survive"

Man:"will that make her suddenly love you though?"

Me:"do I pay you to ask me questions?"

Man:"no sir"

Me:"thank you"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

It was almost midnight and we had already set up the fireworks, I expected the kids to be asleep by now but I guess all the candy and the cold drinks they've been eating and drinking is keeping them up as they are all over, Theodore also came over cause he was wanted to come play with Rain

Keon:"few more minutes to your birthday"

Me:"and a new year"

He sips on his beer before kissing me

My phone disturbs us

Me:"hello?"

"There's something I have to tell you"

Me:"why can't you just stay away from me!?! Please stop with this already"

I hang up, Keon looks at me

Me:"I'm sorry, he keeps contacting me with different numbers"

Keon:"this guy will never be out of our lives will he?"

Me:"maybe I should get a restraining order"

Keon:"nah that won't work, not for someone who can fool the law just like that, you know if only I knew something about him, something that would send him for many years in prison, in that way he will be out of our lives for a long time and we'll get to be together freely without him harassing us everywhere we go, demanding to talk to you"

Me:"by sending him to jail though? Isn't that a little extreme?"

Keon:"I mean this guy does not see me at all he doesn't respect you or our relationship, he calls you whenever he wants to call, you know he's sent me pictures of you and him from back when you were together kissing and all that stuff...and the video he...."

Me:"video? What video?....

Keon:"there's a video he sent of y'all kissing and cuddling while talking to the camera about being together forever, he's been trying to get to me and I never complained I just deleted everything to not give him the satisfaction of fighting with you over the past, he's just a bitter ex, but it does hurt me to see those things I don't wish to know what you two shared and he's rubbing it in my face"

Me(angrily):"oh my Gosh!! I can't believe he did that! I don't believe Noah, who does he think he is!? I swear to God I'm going to give him a piece of my mind, he likes doing this he loves playing with people's emotions! He doesn't care for anyone, you see why I don't want him near my child!? He'll influence him to be just like him! He'll use him against us, my anger for that man just keeps growing it's like he keeps blowing on the fire to rise!!...

Keon:"you see why we need him in jail? You keep saying the Nhlabathis are evil people and you are not surprised charges against him were dropped because they have friends in high places, do you maybe know of anything whether it's a business or something he's done that you have evidence that would land him in jail"

There are a lot of things I know that could land Noah in jail, actually that would land all the Nhlabathis in jail

and the proof...

Me:"that would land Noah in jail?"

Keon:"yes baby, anything at all, he needs to stop thinking he's superior than everyone, that video was nothing, I need something deep something the public will not let go until justice is served and he's locked up..there has to be something"

Noah is not my favorite person but snitching is something I've never thought of doing to him, maybe sending him to jail will be good, he will never bother us again...I mean my loyalty for Noah should've stopped the day he left me like I was a disgusting bag of trash after brutally fucking me almost to death

I don't owe him any loyalty, do I?

Me:"uhm...I don't know...

Keon:"come on babe, think... anything at all?"

My heart beat starts pounding

Me:"well there is something.....

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"Loyalty isn't grey, it's black and white, it's either you loyal completely or not loyal at all" (Sharnay)

S2 finale

Insert 120

•

•

•

•

•

[A Week later]

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Things have gone back to being normal,

It was nice having Keon and Kendall around again, they truly make our lives brighter and I'm so thankful for them.

It is the 31st of December and it is a very hot day today so we were at Keon's place so that we'd be able to swim and braai at his back yard. I usually spend New Year's Eve with my family and friends

but since I spent Christmas with them I just want to be with my little family today.

I was sitting by the pool chairs while watching Keon teaching Rain how to swim, while Kendall was swimming perfectly

Rain: "I'm scared"

Keon: "don't worry I got you"

Rain: "you promise you will not let go?"

Keon: "I promise"

He lets his guard down as he relaxes his body to float

Rain: "I'm floating!! Momma look!!"

Me: "wooww that's so cool!"

Rain: "come swim with us mom"

Keon: "yes mom please come join us"

Kendall: "come on momma!"

Me (giggles): "okay! I'm coming"

I walk towards the pool and put my legs in first

Me: "it's cold"

Keon: "take your time baby"

He comes closer to me as I'm sitting on the edge of the pool with my legs inside

He pulls me in for a kiss as I bend over

Unexpectedly he pulls me into the water I scream at the coldness, holding my breath as we were under the water

Me:"aahhh why did you do that?"

I ask wiping my face using my hand

Rain (laughing):"hahaaaa uncle got you momma!!"

I look at them laughing at me

Me:"wow so much for family, I thought you had my back"

Keon:"I got your back"

He says holding me from behind, I turn to face him wrapping my arms around his neck

Me:"you a traitor"

We share a kiss as we swim to the corner of the pool in the deep end, he pulls me in between his legs with our bodies against each other

Keon:"so in a few hours you'll be officially 25"

Me:"yeah, I can't believe I'm almost thirty"

Keon(laughs):"you still far from thirty love"

Me:"I'm getting old"

Keon:"I'm ten years older than you, so don't tell me about being old"

Me:"yeah whatever"

Keon:"so while everyone was screaming haaapy new year!! You mom was screaming get her out of meee!!"

I burst into laughter

Me:"don't joke about my birthday like that"

He smiles looking at me

Keon:"Amahle"

Me:"yes?"

Keon:"I really appreciate you, and I'm so happy that you are a part of my life, you and Rain brighten up our world..."

Me(blushing):"I appreciate you too..."

Keon:"I hope and pray we will not let anything or anyone come between us"

Me:"nothing and no one will come between us...I promise"

He nods smiling, I cup his face kissing him

Me:"I love you"

Keon:"I love you more"

Rain:"catch!!"

He throws the ball at us as we throw it back and end up playing and passing it around

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

The charges that were laid against me were dropped apparently dad is close friends with the lieutenant and he got the charges to be dropped.

I was in the gym room blowing off some steam on the punching bag

I've been trying to reach out to Amahle but after she saw that video it just made her hate me even more, she doesn't want to hear from me, I don't know for how long is she going to pretend to be happy with that foreign nigger, I know I've hurt her but she can't have possibly completely stopped loving me, I mean I understand her anger but the hate, did I really do her that bad that she'd hate me so much, it's like she never loved me like I was imagining that love we shared years ago...

"Bro"



Maybe it wasn't as deep as I thought it was...

"Hey man...

I truly thought we had some kind of connection, I guess I only felt it alone, maybe I was just a phase to her...

"Noah!...

Can someone really hate someone they claimed to love even before they knew them this much?

I feel a hard punch across my face

Me:"what the fuck man!?"

Lowell:"that's for ignoring me after I called you more than five times"

I punch him back, he pushes me to the ground and we start wrestling

I was on my back while I had him from behind locked in my arms and legs as I strangled him, he was stuck unable to move until he tapped out

I let him go

Me:"I see you still weak"

Lowell:"you just caught me off guard, you already had time to warm up"

Me(laughs):"psh excuses, I'll forever be champion just accept defeat boy"

Lowell(laughing):"never"

We sit by the chairs in the balcony as I gulp down my cold water in a bottle and wipe off my sweat

Me:"wassup my boy?"

Lowell:"I just came to check up on you, are you okay?"

Me:"how can I be okay when my baby girl is rotting right before my eyes and I as a doctor cannot do anything about it, the only person who can help hates me with passion"

Lowell:"Amahle doesn't hate you"

Me:"you have no idea"

Lowell:"I know you Noah you probably didn't even ask her properly, you probably just went to her and expected her to fall for your charms like she used to and use them to make her weak and do anything you want from her, like how you've done to all the women in your life"

Me:"that's not true..."

Lowell:"you should find another way, make her see and understand why you need her help, humble yourself just for once in your life, it's your baby's life at risk here, lick and kiss her feet together with her boyfriend's if it needs be..."

Me:"suyahlanya ke I'm never kissing no niggas's feet..."

Lowell:"just put your child's life first, forget your pride and ego for just a few days and think about your baby girl"

I sigh

Me:"yeah you right...but there's just something about that guy, he's just too perfect for my liking, I don't trust him around my son or Amahle"

Lowell:"if there was something wrong with him Amahle would know, she's gifted remember?"

Me:"yeah but some things are not always seen spiritually sometimes you have to do your own digging, I will find out what are his skeletons and I'll dish them out to the world leaving him naked for Amahle to see him for who he truly is, he can't be that successful without something illegal on the side, he can't be looking like that and also be attending church on Sundays, he coincidentally like everything Amahle like including being God fearing whatever...no there has to be something wrong with him"

Lowell:"Noah just leave it, yes no body is perfect, we not perfect either, but that didn't change Amahle from loving you until you fucked up, let them be, he's not perfect he will fuck up at some point and they might break up...okay let's say you do find something on him, and you show Amahle, and she does break up with him, bit what if she moves on from him with someone else and she doesn't come back to you?...or what if she decides to forgive him and accept him the way he is? I've tried this with Lulama but look she just got married for the second time to that bastard...you can't force love man"

Me:"she will come back to me, once she finds that Keon is not the guy she thinks he is...I'll be there to give her a shoulder, like how I got her in the first place when you were messing up"

Lowell:"you seriously going to remind me of that?"

Me:"sorry, just an example, Amahle is my girl she always has been and always will be"

Lowell:"I hope you won't use Rain to get to her"

I look at him

Me:"Rain, no I won't use Rain, but I do want to have a relationship with him, he's my son and I want to get to know him"

Lowell:"you will but you have to keep up with the uncle title"

Me:"until when though? Amahle can't hide the truth forever, the boy has to know that I'm his father at some point"

Lowell:"you had a chance to do things your way and you decided to run, now it's not up to you anymore, with Rain's life we will do things Amahle's way, if she wants me to be Rain's father forever then that's how it'll be, you've disappointed Amahle and Rain once don't do it again by exposing the truth against her will, wait for her"

(Silence)

Lowell:"I hope we understand each other bro?"

Me:"yeah I get it"

Lowell:"good"

He gets up and leaves the room

I take my phone and make a call

"Awu Nhlabathi"

Me:"how far are you with the research, did you find anything?"

" a few things actually, you might wanna come see this, you were right this guy is not as perfect as he seems"

Me:"I'll be right there"

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

I was staring at him as he was busy grilling some meat, I was starting to question myself on the decisions I've made, this man has always been this perfect loving person, sometimes I thought I didn't deserve him. But now that I know that he knew about the affair with Lowell all this time but kept it to himself and went ahead and avenged himself by having an affair with Bailey making her divorce Lowell only to ditch her and continue with me.

Bailey reached out to me and told me everything I told Lowell and he said he tried telling me...

Now it makes me wonder if does he already know that the baby is not his?

Chase:"there you go my love"

Me:"thank you"

I take my food and look at it

What if he knows that I know he knows

I feel like I don't even know him anymore, I wonder how many things he knows about me that he's never confronted me about but instead dealt with them behind my back

Chase:"babe?"

Me:"hm?"

Chase:"are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine baby"

Chase:"I know this year new year will be a little different because we have to babysit but in the next two years I promise it'll be be fun"

Me:"yeah"

He sits next to me and takes my food from me then puts it on the side as he turns me to look at him

Chase:"okay, talk to me love, what is eating you"

Me:"I don't want to go in the new year with lies, there's something I have to tell you"

Chase:"what is it?"

Me:"Owen is not your baby, it's Lowell's, I cheated on you, I'm so sorry..."

Chase:"You got pregnant for him?"

Me:"I'm sorry Chase, I thought I was careful but I wasn't, it was wrong to cheat and I'm so sorry, it only happened for a little while then I broke things off with him, I know what I did was very wrong and there's no good explanation on why I did what I did, but all I know is that I love you and I don't want to lose you"

Chase:"can I be honest with you"

I nod

Chase:"I knew you cheated on me, but I couldn't bring myself to confront you because I didn't want to lose you either, so I had an affair with Bailey to get back at Lowell for sleeping with my wife, the only difference between you and his wife is that his wife didn't love him enough to stay with him she fell for the other guy and left her husband for the side, but you gave up your side and stuck with your husband, when you gave birth I instantly knew it wasn't mine, I was very hurt but I couldn't bring myself to leave you, if you had kept this baby a secret I would've went and also had a baby with someone else outside, you see I fight fire with fire because I don't like using energy for arguments or changing relationships like I'm changing underwear, I only stick with one girl, I literally cannot move from one girl to the next unless they die like the last woman that I was with before you"

I look at his calm face and find my myself fearful of him

Me:"I understand..."

Chase:"we will attend therapy and work on our problems, I'm never leaving you"

Me:"uhm..."

Chase:"promise me you will never leave me as well"

Me:"I...I promise I will never leave you"

He takes my hand

Chase:"let's just forget about this conversation for now as we about to celebrate the new year we will deal with everything else next year"

Me:"okay"

He pecks my lips and gives me back my plate

Chase:"eat up my love"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

He showed me his history there was not a lot of things he was a pretty clean, no illegal businesses, no shady reasons for being in South Africa, nothing, his two baby mamas, one left him for another man while the other also left him for another man, there must be something wrong with this guy for women to leave him for other men, maybe they both found out the truth about him and what he did

Me:"Amahle would never be with someone like this, once she finds out, she's definitely leaving him"

Man:"what if she doesn't?"

Me:"then he will just have to be involved in an accident and not survive"

Man:"will that make her suddenly love you though?"

Me:"do I pay you to ask me questions?"

Man:"no sir"

Me:"thank you"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

It was almost midnight and we had already set up the fireworks, I expected the kids to be asleep by now but I guess all the candy and the cold drinks they've been eating and drinking is keeping them up as they are all over, Theodore also came over cause he was wanted to come play with Rain

Keon:"few more minutes to your birthday"

Me:"and a new year"

He sips on his beer before kissing me

My phone disturbs us

Me:"hello?"

"There's something I have to tell you"

Me:"why can't you just stay away from me!? Please stop with this already"

I hang up, Keon looks at me

Me:"I'm sorry, he keeps contacting me with different numbers"

Keon:"this guy will never be out of our lives will he?"

Me:"maybe I should get a restraining order"

Keon:"nah that won't work, not for someone who can fool the law just like that, you know if only I knew something about him, something that would send him for many years in prison, in that way he will be out of our lives for a long time and we'll get to be together freely without him harassing us everywhere we go, demanding to talk to you"

Me:"by sending him to jail though? Isn't that a little extreme?"

Keon:"I mean this guy does not see me at all he doesn't respect you or our relationship, he calls you whenever he wants to call, you know he's sent me pictures of you and him from back when you were together kissing and all that stuff...and the video he....

Me:"video? What video?....

Keon:"there's a video he sent of y'all kissing and cuddling while talking to the camera about being together forever, he's been trying to get to me and I never complained I just deleted everything to not give him the satisfaction of fighting with you over the past, he's just a bitter ex, but it does hurt me to see those things I don't wish to know what you two shared and he's rubbing it in my face"

Me(angrily):"oh my Gosh!! I can't believe he did that! I don't believe Noah, who does he think he is!? I swear to God I'm going to give him a piece of my mind, he likes doing this he loves playing with people's emotions! He doesn't care for anyone, you see why I don't want him near my child!? He'll influence him to be just like him! He'll use him against us, my anger for that man just keeps growing it's like he keeps blowing on the fire to rise!!...

Keon:"you see why we need him in jail? You keep saying the Nhlabathis are evil people and you are not surprised charges against him were dropped because they have friends in high places, do you maybe know of anything whether it's a business or something he's done that you have evidence that would land him in jail"



There are a lot of things I know that could land Noah in jail, actually that would land all the Nhlabathis in jail

and the proof...

Me:"that would land Noah in jail?"

Keon:"yes baby, anything at all, he needs to stop thinking he's superior than everyone, that video was nothing, I need something deep something the public will not let go until justice is served and he's locked up..there has to be something"

Noah is not my favorite person but snitching is something I've never thought of doing to him, maybe sending him to jail will be good, he will never bother us again...I mean my loyalty for Noah should've stopped the day he left me like I was a disgusting bag of trash after brutally fucking me almost to death

I don't owe him any loyalty, do I?

Me:"uhm...I don't know..."

Keon:"come on babe, think... anything at all?"

My heart beat starts pounding

Me:"well there is something.....

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"Loyalty isn't grey, it's black and white, it's either you loyal completely or not loyal at all" (Sharnay)

Insert 121

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Me:"there's something I might know...."

Keon:"what is it babe?"

Me:"uhm...."

Rain:"the countdown started momma!!"

Keon(smiling):"we'll talk later"

He takes my hands and helps me up

"10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1 HAPPY BIRTHDAY!!"

Me(laughing):"New year you were supposed to say new year first!"

Rain:"it's your birthday mom, you getting old"

Me:"yey! What do you know about getting old"

Kendall:"I think you still beautiful even if you getting old"

Me(laughing):"ayibo these kids! I don't know if that was a compliment or shade, but thank you baby"

Theo:"you getting younger mom"

Me:"that's why you are my favorite"

Rain:"but I thought I'm the favorite!"

Kendall:"I'm the girl so I'm the favorite"

Me(laughing):" you all my favorites!"

Keon:"group hug"

We all share a hug

Me:"okay let's blow up these fireworks!"

Keon:"I need you three to go stand near the house as far away from the fireworks as possible"

Kendall:"whoa look at that one"

We look up at the beautiful fireworks as we go lit up ours

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

We were watching the fireworks in the sky while sipping on beers, I could feel myself getting intoxicated by the alcohol

Me:"baby"

Chase:"yes love"

Me:"let's go have new year's sex"

He smirks looking at me before licking his lip

Chase:"you mean some birthday sex"

Me(giggles):"yeeah"

I place my hand around his neck and pull him in for a kiss as the kiss deepens he takes off my clothes and I take off his

My phone keeps ringing but we try to avoid it until it becomes annoying

Me:"eish let me just get it"

He moves away from me and sits back as I answer the unsaved number

Me:"hello?"

"Please check your emails now, and once you done run far away from that monster, meet me at my place before the end of today, if you not here I will come get you, I know that you gave birth to our son, I will protect you, whether you like it or not, whatever it takes"

Me:"you can't....(call ended)

I look at the screen in disbelief

Me(whispers):"what the hell?"

Chase:"who was it?"

I look at him

Me:"uhm I don't know, it was just one of those insurance people I don't even know where they got my number"

Chase:"hm I see, we should get back to where we left off..."

He kisses me but fear overwhelms my heart as I push him away

Me:"I'm sorry I'm not feeling well..."

Chase:"what's wrong?"

Me:"I think I drank too much, I feel like vo...."

I cover my mouth

Me:"let me rush to the bathroom I'll be right back"

Chase:"I'll come with you..."

Me:"No you don't have to...(smiles)...I need to find you back here completely naked and hard for me"

He blushes showing his cute smile

Chase:"as you wish"

I rush inside the house and head straight to our office room, I take my laptop and switch it on.

It takes a while to completely switch on

as it loads, I look at the door hoping he doesn't come in as I tap my foot on the floor while tapping my fingers on the table

It finally switches on and I head straight to my email and open the files Lowell sent to me

I scan through them, the pictures, the videos...my heart feels like it's about to pop right through my chest as I cover my mouth and tears roll down my face

"Babe!?!....

I quickly close the laptop with my shakey hands and put it back in the draw as I rush towards the door and run to the bathroom

"Babe what's taking you so long...

I come out of the bathroom and we bump into each other by the door

Chase:"there you are...

My whole body is shaking I'm scared for my life, I thought I knew him, I do not know this man in front of me

Chase(concerned);"heey babe, are you okay? You sweating and you shaking"

Me(stummers):"I I I'm fffine.... iiits just the alcohol, I think I wasn't supposed to drink that much, specially since I just gave birth....

Chase:"yeah probably, you even crying, aww baby you going to be okay, come I know just the thing that'll help...

Me:"No uhm I think I need to sleep, yes, I should go to bed and just sleep it off...

Chase:"but..I thought we were still going to celebrate and have some fun...

Me:"I'm sorry babe, but I'm really not feeling well and I just feel like I should rest, besides I have to wake up in the morning and go celebrate my mine and my sister's birthday, I don't want to miss it"

Chase:"I understand, you go to bed, I'll clean up before coming to join you"

Me(shakey):"ookay"

My emotions are running wild and anger is slowly consuming me, a frown welcomes my face as I walk upstairs to the bedroom

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I couldn't even pretend to be happy that it was a new year, London has turned into something I can't recognize, I cannot stand Emma everytime I see her I feel like killing her, the only thing keeping her alive is the fact that we are binded.

I left the house, I didn't want to ruin everyone's good mood and celebrations.

Today is Amahle's birthday, I've missed out on so many years of their lives and I hate myself for it but I can't have them hate me too, winning her heart was so much easier when I was still the good guy who wanted nothing but the best for her, I fucked up and now she can't even stand me, I believe it's that idiot that's influencing her behavior, Amahle is a naturally good and forgiving person but she's just blinded by the new dick, she's not even thinking about her child, I know I did her wrong but doesn't she think that Rain needs me, hell I need him, but I can't have him without her, I need them both, they my family....

I park outside the gate

Security:"are you an expected visitor?"

Me:"I am Mr Adomako's business investor, not just any investor but one of the big investors I came to inform him about something very important about the company, I'm thinking of pulling out of the company I need to urgently talk to him, if I don't talk to him now he might not get another chance to change my mind"

Security (troubled):"No okay let me open the gate I'm sure the boss wouldn't like that"

He presses the remote and the gate slides open

Me:"very well sir"

I drive in and park outside his house next to his lambo, I finish off the bottle of beer before stepping out, it's a pretty sophisticated bachelor pad two story house

I see him through the transparent glass door coming towards the door as I wait for him to open

Keon(angrily):"what are you doing here, leave before I have you thrown out!"

Me:"calm your testosterone, I'm not here for you, I'm here for my wife, you know the one you busy healing for me, yeah I need to talk to her about our future"

Keon:"you know if I could shoot you right now, you'd be the one in trouble for trespassing?"

Me:"shoot me? Oh yeah that would be easy for you because that's what you good at"

"Baby look what the kids did to m....Noah?..."

Her eyes land on mine as she walks towards us from the back

Keon:"your husband is here to talk you"

Amahle:"What are you doing here!?"

Me:"I need to talk to you"

Amahle:"you can't just force your way inside people's property uninvited!! Have you completely lost your mind!?"

Me:"if you were not pushing me away everytime I try to communicate with you I wouldn't have to meet up with you like this"

Amahle:"I don't have to communicate with you, I don't wish to talk to you! Can't you get that through your thick skull!"

Me:"Why!? I need you Amahle, I can't let you be with this phony!"

Amahle:"phony!? Keon is the most genuine person I've ever met, more genuine then you ever will! I've never met such an honest loving loyal person in my entire life of existence!"

Me:"Lies!! You have and that person was me!! All I've ever done was love you! I made a mistake leaving you but it was because I loved you"

Amahle:"Stop lying! From the very first time I stepped foot into Joburg you had a plan to destroy my life! At the club!! What did you do to girls including me!! When I was out of the club you made plans to ruin my life...."

Me:"I cancelled all of that when I fell for you!..."

My head starts pounding painfully as I feel my anger rise

Amahle:"No you didn't, you continued until the very end when I was dancing to your melody, you left, not only did you leave you continue hurting me from a distance...."

Me:"AND I'M SORRY!!..."

Amahle:"Get out..."

Keon:"you heard the wife, out!"

I march up to him and grab him by his vest, he punches me causing me to stagger back

Me:"I might be bad but he's worse!! Do you even really know this guy? Has he really told you everything about himself?"

Keon:"I'm calling security"

Amahle:"please"

Me:"he's not the man you think he is Amahle, he hasn't been completely honest with you...."



.

.

.

Emma

.

.

.

Mrs Nhlabathi:"it's almost sun rise let us go to bed"

Mr Nhlabathi:"that is a good idea, good night everyone"

Brian:"good night"

Me:"good night"

They walk to their rooms

Brian:"mom?"

Me:"yes sweetie?"

Brain:"when are we going back home?"

Me:"soon, why?"

Brian:"I just miss home and dad, I want to go visit him before school opens"

Me:"you will go, don't you like it here"

He shakes his head

Brain:"no, I don't feel welcomed, I don't think they like us, this place is just cold, there's no homely warmth"

Me:"oh.."

Brian:"it's a very nice crib though, I'd like a place like this when I grow up, goodnight mah"

He gets up and heads to the bedroom, Yasmeeen was long asleep

I also go to the bedroom. I don't bother myself with Noah anymore, he is never here and looking at my daughter breaks my heart.

She starts coughing, I go check on her

I scream as I see mucus coming out of her mouth and nose...

I panic and take her cloth wiping it before taking her as she was trying to cry but couldn't cause her breath was blocked and she wasn't breathing properly

Me:"we going to the hospital, don't worry baby you will be fine...oh God please let my baby live"

I pick her up as I grab my purse and head to the master bedroom knocking at their door

"Come in"

I let myself in

Me:"please, i need to rush London to the hospital!..."

They quickly get up as we all head out to the car and speed off to the hospital

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"he killed his brother, his own blood and flesh! He's a murderer! Did he tell you that!!..."

She looks at him as he stands there shaking his head

Amahle:"I know, he told me, and that is non of your business"

I try to say something but words fail me and a tear escapes my eye I quickly brush it off, I feel like she just struck a sword into my heart

Me:"wh wh what? You knew?..."

Amahle:"yes, and if you did your research properly you'd know that his brother was a drug addict and a criminal who's been in and out of jail, he needed money for drugs and he threatened his family with his gang, his mother was shot by him but she survived she has the scar to prove it, if Keon didn't get there in time and shoot him, he wouldn't have any parents, it was self defense, I'm sure you also found that when you were digging him up?"

She was right I didn't think he shared that with her, I guess he was perfect after all

Amahle:"you had no right digging up his past like that, you know very well your past is not that perfect either, you know you such a toxic person, you just go around trying to break and hurt everyone trying to turn them to being like you because you don't want to be the only broken one the only toxic one, the only crazy one, I can't believe I thought you were different, that it was just Nessa messing with your head, but now you've exposed yourself, your love was no different from Lowell..."

Me:"don't compare me to Lowell..."

Amahle:"yes I will! Abuse is not only physical, what Lowell did to me physically cannot compare to what you did to me emotionally, spiritually, just because the wounds you left are not visible for the whole world to see, but they are much worse than the wounds Lowell inflicted...."

She walks towards me and spits at my shoes

Amahle:"get out of my sight Noah, before I throw up...."

My heart sinks to my knees, I hold in my tears to not break down in front of them as I turn shamefully and walk out

.

.

.

\*\*

"Maybe I'm damaged if I do, but with every other beat I got left in my heart, you know I'd rather be damaged with you" (Author Meat Loaf)

Insert 122

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I watch him as all his pride and ego comes crumbling down, the hurt in his eyes, he was defeated. I was too furious to care how he felt it couldn't be worse than how I've suffered because of his decisions how Rain suffered, but a part of me broke seeing the glasses in his eyes seeing him shattered like that, I felt bad and kind of regretted my words.

I startle as I feel a hand gently rub my back

Keon:"are you okay love?"

I look at him

Me:"do you think I'm a bad person?"

Keon:"of cause not, you put him in his place, that boy has no respect for you

he needs to be bought down from his high horse, who does he think he is trespassing into my property and making demands, not once has he asked to talk

to you properly all he knows is following you around and ambushing your private time"

Me:"I can't believe he dug up your past like that"

Keon:"he will do anything in his power to break us up,I expected this from him, your husband is crazy"

I look at him

Me:"my husband?"

Keon(laughs):"that's what he calls you, his wife"

Me(chuckles in disbelief):"that's why he feels like he can do anything even breaking the law just to see me unhappy"

Keon:"you see why he should be locked up? Maybe that will humble him, all he cares about is having you back in his arms, he doesn't care about his children, he's not even asking for a relationship with his child or even concerned about seeing Rain..babe, let's send this man away, he clearly doesn't care about anyone but himself"

Me:"can you just stop!..we not sending anyone to jail!"

He removed his hand from me looking at me

Me:"I'm sorry, I didn't mean to snap, but we can't send him to jail babe, it'll just make things worse, he's Rain's father after everything and one day Rain will know, I can't do that to Rain I've already lied to him for so long, I know the truth will be fully out in the future nothing stays hidden forever, if we send Noah to jail his family will come after me, only God knows what they'll do to me, we are not sending Noah to jail and that's final"

Keon:"okay, do you have any other ideas on stopping all his tantrums? Because I don't know how much more of them I can take, you think I enjoy seeing you two pouring your hearts out at each other, reminding each other of how much you loved each other, the more you fight the clearer it is that you two still love each other and I'm only human Amahle, there's only so much I can take, put your anger aside and answer me truthfully, do you still love Noah?"

Me:"you seriously going to ask me this again when I've already answered you?"

Do you see me entertaining Noah and going around following him and throwing tantrums at him or it's the other way around...

Keon:"you not answering my...

Me:"mxm I don't have the energy for this I'm going to bed, this day has already been ruined!"

I rush up and head to the bedroom

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was driving back home shattered to the core, I used to love how Amahle was an accepting person, she accepted people no matter their differences and imperfections, but right now I've never hated a trait in her more than I hate this one for accepting that nigger despite his imperfections, if she could accept him then that means there's nothing special about me, there's nothing that she gave to me that was different to what she gives everyone else, I took her hate for me for granted to a point where she spits on me I must really disgust her.

My phone rings disturbing my thoughts

Me:"Emma"

"London is in hospital, she was struggling to breath"

Me:"which hospital?"

"Yours"

Me:"I'll be right there"

This was bad this was very bad, I can't afford to lose London I won't be able to live with myself for failing her

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

I went back to the back by the pool, the kids were still playing kicking the ball to each other

Me:"hey guys it's bed time!"

Kendall:"aawww but daddy we..

Me:"No kendall!!, it's already way past your bed time, new year is over now we will continue later in the morning"

Rain:"okay, can I have the last slice of pizza!?"

He runs up to the pizza box

Theo:"I want the last slice"

Kendall:"me too!!"

Me:"no one is having the last slice it's bedtime"

Rain:"but I asked first...

Me(shouts):"I said No Rain!! You not having pizza!! It's bedtime!!"

He gasps and bows his head shamefully

Me:"Now everyone to bed!"

They all walk sadly inside the house

I take the halfway empty glass of wine and gulp it down before throwing the glass angrily on the floor

I look up and notice Amahle shadow disappearing back inside the room from the balcony. I sigh and head to the kids bedroom, they were sitting and talking in their beds

Me:"hey guys"

They greet me except for Rain who turns his back the other way

I sit on the bed

Me:"I came to apologize for raising my voice at you I was out of line, I didn't mean to make you sad"

Kendall:"sorry for making you angry daddy"

Theo:"and sorry for not listening"

Me:"it's okay as long as we all sorry and we forgive each other, it's fine"

Kendall:"say sorry Rain"

Rain(sobbing):"I want my momma"

Me:"come on buddy, tell you what, you can have the last slice of pizza"

Rain:"I don't want it, I want momma"

Kendall:"don't cry Rain momma is sleeping we will see her in the morning"

He covers his face and continues crying

I rub his back

Me:"I didn't mean to raise my voice at you, you know that I love you right? You my son and..."

Rain:"you not my daddy, I'm not your son, I want my momma"

Me(sighs defeated):"okay you can go to your momma"

He gets up and runs out the room

Me:"okay you guys have to sleep now, I will see you in the morning okay"

Theo:"okay"



I kiss kendall on her forehead and Theo as well before switching off the lights closing the door and head to the bedroom

I find them cuddling under the covers with Rain giggling while Amahle was whispering things to him

I clear my throat and she removed the cover from their faces

Me:" what's going on up here"

Amahle:"nothing"

Me:"I'm going to freshen up"

Amahle:"okay"

I look at her for a while before heading to the bathroom

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"where's my baby!?"

Emma:"they still trying to open her airway, there was so much mucus it was even dry deep in the nostrils, and her sores are very bad, they were starting to stink, gosh my baby is rotting right in front of our eyes"

I feel the urge to slap her across the face cause this is all her fault and that dead ghost Vanessa

Me:"I'll go check on her"

I ask a nurse to direct me to the ward she was in

I found her lying there covered in bandages with pipes inside her nose, her eyes were so swollen that they couldn't open

Me:"can I have a moment alone with her"

They leave the room as I stand next to her bed looking at her tiny body.

I take her little hand into mine, I brush her soft curly hair, my lips tremble as I can't take the pain in my chest anymore

I break down into tears

Me(crying):"I'm so sorry baby, I'm sorry for bringing you into my fucked up world, God knows I want nothing but the best for you, it's okay, I will get you the help you need, you the only person that matters to me right now, I'll fight for you, I should've done that from the beginning but I was selfish, I wanted it all..."

I get on her bed and cuddle her

Me(crying):"daddy's here for you, please forgive daddy and hang in there just a little while longer, I'll fix it, I'll fight for you, no matter what it takes... whatever it takes..."

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

He was not sad anymore but cheerful and giggling as we kept playing and talking

Me:"you feeling better now baby?"

Rain:"yes"

Me:"what happened why were you sad?"

Rain:"uncle Keon shouted at me, he was mean and gave me evil eyes"

Me:"were you being naughty?"

He shakes his head

Me:"okay, I'll talk to him so he will never do that okay?"

He nods

Me:"do you think you can go sleep with other kids?"

He shakes his head

Rain:"I want to sleep with you"

Me:"okay, you can sleep here"

He hugs me as I kiss his forehead

He makes his way in the bedroom already dressed in his briefs while shirtless as he gets in the covers

Me:"uhm Rain wants to sleep with me"

Keon:"cool"

He makes himself comfortable in the covers

Me:"did you hear me? Rain is sleeping with me"

Keon:"and I'm also sleeping with you on my bed, if he likes sleeping with you then he doesn't mind us three sharing the bed"

Me:"it's fine, we'll go to the couch then"

Keon:"Rain, go sleep with other kids I need to talk to your mom"

Me:"no we will talk in the morning, Rain is sleeping with me"

Keon:"Rain"

Rain gets up and looks at me with a sad face

Me:"go to the other room I'll be right there"

Rain:"okay"

He gives me a long warm hug before heading out of the bedroom

Me:"what the hell is wrong with you?"

Keon:"look I admit I did snap at the kids earlier because I was in my feelings but I did apologize for it, they all forgave me except Rain"

Me:"because you were extra harsh on him and for what? Pizza!? Something we can order at anytime, you deprive my baby of pizza!?"

Keon:"I didn't deprive him, it was the last slice and they all wanted it, you expected me to only give it to Rain while the others watched?"

Me:"you could've cut it for them to share"

Keon:"I apologized and offered him the pizza but he didn't want it anymore, Rain is just being difficult because he knows I'm not his father and you will choose him over me anytime, almost every time I visit he becomes this moody over little things specially when it's towards bed time because he wants to cuddle with you and hates to see you cuddle with someone else"

Me:"he is my child he can cuddle with me anytime he wants to cuddle he doesn't have to fight for his spot with a grown ass man, you supposed to be understanding, you know how kids are, even kendall fights me for your attention, it's kids, but never take out you bad mood on my child, I don't care how mad you are, do you understand me?"

Keon:"I don't know what you want me to say because I apologized (sighs) I'm sorry, I will never raise my voice at Rain even if he is rude and being naughty I'll be nice"

I sigh and sit back on the pillow folding my arms

(Silence)

Keon:"I don't think we can make this work, if I have to walk on egg shells with raising Rain the way I do with kendall and I have to give him extra special treatment because he's not my child then I'm sorry but he will never respect me, he'll grow up having a close relationship with the Nhlabathis and become disrespectful and arrogant just like them towards me, and not only me but you too, you keep spoiling him and treating him like a little baby all the time not disciplining him when he's wrong, you will have a big problem when he grows up to be a man, I've seen many boys who were egged by their mothers who abuse their mother's now and it'll be too late to discipline a grown man...I'm sorry Amahle but you have to make a decision, are we one family or are we still

two different families? I cannot treat my kids differently, I cannot love Kendall more than Rain or treat Rain different from Kendall because I love you wholeheartedly and I love your child the same way I love mine wholeheartedly because I believe we are one family and it's easy to love Rain because I love you...but if I'm going to be crucified everytime I raise my voice, or become a bit mad at him for doing something I asked him not to do, then I don't see us working out as a family"

I look at him

Me:"I hear you...."

Keon:"thank you I'm glad we understand each other and I'm sorry about suggesting we send his father to jail, it was a bit extreme, I just don't want anything coming between us, and the way he's going on digging up my past like that, I feel like this man would go as far as killing me to get to you"

Me:"I understand why you suggested that you only trying to protect our relationship, I will talk to him, he will stay away, don't worry"

Keon:"I will trust you for now, but if he continues I'll also have to fight back I won't just sit back and watch him destroy us"

Me:"I will take care of it, it doesn't have to get to that"

Keon:"I know he hurt you deeply, but you can't make me pay for his sins, you hurting and you are shutting me out, you can't even trust me around Rain, but I've proved myself countless times that I truly do care for Rain as my own, but you've built this big wall around you two that even Rain doesn't wanna break free from"

Me:"I'm sorry you feel that way, I just don't want anyone hurting me or my baby"

Keon:"I would never do anything to hurt you or Rain or Kendall, I love you"

Our eyes lock as I look deep into them and I suddenly develop this trust for him

Me:"...."

Keon:....

Me:"I love you too"

Keon:"okay then, let me kiss"

I lean closer and we share a kiss, as he holds me tightly on against his body, he tickles me causing me to burst into laughter

Me(giggling):"keoooo stoopp!"

He gets on top of me and caresses my body

Me:"let me go talk to Rain quickly I'll be back"

Keon:"okay"

He continues kissing me making it a long struggle to get off the bed

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

It was in the early hours of the morning and Chase was fast asleep

I packed my little weekend bag with a few clothes and my baby's bag.

I have already put our bags in the car and I tip toed back in the bedroom for my baby

I carefully pick him up praying that he doesn't cry, he makes baby sleeping sounds

Me:"sshhh"

I head out to the car and put him in his baby seat buckling him up as I struggle with the belts

Me:"shit shit shit come on"

I finally buckled him up as I close to door and turn to go to the front..

I startle as I find Chase standing by the door shirtless with his arms folded looking at me, I heart beats so fast as I fail to keep up and I immediately start sweating as I feel warm liquid slide down between my thighs

Me(shaking):"Ch Ch Chase...

Chase:"leaving so soon?"

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"If you never heal from what hurt you, you'll bleed on people who didn't cut you"

(Unknown)

Insert 123

.

.

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

.

.

Me:"damn baby, you scared me!"

Chase:"why are you sneaking out? And where are you taking the baby?"

Me:"I'm not sneaking out.. I I was just, we were going to fetch Theodore, Amahle said he was crying for me last night"

Chase:"oh okay, why you taking the baby though?"

Me:"because, I didn't want him to wake up and I'm not there to breast feed him"

He looks at me with a frown for a while

scanning me up and down

Chase:"did you just pee on yourself?"

Me:"what?"

I look at my legs

Me:"No, how did that happen?"

Chase:"babe are you sure you okay? You've been acting weird since last night, who called you last night?"

Me:"I told you it was just one of those insurance people...I really have to get going"

Chase:"I will drive you"

Me:"you don't..."

Chase:"I want to, I will drive you, bring the baby inside and change those wet pants while I also freshen up"

He walks back inside the house

I let out a sigh relieved as I turn to unbuckle the baby then we head inside the house.

Well this was an epic fail

.

.

.



Amahle

.  
. .

We were all having breakfast, it was nice and everyone was cheerful. Everyone except for Rain who was moody and not eating his food

Keon:"Rain"

He looked up at him

Keon:"aren't you going to eat your food boy?"

Rain:....

He continues playing with his food

Keon:"come on, momma used her energy to prepare this delicious food for us and put her love in it too"

I smile at him then look at Rain who pays him no mind

Me:"Rain?"

He looked up at me

Me:"Rain?"

Rain:"mom?"

Me:"eat your food"

Rain:"I'm full"

Me:"you full? What did you eat?"

Rain:"I'm not hungry"

Me:"do you want to eat with a belt next to you?"

He shakes his head as he takes bites of his food

Me:"good boy and whoever finishes their food will get to choose any candy they want"

Kids:"yeeyi!!"

Theo:"I'm going to finish first!"

Rain:"No I will"

Kendall (mouthful):"I'm done!!"

Me:"whoa you got beaten by a girl boys"

Rain(mouthful):"only because I have you a head start"

Keon:"no talking with food in your mouth guys, table manners"

I look at him as he takes my hand and kisses it

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was leaning against my car outside the hospital as I had just came back from freshening up and changing into clean clothes.

I just finished typing a message to Amahle crossing fingers that she responds, this was not about her and I anymore but it was more for London I needed my baby alive.

I just can't lose her I'd lose a big part of my heart I've become way too attached, she's the only thing that made sense in my life that gave me sanity and peace, if I lose that then I might just as well be Vanessa's playground and a place for witches to dance as they please freely.

There won't be a purpose for living anymore since I've clearly lost both Amahle and Rain, I messed up and

I don't think she'll want to help me anymore and I can't blame her.

I put my phone in my pocket and walk back to inside the hospital building

.  
. .

Lowell

.  
. .

I was pacing waiting for Lulama to contact me or to pull up at the gate as I kept checking. I knew Aiden was good at what he does but I didn't think he was this good, and how he found all that out about Chase, I'm seriously going to kill that psycho white ass bitch for doing what he did to Lulama, turns out Aiden knew the guys Chase worked with to kidnap Lulama, they used work closely with the O'Briens.

All this time Amahle warned her about him but she never paid much attention neither did I cause I had my own problems not knowing that whatever affects Lulama affects me, I've tried running away from it and blocking it but up until now what I felt for her years ago instead of disappearing it grew even deeper and this time I'm taking what's mine, I mean it can't be a coincidence that in all the years I've been with many women it never worked out I was never emotionally connected to any of them, with Bailey I tried, I really cared for her after a very long time I cared for another woman other than Lulama years together forgiving me for all my bullshit but the minute I marry her she leaves me without thinking twice for Lulama's husband, and then she gives birth to my baby boy...I might suck at this life thing but even a blind man wouldn't miss this sign.

I try calling her but she was not picking up, I won't be surprised if Chase is already on her tail and knows about the emails as he's keeping tabs on her.

If she's not here in the next hour, I'm going to get her myself

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"ohh look who's here!"

We share a hug and I peck the baby

Lulama:"hey sis, you called for me to fetch Theo cause he was crying for me"

Me(confused):"I called you?"

Lulama:"yes thats why we here to fetch Theo because he was crying for me last night"

Chase makes his way inside, I look at Lulama in the eyes and I can sense her fear, she's trembling, her heart beat is load

Me:"ohhh yeah, I even forgot I called you because I managed to calm him down and he was fine again, forgot to tell you"

Lulama (chuckles nervously):"oh okay..."

Me:"yeah but you have to stay over for our birthday party later on"

Chase:"oh no we already had plans for her birthday"

Me:"but she's my sister, it's our birthday, besides you had her for the entire holidays, you just had a wedding the whole of Christmas day was about you guys, so can I just have my sister for our birthday"

Lulama looks at him

Lulama:"please baby, I'll be home before midnight, I promise"

They gaze into each other's eyes as she brushes his head

Chase:"fine, I'll come fetch you later then"

Lulama:"thank you honey"

They kiss

Chase:"let me babysit the baby"

Lulama:"no we will not be going out we'll spend the day here so I can take care of him"

Chase:"babe, I want you to fully enjoy your day, the five bottles are full of milk it will last for a day until you get back, this is the time you have fun freely and enjoy yourself, besides I want to bond with my son"

He takes the baby and heads out

She looks back at me

Lulama:"shit!"

I go close the door and lock it before walking to the lounge

Me:"and then? What's going on?"

Lulama:"you were right Amahle, everything you've ever said about him you were right, the day...that day when..."

Me(astonished):"oh my God!..."

I squeeze her in a hug as she breaks down

Lulama:"it all makes sense now, the nightmares! They were not just dreams! That's what he did to me..."

Me:"how did you find the truth!?"

Lulama:"Lowell sent me everything, it was him, he's a bad person! He's not sweet he's bad bad bad!! And now he has my baby and I think he knows I was trying to run away"

Me:"oh my God, we will find a way to go get your baby"

Lulama:"I need to go to Lowell right now, he will make a plan, it's his baby, we were supposed to meet before the end of today at his place"

Me:"okay I'll drive you let me go let Keon and the kids know I'm leaving..."

I grabbed my car keys and phone before going to announcing that I was leaving

Keon:"where you going"

Me:"I'll explain later babe, it's a family emergency"

Keon"okay then drive safely"

We kiss before rushing out and we drive to Lowell's place

I dial his number

"Babe?"

Me:"Lulama and I are on our way"

"Oh thank God, I was getting worried"

Me:"but the baby is with Chase at home he insisted"

"Shit! I'll have to go get him"

Me:"you will get yourself killed, you have to plan this strategically or else blood will be spilt, you have to be careful, Chase is not as weak as you think he is, he is very dark, he will destroy, don't come at him anyhow"

"Okay, I hear you"

Me:"open the gate"

The gate opens as we drive through to the house

Lulama:"thank you so much"

Me:"you acting like I'm leaving, I need to hear the plan"

I look at my phone as another message comes through.

I open it

"Hi, it's Noah..."

I sigh closing my eyes as I do not wish to carry on reading

"I know I'm the last person you want to hear from, but I just wanted to say sorry, for the way I've been acting for the past weeks, I now understand that you have moved on and I want to say I'm happy for you I really do but I can't, I hope you understand. I was hoping we could please put our differences aside and help me on a professional level with your gift, I come to you as a client and a concerned parent who's child's life is at risk, please can we meet up for consultation, I would say when you free but I need you as soon as possible, my baby girl is in hospital fighting for her life and you are the only person who can help, please do this one thing for me and I promise you, I will never bother you again"

I press on the image and my heart breaks into a million pieces at the horrific sight of the little girl

I send him message

(Me):"bring the child at my place ASAP I will help you"

Lulama:"are we going in or what?"

I startle looking up at her

Me:"uhm, you go and discuss this with Lowell I know he can help you, I have somewhere I need to be"

Lulama:"okay I understand"

We share a hug before I drive out of the gate and speed off to my place

.

.

.

Thulile

.

.

.

I was isolated in a cold room and physically punished for trying to escape they were not having mercy on me this time I could slowly but surely feel my body giving up, I wanted to die, I wanted them to give me just one hard punch across my face or even a bullet on my chest and be done with me, I desperately needed to dies

Me:"pl please, kill me"

Sandiso:"asizuzwa ngawe, mkhipheni! She's had enough"

(We won't be told by you, take her out)

They take me out of the cold room and take me back to my luxurious bedroom

I hate the sight of luxury, I never thought I'd hate anything related to being rich so much something I used to be so desperate for I now wish I never had it.

All I wanted was death, I needed to die, I needed to feel the pain of my soul separating from my flesh. I just wish I could get a chance to apologize to Amahle for the way I treated her, putting her down just to prove that I was better than her, but I wasn't I was just plain stupid I should've done things differently.

I can't go on anymore

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Blowing off someone else's candle, doesn't make yours shine any brighter "

(Author)

Insert 124

•

•

•

•



•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Luckily I had my spare keys in my car since I didn't take my purse.

The security let me in

Me:"sawubona bhuti"

Security:"yebo sawubona sisi"

Me:"can you please let in the Mercedes G wagon that will come in after me after a few minutes"

Security:"okay mam"

Me:"unamadredz umpof uzombona"

(He light skinned with dreadlocks, you'll see him)

She nods agreeing

I continue driving in and get in the house, I go to my bedroom and put on my appropriate traditional praying clothes

with a doek to cover my hair

•

•

•

Lulama

•

.

.

Me:"what are we going to do?"

Lowell:"I'll get my guys we'll go fetch the baby"

Me:"Chase already knows, he will kill my baby should you do anything to him, I think I should just go back so that we can sneak out properly maybe after a few days when he's not suspecting anything anymore, he'll be going out to work, he's not going to keep me hostage

because I don't know anything"

Lowell:"you not going back there, I'm going to go fetch my baby myself, does he know it's mine?"

Me:"yeah I told him yesterday"

Lowell:"all the more reason I go fetch him, tonight I'm going to fetch him"

Me:"I'm coming with you"

He holds my hands

Lowell:"No, it's too dangerous, you stay"

Me:"No I'm not staying, I'm going with you"

Lowell:"Lulama this is not the time to be stubborn don't make me tie you up"

Me:"my baby needs me, if anything happens I want to be there I'm going to fetch my baby whether you like it or not"

He looks into my eyes for a moment

Lowell:"you still very stubborn..."

Me(looks down):.....

Lowell:"okay we'll go together"

Me:"I didn't need your permission"

He chuckles and smiles staring at me

.  
. .  
Keon

.  
I was sitting at the chairs near the pool doing some work while the kids were all over the place playing, I was up and down making important business calls

Me:"what happened to that deal of the largest Africa bridge that's going to be built South Africa towards the Eastern Cape?"

"We won the deal it's ours..."

Me(smiles):"oh that's good news..."

"Yeah but we'll be sharing it with another construction company"

Me:"aah why! Which company is that?"

"It's called The Soil constructures owned by Lowell Nhlabathi"

Me(sighs):"a Nhlabathi again, these Nhlabathis are everywhere"

"What do you mean?"

Me:"I'm currently in a relationship with a woman who has history with Noah Nhlabathis"

"Noah Nhlabathi the surgeon?"

Me:"yes that one, they are just bad news, I've always avoided business with them, now this girl has a child with him so he'll be in our lives forever, the worst part is that I really love this chick, if she was just any other girl I would've ditched her the minute she mentioned Nhlabathi, but...."

"She got you whipped"

Me:"Gosh she's amazing, I've never felt like this in a long time"

"So what are you going to do? About the Nhlabathis?"

Me:"what can I do, Amahle has a child with them"

"Get rid of the surgeon then"

Me:"how? I tried to bring up the idea of locking him away but she's not having it"

"Of cause she won't have it, which baby mama would wanna send their baby daddy to jail? I'm shocked you asked for her permission"

Me:"you don't understand, I don't want anything jeopardizing this relationship, I've been hurt so many times I can't lose her too, I have no luck when it comes to relationships"

"You see that's why women leave you, you ask for permission, if there's something on the way of your happiness and peace you get rid of it on your own as a man"

Me:"nah I'll just leave it, if she leaves it's fine maybe I'm just cursed, I should just learn living happily with my daughter and protect her from all this heartbreak outside people will come with"

"So this means the baby daddy is not giving you much problems"

Me:"eyi he's becoming a nuisance my guy, it takes a lot in me to not bust a cap through his head, he's everywhere we go he demands talking to Amahle, sending me pictures of them I don't know what he's trying to achieve, he even went as far as coming to my house last night exposing my dirty laundry to Amahle, my honesty saved me cause she already knew... what he did last night really got to me, he's provoking me"

"Then get provoked my guy!! You are too soft I would've long dealt with the niggas he'd be history as we speak, he came to your house! Uninvited!? To claim your woman!? That's pure disrespect he needs to be taught a lesson does he think he's God or something?"

Me:"if Amahle wasn't there, God knows the sin I would've committed"

"You have to leave your God aside sometimes and be your own man, God is for women who can't protect themselves, deal with this doctor and come back and apologise to God later, he's a forgiver right?"

Me:"don't talk about my God like that, that is more disrespect than what the doctor did, respect my religion please"

"I say unleash the old Keon for a while and deal with this niggas before they take your woman, then you can go back to this goody too shoes guy you've changed to that women walk all over and take for granted, you really disappoint me when it comes to relationships, but with business you make people bow before you, take that authority and put it towards your relationships too, women are not attracted to men who are too nice anymore, they'll dump you because you are too good or too loving, if you don't act fast you'll lose the girl cause baby day is surely acting and which women does not want to be with the mighty Nhlabathis? Think about it, bye!"

He hangs up, I sit down and sigh thoughtfully.

Rain:"can you please open this for me"

I look at him as he hands me the bottle of coke

Me:"did you ask for this?"

Rain:"momma let's me take whatever I want I don't have to ask"

Me:"okay, but in this house you ask for permission to have something before you take it, just in case it was put there for someone else okay?"

Rain:"can I please have coke?"

I smile

Me:"yes you can have some"

I open it for him

Rain:"thank you"

Me:"come sit here boy"

He sits next to me

Me:"I know uncle Keon does things differently from momma or your daddy, but you should know that every house has different rules, not everything that you allowed to do in momma's place you will be allowed to do in other houses, so to be a good respectful boy, you have to have manners and ask nicely for

something and if you can't have it, you don't shout and demand for it because that is not respectful, I know you still very young and you probably don't understand this but just know that I don't hate you okay?"

He nods

Me:"I really like you and I wish you were my son cause you so smart and funny and you are such a good brother to kendall and she loves you so much, momma and I are different, and we deal with things in different ways, sometimes my voice gets loud when you do something naughty and I shout, that just means you need to stop doing that and listen to what I tell you as an adult, it does not mean that I hate you or want to harm you, you are my child I'd never harm you, that's why I apologized yesterday because I do not like to see you sad, okay?"

Rain:"mom also shouts at me sometimes and puts me in the naughty corner when I'm naughty"

Me:"you see, but she still loves you and gives you many cuddles right?"

He nods and drinks his cold drink

Rain:"yes"

Me:"my man, get in here"

We fist bump and I tickle him making him giggle as he became cheerful with me again

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I had London discharged and we were driving to Amahle's apartment, I couldn't waste another second, with the way she feels about me I didn't want her changing her mind.

I park outside the gate

Me:"hey I'm here for..."

Security:"Dr Mbokazi yes you are expected you may drive through"

Me:"oh okay, thank you"

I drove through and parked next to her car as I took London from the backseat  
and we went up to her place

I knocked a few times

"I'm coming!"

I waited for a few seconds before she unlocked and let me in, she is wearing her  
traditional praying attire, she looks like someone who's about to be paid lobola,  
our eyes locked

Me:"good afternoon"

Amahle:"Afternoon"

Me:"thank you for inviting me over"

Amahle:"I'm doing this for your daughter"

Me:"yes of cause I wouldn't wish you do it for anyone else"

Amahle:"this way"

She leads the way to a spare room which had all her traditional things in there.

Amahle:"please sit"

Me:"on the floor?"

She looks at me raising her brow

Me:"okay"

I sit down and she lits up the candles

She had a basin of water then she also burnt incense and

Amahle:"can I have her?"

I handed the sleeping baby to her as she gently carried her in her arms and started at her, then she smiled a bit

Amahle:"she's very beautiful"

How can she see her beauty when she's covered in sores and swollen

Amahle:"you have very strong genes, she looks like you"

Me(smiles):"thank you"

Amahle:"what's her name?"

Me:"London"

She looked at me for a while then her smile disappeared

She closed her eyes and started praying, she started calmly then get deeper as tears streamed down her face pleading with her ancestors and God, it was like she was begging for london's life

She kept sprinkling some water on her

Then one of the candles blew off she stopped and looked at it with teary eyes

Me:"what's going on?"

Amahle (bursts into tears):"Nooooo please gogo...."

All the candles went off as she closed her eyes clearly in a lot of pain

Amahle:"please wait in the lounge"

Me(worried):"is everything okay?"

Amahle:"in the lounge Noah"

I got up and left her with London as I started pacing around the house

I could hear her praying and crying out loud in prayer I even got goosebumps and started feeling uncomfortable as I could feel something powerful, I'm not sure if it was the holy spirit or what but there was a greater force present in the house and it sent shivers down my spine.

After what seemed like hours she called me back in



She handed London back to me, I looked at London who had woken up with her eyes a bit opened and she smiled at me

She looked a lot better her eyes were not that much swollen anymore although the sores were still there

London:"Dada..."

Me(smiling):"yeah it's daddy"

London:"Dadi..."

I look at Amahle who's wiping her tears

Me:"So? What happened? What did you see?"

Amahle (sighs):"you need to ask for forgiveness from my ancestors because they are not happy with you and they'll refuse to help you until you ask them for forgiveness..."

Me:"okay, I can do that, just tell me how"

Amahle:"you have to get some incense, white and yellow candle, then you talk to them asking for forgiveness, then you come back next weekend so we can drive to KZN where I will cleanse you from the curses cast upon you by your current wife and your deceased wife and your father's side chick"

Me:"I see, I will do as you ask"

Amahle:"Lowell also needs cleansing but on his own, you can't do it together"

I nod

Me:"so after I've done all this, will my baby girl be healed?"

She nods

Amahle:"yes, she will be healed"

A smile of hope welcomed my face as I looked at London

Me:"you heard that baby, you going to be okay"

After a long time since we've got to Joburg she laughs happily

Me:"thank you so much Indy, you have no idea how much this means to me"

She looks at me with a sad faint smile

Amahle:"you welcome, I will see you next week"

Me:"are you okay sweetheart?"

Amahle (sniffs):"I'm fine, you can leave now"

I frown looking at her confused

Me:"okay, I guess I'll see you next week"

I get up with London and we head out

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

The sun had now gone down and it was dark outside

Me:"you ready?"

Lulama:"yeah, he's been calling me, I told him I'll be home in a few hours but he says the baby doesn't want to stop crying"

Me:"well then let's go get our baby"

We got out the car

Lulama:"you wait here I'll go in first"

Me:"No Lulama, you not even supposed to be here"

Lulama:"we don't want him suspecting more, you heard what Amahle said this man is dangerous, he doesn't know I know anything yet he's just suspecting, I'll go in and act normal so I can feed my baby, while I'm breast feeding I'll send

him to get me food in the kitchen, then I'll text you when he's at the kitchen so you can then come in and shoot his leg or something then we calling the cops"

I nod.

She has no idea that I'm here to kill Chase dead, he's a goner jail will be too lenient on him

Me:"please be safe"

Lulama:"I will"

Me:"can I at least get a hug first"

We share a hug as I bury my head on her neck kissing it, she breaks the hug and I steal a kiss on her lips, she looks at me for a while with fear in her eyes

Lulama:"of anything happens to me, I want you to know that I lied"

Me:"about what?"

Lulama:"about the girl in me that died, about that girl who used to write poems for you, the girl who sneaked out just to go spend time with you in the car parked outside my home until we fell asleep, the one who shared her dreams with you, the one who captured our special moments we had because she wanted to keep the memories to last forever, the girl who was madly in love with you...she's not dead, she's still alive and she still feels the same, she's just been lost"

Me:....

Lulama:"if I don't message you in thirty minutes to forty minutes, an hour latest, come in"

She kisses my cheek and gets off the car into the gate not giving me a chance to say something

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"People will forget what you said, people will forget what you did, but people will never forget how you made them feel"(Unknown)

Insert 125

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Lulama

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

When I got in the house the baby was fast asleep, he told me he finally managed to get him to sleep, I kept on checking if he was really sleeping and not dead but he was breathing, I just hope he didn't put anything poisonous for my baby.

We were cuddling on the bed, I couldn't even send Lowell a text to come in cause he was all over me, I've never felt so much fear being in this man's arms, he always managed to make me feel so safe, but now I felt like it was a matter of time before he strangles me

I couldn't stand being in his arms anymore so I quickly broke out of his embrace

Me:"okay we need to talk"

Chase:"okay but why are we being jumpy about it"

Me:"I know what you did, I know everything about you, all the dirty things you did to me, the people you work with and what they do to women"

He looks at me with an emotionless expression

Me: "I'm taking my kids and we leaving tonight, I can't spend another minute with you, you made me believe that nothing happened the night I got kidnapped and gang raped that it was all in my head, for the past six years I've been having nightmares about something that really happened but you kept feeding my pills telling me it's just a dream, you were part of that gang weren't you? How could you do that to someone and then live with them, marry them and go on as if nothing ever happened"

Chase: "babe..."

Me: "don't babe me..."

Chase: "you don't understand..."

Me: "I understand, I understand that you a monster"

Chase: "Lulama, let's not act irrationally, why would I do such to you, have I ever acted in an odd way that made you doubt my love for you? I've never not even once laid my hands on you because I care for you that much and I would never want to hurt you..."

He walked towards the baby's cot

Chase: "what I did to you was wrong but baby I was only showing you what those girls that you used to sell went through, if you leave me I have all the proof of the bad things you did, I was only doing it for justice for my cousin precious instead of being mad at me you should thank me for helping you get your karmar quicker, because if you had waited for the universe to give you your karmar you'd probably be still suffering even today, I made life easier for you I gave you love and support, I helped you go through that dark path of your life, we built a beautiful future together and had a handsome boy, you cheated on me I found out and got a little mad but I took care of it in a way that satisfied me then I remarried you to remake the vows that you broke, don't ruin the good thing we have going because of something that happened six years ago"

Me: "you are a sicko, in your sick mind you think all of that is okay!? You've manipulated me played God with my life, if you really loved me you would've never did what you did"

Chase: "I love you!! I wasn't going to make you go through that had precious not wanted revenge on you, it was hard for me"

Me:"bullshit!!

I head towards the baby cot but he quickly takes the baby

Chase(melancholy tone):"you not going anywhere"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

After Noah left I stayed behind for a while praying

My heart was heartbroken, after much praying and crying I washed my face and changed back to the clothes I was wearing then drove back to Keon's place.

I found them watching a movie on Netflix while having popcorn

Me:"hey my babies!"

Rain:"momma!"

They all race towards me, I go on my knees bracing myself for the hugs as they squeeze me

Me:"can't breath!"

They giggle letting me go and head back to their movie

Theo comes back to me

Theo:"mommy"

Me:"yes baby"

Theo:"is mommy fetching me tonight?"

Me:"No my baby she I will take you mommy tomorrow"

Theo:"okay"

He goes back to sit next to Rain as I follow behind and sit on the couch next to Keon

Me:"hey babe"

I kiss him on the forehead as he looks at me

Keon:"where are you coming from?"

I sigh and get up pulling his hand so we can get away from the children

We sit by the dinning room chairs

Me:"I had to accompany Lulama to Lowell's place, they found proof of what I've been telling them for years that Chase is a bad guy he's just really good at hiding it but they never paid much attention to me, so now she's trying to leave him but she's scared that she might hurt her, when he left her here he took the baby so Lulama is forced to go back to him but she was planning on not coming back and just take the kids leaving him for good"

Keon:"is she okay now? Did she manage to go back for the baby?"

Me:"I don't know let me call them and check"

I take my phone and there was a message from Noah, I clicked on it

"Amahle thank you for having such a kind heart, I used the water you gave me to bath her with, it works like magic, I can already see the difference even though it's a little but she'll be good in no time, you have no idea how much this means to me, thank you so much sweetheart ❤️👍"

Keon:"can't you find the number?"

I look up at him

Me:"what?"

Keon:"the call?"

Me:"oh, I..yeah I was still looking for it"

I press on lulama's number and it rings unanswered, I try it again and no answer

Me:"she's not picking up, let me try Lowell"

It rings

"Mahle"

Me:"hey how is everything going?"

Lowell:"it's been almost an hour since Lulama went in I'm about to go in and get her in a few minutes"

Me:"okay, please be safe guys, if you guys do not call me back in two hours later, I'm coming over with the police"

"No need for that, we will be long back"

Me:"okay then bye"

"Bye"

I hang up

Me:"they still trying, they not out yet"

Keon:"okay hopefully they make it out safe"

Me:"yeah"

Keon:"so if they went together where did you go after dropping Lulama?"

Me:"uhmm..."

Keon:"you about to lie with that uhmm... please be honest with me, remember what we talked about, the value of this relationship is..."

Me:"honesty..."

Keon:"please let us keep it that way love"

Me:"Noah asked for my help"

Keon(sighs boredly):"Noah again"

Me:..."

Keon:"needed your help with what?"



Me:"something spiritual involves ancestors"

Keon:"and? Did you help him?"

Me:...

Keon:"you did didn't you?"

Me:"I did but it's...."

Keon:"after everything that happened last night, the way he harassed us, manipulating his way inside my house, inside our relationship, you were hating him yesterday and today you helping him"

Me:"I'm only doing it because of his child, she's suffering a lot, I can't just sit and watch an innocent child suffer because of her father's mistakes..."

Keon:"choices, not mistakes, his choices"

Me:"choices exactly, I'm only doing my job, he came to me professionally, it's part of my gift I can't refuse to help people with it I'd be punished cause it was given to me to help whoever needs my help"

He looks at me for while then looks away rubbing his face

Keon:"I don't trust that guy around you, remember he kissed you even though you were fighting him?"

Me:"so what are you saying? That I shouldn't help him?"

Keon:"I'm just saying, how would you feel if I had to help Kendall's mom with something while she's been trying to break us up so she can get me back? How would you feel babe?"

Me:"I'd feel a bit jealous but if it was to save her daughter and only you could help her I'd understand"

Keon:"you just saying that cause you want me to understand (sighs) I hope this was the last time you were helping him because I see you interacting with that man and I'm not there and it's not about him having a relationship with his son, then babe maybe you might as well get back together with him and please do it now before it gets to a point I catch you with him discussing anything while I'm not around and it's not about Rain, if you know that something like this will

happen in future please let's rather make things clear and end our joke of a relationship where we don't respect or honest with each other"

I move my char next to him

Me:"don't be ridiculous baby, I will not interact with Noah again it was my first and last time, I respect you and your feelings and I appreciate how you always telling me how things make you feel instead of running away, I promise I will not talk to Noah unless he wants a relationship with Rain"

He takes my hand helping me stand up so I can sit on his lap

Keon:"love, I'm very afraid of losing you and I want to spend the rest of my life with you but I want your whole heart just for me and our children no one else and if you can't give me that, please let me know now while it's still early because later on I will not let you down as easily as I'm willing to do now because I'll be too attached and I'll fight anyone or anything that tries to come between us"

I cup his chin looking into his eyes

Me:"Keon, I love you, you the man I want to spend my life with, stop worrying"

We share a kiss as he holds me tighter

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I look at the message I sent to her and she long read it but never replied.

I put my phone away

"Dada?..."

I look at her and frown, she giggles

London:"Dadi?"

Me(smiles):"that's my girl"

London:"Dadi Dadi Dadi!!..."

I pick her up

Me:"daddy daddy daddy is here"

I wiggle my face on her tummy as she laughs out loud

Me:"where's daddy's princess?"

She hides her face on my chest

Me:"oh no where's my princess"

She removes her head from my chest smiling

Me(gasps):"There she is!!"

She burst into laughter hiding on my chest

Me(sadly):"oh no where did my princess go? Has anyone seen my princess, the very beautiful one"

She removes her head looking at me

Me:"oh there she is!!"

I tickle her tummy as she laughs out loud

"Wow she's getting so much better"

She says walking in

Me:"yeah she will be fine"

Emma:"why did you refuse for me to go to the doctor you took her to, she's obviously so good I need to thank her I thought I was losing my baby"

Me:"don't worry about that I thanked her on your behalf, she is good"

London:"mama good!"

Me:"yes mama good"

She gets off me and crawls behind me and starts playing with my hair

Emma:"shes already so active and playful again, what did they give her?"

Me:"just some herbs to out in her bath water"

Emma:"that's why you insisted on bathing her tonight"

Me:"yeah I'll be bathing her from now on"

Emma:"I don't mind as long as my girl is getting better"

She attempts to pick her up but she cries holding on my head

Me:"let her play"

Emma:"mommy just wants a kiss? Please princess"

She attempts to take her again but she refuses crying

Me:"leave her Emma she doesn't want you to take her you can see that, don't force it"

I pick her up

Me:"let's go get something to eat"

She claps her hands excitedly

Me:"say foood"

She pauses looking at me

Me:"foood"

London (screaming):"foooooo"

Me:"d..."

London food"

Me(laughing):"yes that's correct princess, kiss daddy cheek"

She kisses my kiss and I shiver my body excitedly making her laugh as she kisses me more to get the same reaction

I get a notification from my phone

I take the phone out of my pocket and it was a message from Amahle, a smile crept on my face when I saw her name pop up

(Sweetheart):"rush to Lulama's place, Lowell is also there I sense that they are in trouble, please go help it's a matter of life and death"

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

An hour hit the clock and Lulama was still in there with no communication on I should do so I went in.

The door wasn't locked as I made my way in, there was voices coming from one of the rooms, I took out my gun from the back of my pants and carefully walked towards the bedroom which was a bit opened

Lulama:"give me my baby!"

Chase:"you not leaving me, Lulama I love you, you can't punish me for something that happened years ago, please baby, don't make our kids go through this, we've come so far together, don't do this, you know I'd never do anything to hurt you"

Lulama:"all along you've been playing hero in my life when you were the bad guy all this time!!"

Chase:"it was one mistake I'm sorry!"

Lulama:"bring my baby Chase!"

I open the door and point the gun at him

Me:"hand her over the baby"

Chase:"oh look who decided to join us if it isn't the homewrecker himself"

Me:"the baby!"

Chase:"you can't shoot me while I'm holding the baby or I'll drop him, with his head first"

He holds the baby by the leg facing him down as the baby bursts into tears

Lulama (screams):"Nooo don't hold my baby like that you going to kill him! His skull is still soft please!!"

Chase:"tell him to put down his weapon"

Lulama:"Lowell out down the gun please he's going to kill my baby"

Me:"just hand the baby over!!"

Lulama:"put down the damn gun Lulonke!!..."

Me:"Lulama and I can make another baby, but you can never get your life back"

Lulama:"are you crazy!!?? Have you lost your mind?"

Me:"I'm shooting in five...."

Chase:"I'm dropping it in five"

Me:"four"

Chase:"three"

Me:"two...."

Lulama jumps in front of him taking the baby as the gun goes off

Me:"Noooooo!!!"

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"Pain is the price we pay for being alive"

Insert 126

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Lowell

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I rush up to her looking around for blood as my eyes are blurred with tears

I look at Chase who's holding his tummy

which is leaking blood as he coughs out blood

Noah:"One"

Chase:"you...son of a bitch..."

He falls to the floor

I look up at Noah who's comes from behind him, by the looks of things it looked like he came in through the bathroom window I didn't even notice when he got behind Chase

Me:"bro..."

Noah:"is she okay?"

I look at her as I take the crying baby

Me:"I think she fainted"

Noah:"what were you thinking not asking for back up?"

Me:"I thought I could handle it"

Noah:"call the guys to come clean this mess up, get his passport, I know a few people who work at the airport, make it seem like he flew out of country and never came back"

Me:"okay..."

Noah:"carry Lulama and the baby to the lounge so when she wakes up we tell her Chase ran away then take them to your place, don't let her come back in here"

Me:"okay..."

I take the baby to the lounge then walk back for Lulama and place her on the couch

Lulama wakes gasping for air

Lulama:"my baby?"

Me:"here he is"

Lulama:"why did you do that! You risked my baby's life!?"

Me:"our baby, I wasn't risking his life I was trying to protect him"

Lulama:"by getting him killed!?"

Me:"I wasn't going to kill him, it's called bluffing, if he saw that I was really going to shoot him he was going to stop me and give up the baby"

Lulama:"did you notice how crazy that man is! He doesn't care for anything!"

Me:"I'm sorry but you and the baby are safe, that's all that matters right now"

Lulama:"where is he!? Did you shoot him?"

Me:"No I just scared him off, my guys took him he will flee the country and never come back"

She takes the baby

Lulama:"get us out of here"

She walks out to the car as I first go to the room



Me:"thank you man, I owe you one"

Noah:"don't sweat it, you my little brother, it's my duty to come through, plus you already done so much for me with taking care of Rain and Amahle for me when I wasn't there"

I smile at him

Noah:"take Lulama to your place I'll handle this"

Me:"cool"

I walk towards the door then stop and walk back to him as I attack him with a firm hug, he holds me back, I smile at the thought of how much I've missed him

Noah:"I love you bro"

I let go of him

Me:"there you go with the gay shit"

He laughs

Me:"I love you too"

He smiles, I shake my head laughing as I head out

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

The following morning I woke up early to go check on Lulama and my baby niece

I bought them a few gifts

Me:"how are you feeling?"

Lulama:"I'm so sorry Amahle"

Me:"what for now?"

Lulama:"for everything, for not believing you when you warned me about Chase, that day a few years back when no one wanted to believe you that I was not at Chase's place, you were right he just came to act like he was rescuing me, he arrived earlier than you, and made you look stupid while also making me feel stupid for making me believe that everything that happened that night was all in my head and it was just a nightmare, I'm sorry I ever doubted you"

Me:"it's okay, it's not your fault"

Lulama:"I'm also sorry for everything you went through, you and precious, when I used to do the things I did in the past, I never knew what I was really doing, I never truly understood it until it happened to me, I learnt my lesson and if I didn't have any kids I'd turn myself in because I believe I deserve a greater punishment than what Chase did to me"

Me:"I'm also sorry you went through that, in life we learn the hard way, but what is important is that we learn and move on no matter how hard it is, being remorseful is the first step, ask those you still can for forgiveness and ask God to forgive you, some people will forgive you and some won't, but know that with God you are already forgiven, and if he can forgive you, then you should also forgive yourself and just focus on being the best mother for your children"

Lulama:"but I am not worthy of God's forgiveness..."

Me:"don't you ever say that, that is your father you talking about, if you think you not worthy of his forgiveness then I guess you have never read the Bible a day in your life because if you have you'd know how much you mean to that man above for in John 3:16 says, For God loved the world so much that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him may not die but have eternal life, do you know what that means? That means to tell us that we are worthy of God's love, His mercy, and most importantly His forgiveness, he wouldn't have sent Jesus Christ to come die for us if he didn't think you were worthy of his forgiveness"

She looks at me crying, I lean towards her as we share a hug

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was throwing up in the toilet

There was a knock at the door

Me:"come in, if you can handle my vomit"

He makes his way inside

Lowell:"hey man, are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine, has everything been taken care of?"

Lowell:"yeah"

I get up and rinse my mouth with water before brushing my teeth

Lowell:"don't tell me you vomiting because of that dog's blood"

Me:"just cause I killed him doesn't mean that its okay, taking someone's life... it's...it just..it makes me feel wrong, my job is saving lives... But I guess after everything that's happened in our lives that doesn't even matter anymore "

Lowell:"we only take out people who threaten our family...."

Me:"yeah no one messes with family"

I wipe my mouth and head out to the lounge with Lowell following behind me

Lowell:"after what happened, I think we should keep a close eye on that Keon nigger I don't want my son having to go through this, I almost lost Owen and Lulama I can't lose Rain and Amahle"

Me:"when did Amahle become yours to lose?"

Lowell:"since the day you left her six years ago"

I walk closer to him

Me:"did you fuck her?"

Lowell:"why does it matter?"

Me:"did you fuck her!?"

Lowell:"you left, I stepped in"

Me(clenching fists):"so you fucked her?"

Lowell:"what does it matter now? She's not with neither of us, you are barking up the wrong tree right now, who you should be worried about is that foreigner all up in her sheets, in her honey pot and playing dad with our son"

Me:"you still haven't answered my question, did you fuck her?"

Lowell(sighs):"I didn't fuck her, she came to me when she was about two months pregnant, told me how brutally you left her, she was a wreck, a mess, she asked for my help for us to pretend to be together so that I can claim the pregnancy, after everything I put her through I owed her that much, so I became Rain's father which was easy because he's my blood, everyone knows that I'm Rain's father, the only people who know the truth is Amahle, Precious and I"

I sigh stepping away from him

Me:"oh, okay I see, thank you for stepping in"

Lowell:"I didn't do it for you, I did it for Amahle and my son"

(Silence)

Me:"so, after I left was she involved with any other men?"

Lowell:"come on man that's not my place to tell you that"

Me:"so she was?"

Lowell:"dude, that woman almost became a nun, she never gave any nigger time or day, I guess with Rain and his heart problems being in and out of hospital every year, she locked up that part of her life away for years man, honestly I condemn her for surviving almost full five years with no dick, not even a no strings attached side plate, I mean not to be rude but I was also always there for her but not even once she showed any interest"

Me:"she kept herself all these years only to finally give in to this nigger now?"

Lowell:"yep, had you come a few months earlier, win her heart over again, you would've found her sealed and as fresh and tight as a virgin and as wet as a river"

Me:"shut up and get out of here"

He chuckles and pats my shoulder

Lowell:"you remove that keona dude out of the way, you have your girl"

He walks out leaving me with a heavy heart lost in my thoughts

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

After spending the day with Lulama

I drove back to Keon's place

I've been thinking about Noah's cleansing that had to happen next week and I was stuck between a rock and a hard place as I was contemplating not helping him but I just couldn't, even though I might not like Noah but when it comes to helping people with my gift I cannot be selfish. I'm afraid of losing Keon but I'm also afraid of losing my gift specially now that Noah put his pride aside and asked me nicely.

After pacing up and down outside his office door with a tray of juice and a piece of cake, I knocked

"Come in"

I opened the door using my elbow

and made my way inside

Me:"hey baby"

Keon:"my love"

I put the tray on his table

Me:"I got you a snack"

Keon(smiling):"how generous of you"

He pulls the tray closer to him

Keon:"thank you baby"

I sit on the chair opposite his

Me:"you welcome babe"

His fork sinks in the soft spong cake as he indulged it in his mouth, he lets out a moan as a reaction to the delicious taste

Keon:"your birthday cake was the bomb babe, we should get this one more often not just for birthdays, it's really good"

Me(smiling):"I agree"

He looks up at me

Keon:"is there something you needed baby?"

Me:"yeah I did want to talk to you about something"

Keon:"what is it?"

Me:"remember when I said I helped Noah"

He sigh sitting back

Keon:"we talking about Noah again, is he going to be our everyday topic now?"

Me:"look he's also not my favorite person but can you please hear me out"

Keon:"do I have another choice? Spit it out what did he do now?"

Me:"well that day when I helped him, according to the ancestors it was not my last time helping him, I had to book him in for a cleansing process which has to happen before he can be fully recovered, it's not my orders babe, you know how my gift works, I didn't want to be dishonest with you and help him behind your back"

Keon:"honestly I'm starting to hate this Noah with every bit of fiber in my body, actually since we are honest with each other, I already hate him and I hate the fact that you have to be the one that helps him..."

Me:"I hate that fact too babe but we can't change it"

He sighs and the room falls silent for a while

Keon:"how long does cleansing take?"

Me:"the cleansing has to happen in KZN which will take about three days and two nights..."

Keon:"oh hell no KZN? Why does it have to be so far away?"

Me:"my ancestors are Zulu they work best at home where they are resting and this is a really big cleansing that he needs to go through"

Keon:"so you want me to let you drive all the way to KZN just the two of you for three days?"

Me:"Yes! Why are you so afraid of me being alone with him? Don't you trust me?"

Keon:"I trust you I do, I just don't trust him"

Me:"if you trust me then you should know that I won't do anything stupid,

Keon you know how I feel about that man, what he did to me, I opened up to you about him, do you think I'd make the mistake of putting myself through that, again? After this, I am done with Noah you won't have to worry about him again"

Keon:"what about Rain?"

Me:..

Keon:"as long as there's Rain he'll always be connected to you, you'll never be completely done with him"

Me:"Keon I love you and if you trust the love I have for you, you'd know that when I say Noah is history he is history, please just trust me"

He looks at me for a while

Keon(sighs):"I trust you"

Me:"thank you"

Keon:"I am trusting you because I love you and I believe that you see the same future I see with you"

Me:"I do I see it"

Keon:...

Me:...

Keon:"okay, fine, you do what you have to do love"

I get up and walk over to him sitting on his lap with my legs spread on either sides

Me:"this is why I love you (kisses his lips) I promise, I will never let you down"

I deepen the kiss as his hands sneak under my dress all the way to my butt squeezing it as his breathing starts increasing, I feel the power of my touch making him weaker as his eyes get even smaller and his heart beating hard with his chest against mine while I trail kisses nibbling on his neck

Keon:"fuck...I love you so much"

Me:"I love you baby....

.

.

.

A WEEK LATER

\*\*



"The best proof of love is trust" (Joyce Brothers)

Insert 127

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Lulama

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

We were staying at my mother's place as I didn't feel safe at my house anymore.

What Chase did scared me a lot because I didn't expect that from him, he was the most caring person ever, I never thought any bad about him but for him to deceive me like that, it came as a shocker and made me wonder what other things has he done to me that I do not remember.

Despite it all I still want him to be part of Theo's life, they had a remarkable bond, but I don't see myself with him ever again.

I was breastfeeding my baby when mom made her way in my bedroom

Mom:"someone is here to see you"

Me:"I'm still feeding my baby"

Mom:"should I tell him to leave?"

Me:"him? Is it Lowell?"

Mom:"yes"

Me:"let him in"

Mom:"okay"

She walks out and after a few seconds he walks in closing the door behind him

Lowell:"hey"

Me:"hey"

Lowell:"how are my favorite people doing?"

Me:"we fine"

Lowell:"where's Theo?"

Me:"he's probably in the theater room with Rain"

Lowell:"oh okay, I'll see him on my way out then"

Me:"what are you doing here?"

He sits next to me

Lowell:"what kind of questions is that, I came to check up on my loved ones"

He kisses Owen's cheek and smiles at him shaking his little hand

Owen concentrates at him as my nipple slips out his mouth while he stares at Lowell

Lowell (playful tone):" hello my boy, hello my baby, my baby boo boo, my boo boo boo..."

He smiles widely at him then it disappears

Lowell(gasps happily):"he smiled at me"

Me(laughs):"don't get too excited it was just a reflex smile, he's probably passing gas"

Lowell:"why do you have to be such a hater?... (to the baby)...mama is a hater isn't she? She's jealous cause she can't make you smile?...."

He stares at him then smiles again as he opens his mouth for the boob

Me:"you see, he was just farting"

He laughs and nudges me a bit with his shoulder

Lowell:"don't be jealous just because I'm the smile keeper..."

He looks into my eyes

Lowell:"just because I own both your hearts"

Me(blushing):"not really"

Lowell:"oh yeah?"

He leans closer and we share our first kiss after a long time, my heart beats weakly as I lose myself in his soft warm thick lips

.

.

.

Thandile

.

.

.

It's Saturday and we were having a chilled day with my little family, I was not working today and we were just having a lazy day

Menzi:"sthandwa sam?"

Me:"baby wam"

Menzi:"Lez'ngane zigwele wonke lomuzi bathutha nin vele?"

(These kids are all over the house, when are they moving out anyway?)

Me(laughing):"ayibo basebancane kabi basazowugcwala nje lomuzi vele uphole sthandwa sam"

(They still very young, so they still going to be all over this house so just rest my love)

Menzi(groans):"I miss your loud moans and screams when I'm fucking you,  
kumele sizkhiphe siyozihlalela ehotela sibashiye la labo"

(We have to go on vacation on some hotel and leave these people here)

I giggle as he gets on top of me trailing his kisses down my body as he goes  
under the cover burying his head between my thighs

Our magical moment is disturbed by a knock at the door

Me(moaning):"oh no"

Menzi:"sisalele yin ndaba!?"

(We still sleeping! What's the matter?)

"Khona umuntu osemnyango"

(There's someone by the door)

Lwazi answers from the other side

Menzi:"okay, don't open I'm coming"

"Yebo baba"

(Yes daddy)

He continues swirling his tongue playing with my clit as he also insert his  
fingers

and starts finger fucking me

Me(moaning):"mmmm...baby...."

He continues until I feel myself close and finally release, he comes back up to  
my lips as we kiss and he inserts his dick inside

Me(gasping):"baaaabe...we...hhhave a guest waiting..."

Menzi:"let them wait"

He continues fucking me until we both released and he got off me as we went to  
clean ourselves up

He kisses my lips then heads out to attend the person by the door while I get  
dressed and fix our bed

"Babe?"

I look up at him standing by the bedroom door

Me:"yes"

Menzi:"I think you might wanna come see this"

Me:"what is it?"

Menzi:"woz'uzozbonela"

(Come see for yourself)

I look at him with a grown on my face as he leads the way to the main door

My eyes widened as they landed on her

Me:"Thulile?"

Thulile:"hey sis"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

We came back from Keon's place last night and dropped Rain off at my mother's place.

I was packing my small suitcase

I felt his arms sneaking around me

Me:"babe"

Keon:"I don't want you to go"

Me:"it's only for a few days, you won't even feel I was gone"

Keon: "I couldn't even go a night without you"

Last night he was supposed to drop me off then leave but we ended up talking until it was late, he left Kendall with her nanny who literally raised her since she was a baby so he trusts her

Me: "but babe you see me everyday"

He kisses my neck

Keon: "and I still can't get enough of you"

Me: "I can't get enough of you either"

I turn to face him as he takes my left hand and kisses my fingers

Keon: "very soon we'll be together forever"

I smile looking at him

He pulls me in for a kiss, our moment was disturbed by my phone ringing

Me: "let me get that"

He steps back as I answer his call

"I'm outside your place"

Me: "okay, I'll be right out, still packing a few things"

"Okay sweetheart I'll wait"

He hangs up as I continue packing

Me: "babe you have to get dressed Noah's outside"

He gets dressed as I close up my suitcase

I stand before him and hold his hand

Me: "thank you for being so understanding, I'll be back in no time"

I peck his lips

Keon: "babe, don't let him play with your emotions, stay true to yourself, I know that doosh will try everything to get to your heart, I'd understand if you want to

forgive him but please don't do anything that would ruin the beautiful thing we have going on...

Me:"Keon, don't let Noah take away your confidence, it's one of the things I admire the most about you, please don't let Noah take that away from you, he's not worth it, he's taken so much from me I won't let him make me lose you too, okay?"

He cups my face

Keon:"I love you"

Me:"I love you too"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

A week passed and the weekend I've been waiting for has arrived

I had done all the things I was told to do

in terms of apologizing to the ancestors for the way I carried myself with their granddaughter and my son.

I haven't asked to spend time with him just as yet as I was waiting for this whole cleansing process to get over with and deal with Emma, and it's only London in my life then I can start a relationship with my son on a clean slate.

There was a knock at the window of the car

I startled out of my thoughts and looked towards the window

I unlocked the door and opened it for her from the inside

Amahle:"please open the boot so I can put my bag"

I got out of the car and walked over to her taking her bag from her before going to put it in the boot as we both jumped in the car and drove off

Me:"good morning Amahle"

Amahle:"good morning Noah"

Me:"how are you doing today?"

Amahle:"I'm doing good"

I look at her as she was facing straight

Me:"I'm okay too thank you very much"

Amahle (sighs):"can there be less talking, please"

Me:"okay....."

(Silence)

Me:"can we at least play music then?"

She nods

I switch on the radio to my favorite station which is metro fm, there was no music playing just talking, I lowered the volume a bit and glimpse at her

Me:"thank you for doing this for me"

Amahle:"it's no problem Noah"

Me:"I missed long road trips with you, remember how much fun it used to be?"

Amahle:...

She avoids me looking out the window

Me:"you look really beautiful today"

She sighs boredly

(Silence)

Me:"hey...I know I've been a big jerk in your life and it's not easy for you to help me, but you doing it anyway, and I'm sorry I tried to ruin your relationship with your boyfriend, I had no right to decide who is good or bad for you, you



are a grown woman and can make your own decisions about your life and I respect that, I guess I thought I was the only man capable of making you happy, I had to get off my high horse to realize that you have moved on and you are happy with someone else even though it hurts, I misjudged your boyfriend, for him to allow you to go to KZN with me alone and help me after everything I put you two through, it says a lot about his character and for the first time I think.....

I look at her as she looks back at me

I had to swallow a painful lump before saying what I was about to say

Amahle:"you think what?"

Me:"I think he trusts you meaning that he must truly love you, and I mean look at yourself, your face its clearly visible that you are happy and he's treating you.... like a queen the way you deserve to be treated, I guess he is the right man for you, all I'm asking for is one thing...

Amahle:"what?"

Me:"please take your time with this man get to see how he reacts in all moods, when he's happy, sad, stable, angry, hurt...I don't want him one day switching up on you and my son and you already in this serious marriage...(swallows)...with your own children and it's not easy to just leave anymore"

Amahle:"Noah..."

Me:"I'm not trying to say that he's a bad person because he..."

Amahle:"Noah!..."

I look at her as she shows me her hand with a diamond ring

Amahle:"I'm engaged, he asked me a few days ago....."

Me:"oh...."

.

.

.

\*\*

"One of the hardest things in life is watching someone you love, love someone else" (Unknown)

Insert 128

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Noah:"oh....

Me:"yeah so you don't have to worry about that I had the time to get to know him"

Noah:"that was quick, don't you think you moving too fast?"

Me:"No, we moving just fine"

Noah:"I mean it hasn't even been a year"

Me:"did it take me a year to move on from Lowell to you? Even though I said you have to wait till I graduated but I still let you in in a matter of months, I didn't hear you complaining ...

Noah:"well it looks like you didn't learn anything because I switched and left you in the woods pregnant and never looked back, yet you doing the same thing with this guy, you move on too quick"

Me:"oh so you are proud about what you did, you wanted to teach me some lesson? Wow you are such a jerk! And what do you mean I move on so quick, it took me six years to move on from you but just because its someone else that I'm moving on with it's a problem and it's too soon? I wish someone warned me about being too quick with you! How long did it take you to move on huh? To wreck another man's home and be with a married woman!?! How long!?! Now you wanna wreck another man's home that he's still trying to build with me, is that all you know?

Noah:"Amahle....

Me:"No!.... not all men are sick like you even though it took me years to see it and even if Keon is a sick coward like you then I'll see it for myself I don't need you being my father, I already know love is not the luckiest thing I've ever gotten and I've pretty much accepted it, my life was not meant to be all bed and roses and that's okay with me, I know Keon is not perfect but who made me perfect to deserve someone perfect? When the time comes for him to reveal himself to me then that time will come and I'll deal with it like how I've dealt with all the lemons that have been thrown at me ...(sighs)... I knew this nice guy behavior was just a front, you'll forever be a dickhead"

Noah:"can't you see what this man is doing? Why does he suddenly propose when you should be leaving with me, he just wanted to prove some point, honestly if this guy makes you act this naive I might have to have full custody of my son because....

Me:"Shut up!! You are not taking my son from me! (Tearfully) Oh my God this was a big mistake! Stop the car..stop the car Noah!"

Noah:"where!?! I'm not stopping the car"

Me:"I'm not going to let you take my baby! You the one that left us, you the one that wanted us dead so we never bother you!! I respected your wishes and remained dead in your life! Now all of a sudden you want to come take everything from me! You don't want Keon in my life, now you don't want Rain in my life, when you left you ripped a part of me with you, if you're hate me so much why don't you just kill me Noah!

Kill me!!...

I turn his face to look at me

Me:"kill me!!

Noah:"Amahle let go of my face you going to get us killed...

Me:"I don't care, if I'm not having Rain then you not either!"

He losses control of the car as he forcefully yanks my hands off his face concentrating back on the road

Noah:"have you lost your mind woman!! You almost got us killed!!"

I turn my body looking out the window

Me(crying):"it's fine Noah, I will break up with Keon, just please don't take my baby away from me, I'll do whatever you want, I'll even marry you if it makes you happy, but please don't take Rain from me, he's the only person that completes me....

He slows down and drive in some garage then finds parking.

There's complete silence in the car with only the sound of my sniffs

Noah:"Amahle...

Me(crying):"I will get you cleansed, and we can get back together, I'll leave Keon for you, you get both Rain and I, we'll live together as a happy family...and you win, that's what you want right? To win? It doesn't matter what I think or feel, it never mattered"

.

.

.

Thandile

.

.

.

Me:"what are you doing here?"

Thulile:" I was in the neighborhood...

Me:"well continue with the neighborhood and get your skinny legs out my yard"

Thulile:"come on please let me in, I just came to apologize"

Me:"I don't need your apology, you are not welcome here, please leave"

Thulile:"okay, fine, I respect your wishes, I just came to tell you this... I'm sorry for everything I've done, for being a bad person easily influenced by evil making you look bad, I also thought maybe we would talk properly like adults and invite Amahle over so I can apologise to her and tell her how I'm paying for everything I've ever done to her, I don't know how much time I have left but I don't have much time...I hope you someday find it in your hearts to forgive me..."

She looks at me for a while, she doesn't look good at all, the bruises on her face, she's wearing expensive clothes but

her misery is all exposed through her eyes and body

Thulile:"my life is a mess, I was so desperate to be rich that I took the quicker dark short path in life to

become rich, I always thought being rich is being successful but I was wrong, this are two different things, I became rich but I didn't feel successful, I felt miserable and all I got from it was constant pain, abuse and lots of curses from the people I've hurt to get to where I am, I'm truly sorry, I don't expect you to forgive me but if you get the chance to please also let Amahle know how sorry I am...or you could give me her number and I'll call her"

Me:"she doesn't want to see or talk to you"

Thulile:"I understand (smiles faintly) I love you sis and congratulations, you have done well for yourself, I wish I listened to you more than mom..."

Me:..

Thulile (sighs):"okay then, I wish you all the best, goodbye"

Me:"bye"

She turns and walks away, I close the door and walk towards the lounge throwing myself on the couch

Menzi: "uright sthandwa sam?"

(Are you okay my love?)

Me: "I..I just can't believe it, God really works in mysterious ways, I mean had I not chose to separate myself from the evils of my mother and sister, I would be just like her right now, rich and suffering"

Menzi: "shes not rich love, without love from family, she has money yes and she can buy whatever she wants but money can't buy happiness, this is Joburg I know a lot of people who have all the money they need with all the luxury, but always have problems and are never happy because they make money their number one priority before family, before love, I hope now you understand why I want us to just live an average lifestyle and raise our kids with love rather than money, we surviving and we can afford anything we want but that doesn't mean we should let it be seen by the world, we only please ourselves not others, as long as thina sijabulile"

(We are happy)

I smile and pull him in for a hug

Me: "I'm so happy I met you, you've taught me some really valuable lesson that I'll always carry with me and will pass them on to our children, money is truly not everything"

I peck his lips

Me: "I love you"

Menzi: "uthandwa yim Sthandwa sam, sesingayoqedela leyankonzo yasekamelweni?"

(I love you too my love, can we now go finish where we left off in the bedroom?)

I giggle nodding

Me: "yeaahh"

He picks me up as we head to the room

"Mama!! I'm hungry! Can I please have cereals?"

Menzi:"cela ubhuti wakho akwenzele!"

(Ask your brother to make for you)

Othalive:"akafuni! Please mommy!"

(He doesn't want to)

We both sigh as he puts me down

Me:"might as well get started on breakfast for everyone"

Menzi:"yazbona lezngane zakho..."

(You see your kids...)

I laugh as we walk back to the kitchen

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

I was chilling with Vick my business partner and best friend

Vick:"you having her followed right?"

Me:"No, I couldn't bring myself to do it, I trust her and right now I think..."

Vick:"nooo no no that's not how things are done budda, you don't let your woman leave with her ex who also happens to be her baby daddy alone without keeping track of them, okay besides trusting her that she won't do anything, but what about her safety? What if that niggas tries to force himself on her? What if they get mugged?"

Me:"I never thought about that"

Vick:"look man I get that you love this girl and you trust her and whatever, but she is willing to help this guy, it means that she still has a soft spot for him, he will take advantage of that because he sees it too, come on man use you man brain, does she not have a soft spot for him?"

Me:"she does"

Vick:"95% chances that they going to shag, whether it's a back together shag or a one last goodbye shag but they will shag, these people are 7 to 8 hours away, they probably shagging as we speak"

Me:"don't say that man, I asked her to marry me, she's excited about it, she won't betray the promise on her finger"

Vick:"hey, believe what you want to believe, carry on being this softie and see where it will get you"

(Silence)

I look at him

Me:"so how do I track her?"

Vick(smiles):"now you talking, come with me"

We get up and head out

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

After doing a bit of shopping by the mall

it was time I go back work but first I needed to drop these things off by Lulama's place



I bumped into someone I didn't wish to bump into

Bailey:"Lowell"

Me:"Bailey, hey"

Bailey:"wow I didn't think I'd ever see you again, how you doing"

Me:"I'm good thanks and yourself?"

Bailey:"I'm fine I guess..you look good, still very handsome"

Me:"thank you, you look good too, uhm I'd like to talk but I have somewhere I need to be"

Bailey:"wait, can we get together and talk when you get time?"

Me(chuckles):"Sorry but I don't have time"

Bailey:"come on Lowell, you always have time I've been with you for years"

Me:"okay Bailey you right I do have time, I just don't have the time for you"

Bailey:"Lowell I'm pregnant, don't you want to be part of your baby's life?"

(Silence)

Me:"we'll talk about the baby when the baby arrives"

Bailey:"Lowell please...."

Me:"bye Bailey"

I walk towards my car throwing the bags on the passenger seat before driving off to Lulama's place.

I park outside her house and make my way to the door

She opens the door for me

Lulama(smiling):"heey"

Me(smiling):"heeeey"

She laughs making way for me to come in

Lulama:"what are you doing here?"

Me:"you should really stop asking me that question because I'll run out of answers, you have to get used to me cause you'll be seeing a lot of me"

She wraps her arms around my neck

Lulama:"is that so?"

Me:"I got you and Owen a few things before I go back to work"

Lulama:"uuhhh what is it?"

She takes the bags and takes out baby clothes and toys

Lulama:"aawww babe, these are so cute!"

I pick her lips

Me:"that's how I roll bebe"

She laughs rolling her eyes

Lulama:"whatever"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

She was crying as we were sitting in the car, I didn't know how to comfort her when I'm the one making her cry.

I look at her as she had her arms folded with tears streaming down her face.

Me(sighs):"Amahle"

Amahle:"do you see the pattern? Everytime I'm around you I'm always crying or hurting...."

Me:"I'm sorry I..."

Amahle:"your sorries are becoming meaningless"

Me:"I know and I'm sorry about that, it's just...I guess I get worried about you and I end up being over protective then I end up hurting your feelings because I go about it the wrong way, I will try to accept that you are not my responsibility and you can do whatever you want, you don't need my protection, it's my protection that brought us here, if I never always tried so hard to protect you I wouldn't have left in the first place, we'd probably still be together or I would've long killed you like I almost did that night I left, I'm sorry Amahle, I'm sorry for loving you so much, for putting you first, for hurting you in the process, I promise you, I'll keep my opinion to myself and not interfere with your life anymore... I understand if you don't wish to help me anymore, I can turn around and..."

Amahle:"it's fine I'll still help you"

Me:"thank you and I wasn't serious about what I said about taking Rain for full custody, I don't want both you and him hating me forever, I didn't mean to scare you"

Amahle:"it's fine as long as you keep that promise"

Me:"I will, I'm trying.... it's not easy to stop loving someone"

She searches into my eyes for a while not saying anything

Amahle:"let's go we still have a long way to go"

Me:"of cause"

I drive out the garage after filling in the tank and buying a few snacks

I look at her as she is now calm wiping her dried tears

Me:oh and congratulations, on the engagement"

Amahle:"thank you but let's not talk about our lives anymore, we only here for the cleansing if it's not about the cleansing then we don't talk about it"

Me:"okay"

I connect my phone to the radio through bluetooth and play music as we continue the drive to KZN

□If this is goodbye

I just wanna tell you that I promise that I tried

If this is goodbye

Then, girl, I am so sorry for all the times I lied

But people can make some mistakes

They can learn, they can change

But I know all it takes is some time

But if it's too late, then I guess

That I wish you the best

I hope we'll meet somewhere down the line

If this is goodbye□

I glimpse at her she quickly looks away from me and out the window wiping off a tear

{A few Hours later}

I park at the reserved parking outside the hotel, I look at Amahle who's been sleeping most of the ride

Me(softly):"Amahle...."

I stare at her face for a while, I brush her cheek gently

Me(shaking her):"Amahle"

She gets up

Me:"we've arrived"

She stretches herself as we make our way out to take bags in the boot

Me:"uhm there's something I have to tell you"

Amahle:"what is it?"

Me:"I booked only one room"

Amahle:"what!? Why?"

Me:"it's still holidays hotels are fully booked, I was lucky to even get a room, I didn't do it on purpose I swear"

Amahle:"so where are you going to sleep?"

Me:"Me? Why am I being kicked out?"

Amahle:"you the one who was doing the bookings"

We walk towards the entrance

Me(laughs):"No way I'm sleeping in the room if you can't share then you book yourself somewhere else"

Amahle(laughs):"fine you sleeping on the floor then"

Me:"it's my room and you making the rules?"

Amahle:"you the one that needs my help so beggars can't be choosers"

I laugh as we reach the reception and they give us our room keys

"Noah?"

I look up at her

Me:"shit"

Amahle:"who is she?"

She walks up to us

Me(clenched teeth):"someone I wish wasn't approaching us"

Eve:"I thought I recognized you"

Me:"hey Eve...."

Eve:"long time..."

She hugs me then let's go and looks at Amahle

Eve:"is this your sister?

Me:"eerrr

.

.

.

.

\*\*

"There are things we don't want to happen, but have to accept, things we don't want to know, but have to learn, and people we can't live without but have to let go" ( Jennifer Jareau)

Insert 129

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Noah:"eerrh it was good bumping into you, let's go sweetheart"

He pulls my hand but I resist still standing in one place.

Looks like Noah is trying to dodge her and doesn't want me to know who she is which raises my curiosity, she looked very interesting, beautiful and petite

Noah:"sweetheart?"

Me:"hey uhm what did you say your name was again?"

Eve:"Eve"

Me:"Eve I'm Amahle Noah's uhm..

Noah:"she's my fiancée, can we go now, bye Eve (looks at Amahle) can we go now sweetheart?"

I look at him for a while perplexed then look back at the woman

Me:"wait honey aren't you going to introduce me to your.... friend?"

She looks at him with flirtatious eyes biting her lip

Eve:"I guess you could call it that since we have played together before"

Me:"played?"

Eve(smirks):"yeah it's been years since we've played though, it was the way he used his long stick, the focus he has and had a very good aim never misses the hole, his balls were very special..."

Did she just tell me how good Noah is in bed?

I look at Noah with my lips curved upside down amused

Me:"oh...I see..."

Noah:"don't listen to her..."

Eve:"we should play golf together again..."

Oh she was talking about golf? Now I remember her voice, she was the girl in that background while I stole my phone from mam Sonto to talk to Noah during my initiation, Noah was booked in this very same hotel.

Amahle:"golf?..."

Eve:"yeah golf..."

Noah:"okay listen it was nice bumping into you...."

Eve:"you too..."

Noah:"yeah and please next time you see me, don't stop just keep on walking, because I might not be this friendly, okay sweetie?"

Eve(cunning smile):"understood..."

She walks away then walks back next to me and whispers in my ear

Eve:"oh his golf stick was not the only stick he was good at using, if you going to be his wife you are very lucky"

Noah comes charging for her but I stop him holding his chest

Noah:"Pray we never cross paths again bitch!"

Me:"calm down, you making a scene"

I could see it in his eyes that he was ready to kill someone, this is the monstrous emotion he has no control over

Noah:"just let me go talk to her I just want to tell her something"

Me:"No, we both know that's not what you really wanna do..

I lock his hand into mine

Me:"let's go to our room shall we?"

He looks into my eyes for a while and calms himself down as he squeezes my hand a bit

Noah:"okay"

We continued to the elevator, I still don't like elevators, I could feel his eyes on me so I looked up at him

Me:"what?"

Noah(chuckles smiling):"nothing..."

Me(confused smile):"what is it?"

Noah:"it's nothing really, I just remembered how scared you used to be of lifts you'd hold onto my waist so tightly with your eyes closed the whole ride....

A smile creeps on my face as I burst into a silent laugh



Noah:"the way you squeezing my hand right now I can tell that they still scare you"

My smile disappears as look down at our hands and quickly let go of him as the lift comes to halt and we make our way to the room with him leading the way. He unlocks the door and we make our way inside.

I put my bag on the small couch and throw my back on the comfortable bed facing the ceiling

"Uhm Amahle...

I look at him

Noah:"about that girl she was just...

Me:"wait, why you explaining?"

Noah:"I just wanted you to know that she was lying...

Me:"about the golf stick or the other stick?"

Noah:"uhm...

Me:"Noah, you really don't have to explain since you clearly going to lie"

Noah:"she was a once off thing, she didn't mean anything"

Me:"so she wasn't lying, it was that time you were waiting for me to come back from initiation...

Noah:"we were not together yet..."

Me:"oh yeah it's not like we had anything going on, so it doesn't count as cheating right?"

Noah:"Amahle I..."

I give him a genuine smile

Me:"shhhh it's okay Noah I get you we were not together yet"

Noah (confused):"so you not mad?"

Me:"it doesn't matter anymore, it was years ago"

Noah:"look Amahle, I'm really sorry for..."

Me:"stop apologizing Noah please, let's not talk about the past or about our lives like we agreed"

Noah:"it's just you still haven't...I'm just surprised as to why you being so nice to me all of a sudden? I mean a few hours ago in the car things were a bit hectic"

I sit up looking at him

Me:"would you rather have me sulk at you the whole time?"

Noah:"No, of cause not, I actually appreciate that you finally smiling at me, God knows how much I missed your smile with those perfect white straight teeth, the dimples the way your eyes lit up, (chuckles) oh and how can I forget that very sexy giggle"

I stop smiling

Me:"Noah..."

Noah:"sorry, but it's just, after the way I've been invading your space and.... I'm wondering why you agreed to help me because after that when I asked for your help I was honestly trying my luck "

Me(smiling):"well your lucky stars are with you"

He smiles getting up and taking off his shirt, I look away from him

Noah:"I guess, but I still feel like there's something you not telling me"

I look at him

Me:"I'm just keeping my promise"

Noah:"sorry I couldn't keep mine"

Me:"which one?"

Noah (Chuckles):"ohhh burn..."

I laugh a little

Noah:"when I promised I'd be with you forever, when I promised I'd never leave you...."

Me:"when you promised you'd always love me..."

He frowns looking at me and moves a bit closer

Noah:"I never broke that promise, Amahle, I've never stopped loving you, ever, I'm still loving you right now and I'm pretty sure I'd still be loving you even when I'm six foot under...all my mistakes were based around loving you, I feel so stupid for all the years I've wasted, if I could have one superpower it would be to have the ability to reverse time, so I could do things differently and fix the mistakes I made, make better choices so that I'd still have you in my arms....

He cups my face with his one hand and wipes a tear with his thumb

Me:"yeah...too bad you don't have the superpower"

He sighs searching my eyes

(Silence)

Me(smiles):"but not to worry I've learned to smile through the pain even though tears threaten, I smile, you should try it too...I just want us to get through with this cleansing successfully"

Noah(nods):"okay, can you tell me what made you so sad the other day during the consultation? I can't get over how heartbroken you were, what did you see?"

My heart sinks to my knees

Me(looking into his eyes):"just know that sometimes fate works in unfair ways, it's like one minute you have your whole life planned out and you know just how things are going to go then the next minute everything takes a painful turn and there's nothing you can do about it but just accept that that's just life and sometimes even though it's painful and anger can be blinding but there's always a blessing in disguise, the blessing you might not see at that exact moment but once you've accepted that it's the circle of life and learn to live with the way things are, the blessings will slowly start to show, sometimes the road of life takes an unexpected turn and you have no choice but to follow it, to end up in a place you supposed to be"

He nods slowly with a faint smile

Noah:"I understand"

Me(smiles):"I call dibs on showering first!"

Noah:"No but I had my shirt off first"

Me:"you didn't call dibs, sorry you have to wait, prepare the floor where you'll sleep while you wait"

Noah:"woooow"

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

Me:"they sleeping at a hotel tonight"

Vick:"do you think they got separate room?"

Me:"obviously come on, Amahle didn't go to cheat on me"

Vick:"I know someone who could keep a close eye on them for you that side"

Me:"give me a minute"

I take my phone and call her

"Amahle's phone hello?"

Me:"why the fuck are you answering her calls?"

"She's still in the shower, I'll tell her you called"

Me:"why are you in her room?"

"Oh the hotel was full and there was only one room available"

Me(angrily):"what!?"

"Yeah, I'll tell her you called, ayt?"

"Was that my phone Noah!"

I hear her voice shouting from the background

I hang up and look at Vick

Me:"who did you say your guy was?"

He smiles

Vick:"let me call him"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Last night didn't go as I thought it would, after we finished freshening up, we ordered room service, got a few drinks which turned into more few drinks after that I lost count

I look around and the room was a mess

I startle when I notice Noah sleeping on the bed next to me

I shake him

Me:"Noah! Noah! Wake up!"

He slowly moves around stretching and groaning

Noah:"where's the fire?"

Me:"get up, why are you on the bed?"

Noah:"the floor was mad uncomfortable, but don't worry I kept my distance"

My eyes explore his naked body

Me:"you should've worn clothes at least, this is very inappropriate, I shouldn't be in the same bed with you while I'm engaged to be married with another man, let alone being in the same room, please tell me nothing happened"

He rubs his eyes sitting up

Noah:"nothing happened"

Me:"you sure?"

Noah:"positive"

Me:"okay, let's hurry we still have quite a distant drive awaiting us and we also need to buy a few things you will need, we have to also get a goat"

Noah:"a goat?"

Me:"yes"

Noah:"okay, dibs on showering first"

Me(smiles):"yeah whatever I'll clean up this mess so long"

He disappears into the bathroom with only his underwear on

I take my phone and call my man

"Hello?"

Me:"my baby, how you doing?"

"How do you think I'm doing?"

Me:"that doesn't sound good, what's the matter?"

"You know Amahle, you don't have to force yourself to talk to me"

Me:"force myself? What do you mean babe you know I love talking to you why would I have to force myself?"

"You really good at acting, so you going to pretend like your boyfriend didn't answer your phone last night? Like you two were not in the same bedroom? Like you didn't call me back after the call that he answered?"

Me:"oh no baby I was going to call you back but my phone battery was low I ended up charging it then made a mental note to call you in the morning"

"So you still going to pretend like Noah didn't answer your phone and he was not in your bedroom while you were taking a shower?"

Me:"uhm babe... it's not how it sounds like, he was only in my room for a short while but he slept in his own room..."

"There you go fucking lying to me!"

Me:"what do you mean, I'm not lying I promise you, he only came to take something then he left I don't know why he answered my call but I did tell him to never...."

"Did you two sleep in the same room, be honest with me babe"

Me(tearfully):"No we didn't baby...."

"Lies, all lies, how do you expect me to trust you when you lie to me like this, why are you hiding that you shared a room because the hotel was full? Now what do you expect me to think when you lie about it?"

My heart starts pounding fast against my chest as the glasses in my eyes threaten to break blurring my vision

Me(whispers fearfully):"baby, I... wait are you stalking me?"

"Wow..."

Me:"No wait I..."

"Whatever Amahle, you can stay in KZN forever for all I care, I'm sorry but I can't marry a lying woman, a hypocrite who hides under God's name but lies through her teeth like it's nothing, you are embarrassing both God and your ancestors, they gave you such a wonderful gift thinking you have a pure heart that you'd heal hearts not break them, the engagement is off, it's over" (hangs up)

Me:"Keon listen to me I...hello? Keon?"

I sigh and sit on the bed as my heart beats painfully feeling it break as tears stream down my face

"Okay your turn...hey you sure you cleaned aro...."

I break down crying out loud

Noah:"heeyy what wrong sweetheart? Why you crying?"

He asks standing in front of me with a towel wrapped around his waist

Me(crying):"Keon broke up with me!..."

Noah(concerned tone):"what!? Why!?!..."

I shrug my shoulders bas I can't find the strength to explain, he sits next to me and pulls my into his wet cold chest as he was still dripping wet

Me(crying):"I'm a bad person, a disgrace to women, I thought when I answered my calling all curse apon me would all be lifted but Noo even after all these years I still can't keep a man...and it's (crying)...it's always the one I love the most, do I not deserve love Noah? Is there something wrong with me? Why does love not love me? Maybe I should just give up...."

Noah:"sshh don't cry it's his loss trust me, he didn't deserve you..."

Me:"No, I didn't deserve him, this time, I really messed up, I've lost someone really special to me....a good man"

He doesn't say anything but just keeps brushing my back

Me(crying):"honestly it was better when I gave up on love, it's obviously not for me"

Noah(hurtful tone):"don't say that...you deserve all love on this earth"

I get off from his embrace and wipe my tears

Me(sighs):"let me go bath so we can leave for mzinkhulu"

Noah:"Indy...."

I grab my towel and head to the bathroom

.

.

.

\*\*\*



"sometimes the road of life takes an unexpected turn and you have no choice but to follow it, to end up in a place you supposed to be" (Amahle)

Insert 130

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

[A FEW DAYS LATER]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Everything with the cleansing went well even though it took more days than expected but we were now on our way back to Joburg. Honestly right now I just miss Rain, I could really use his hug and his comforting cute voice.

"Amahle...

I look at him

Noah:"you so quiet are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine, I just miss my son"

Noah:"I understand, kids just have a way of making you forget about all the bullshit that happens around us, London's laughs are therapy I tell you"

Me:"you and london have a very strong bond"

Noah(smiles):"she's my everything"

My smile disappears as I look out the window

Me:"I know how that feels"

Noah:"I can't wait to get to know that little man I hope he accepts me, I'm honestly so excited that my first born is a son"

(Silence)

Noah:"hey are you okay?"

Me:"I just...it's nothing"

Noah:"it's about Keon isn't it"

Me:....

Noah:"you truly do love him don't you?"

I nod my head as I feel tears threaten but I hold back

Me:"but he just doesn't trust me, he thinks I'll cheat on him, he even stalked me and found that we were sharing a room, I can't believe he went that far, I know I was wrong to share a room with you but what was I supposed to do, it was circumstances and I knew I wouldn't do anything stupid and he'd never know about the room because it was a stupid inconvenience that was not worth our relationship"

He sighs

Noah:"uhm can I be honest with you?"

Me:"please don't tell me about how he doesn't deserve me because I really care about this man Noah"

Noah:"no actually he does deserve you"

I look at him

Noah:"he is a good guy and he is not stalking you"

Me:"he is, how do you explain him knowing about us sharing a room? He never trusts me around you, ever since the scene in my kitchen when he saw us kissing....

Noah(softly):"how can you love some who doesn't trust you..."

Me:"I don't blame him but I've tried to prove countless times that I don't have feelings for you anymore and I'd never betray him like that"

Noah:"you told him that? That you don't have feelings for me anymore"

I look away from his hurt eyes

Noah:"is that the truth?"

Me:"Yes, it's the truth"

(Silence)

Noah:"I see...uhm the truth is Keon is the right guy for you, the reason he knows about the room is because I'm the one that told him..."

I look at him

Me:"you?..."

Noah:"I'm so sorry I was being petty and at that time I was anticipating these results that he'd get fed up and leave you, because I thought you'd fall right back into my arms and we'd...."

I feel myself running out of breath as my chest closes in on me

Noah:"I know that was a cruel thing to do, and this is not how I imagined it would be, I didn't understand that you really love him in my messed up mind I thought you were just trying to replace me, I truly thought you still had something in there for me, after the way we were getting along and you were yourself again around me I got too confident that I..."

Me(wheezing):"please stop the car....I ... can't breath..."

He parks on the side of the road and comes around to open

Noah(putting the asthma pump in my mouth):"breath in...and out..."

I inhale and exhale until I feel my breathing going, his hand pressing on my chest while the other rests above my butt on my waist

He looks into my eyes with much concern

Noah:"are you breathing sweetheart?"

Me(whispers):"Yes"

Noah:" sweetheart...

Me(panting heavily):"stop, stop calling me that, I'm not your sweetheart, I'm not your anything Noah, please, please stay away from me, you've done it again, I...I'm done with you, you just, you the worst thing that has ever happened to me! You make me unhappy all the time...(lower tone) we make each other unhappy"

Noah:"you don't mean that"

Me:"I do...

Noah:"you never going to forgive me are you?"

Me:"how am I supposed to if you keep doing these selfish hurtful acts over and over again..."

Noah:"I've apologized!..."

Me:"and how many times have you continued doing the same thing..."

Noah:"are you always going to bring it up? I'm trying to be a better person, I really am but nothing I ever do is right, I ignored love and I was forced to marry, I found love I fell too deeply that I ran away from it and I was hated and punished for it, my joy seized to exist, I came back and fought for love and everything I try is wrong instead my love has become my enemy, no matter how much you show me hate Amahle, I love you and that I can never deny, and I've never felt like such a fool for feeling this way even though you no longer share the same feelings for me, I wish that some day this love could leave me so I could be set free from the torture..."

Me:...

Noah:"I now understand, all I want is what's best for you and I've been so self centered that I thought I was what was best for you, I want you to be happy..."

Me:"you've said these words before, I do not believe anything that comes out of your mouth anymore, please, keep your words to yourself, I wish not to hear another word from you"

I get in the car

Me:"can we please go now"

He stands there for a while looking down before turning and walks around to the driver's seat

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

I was in my room playing with my baby while working on a drawing

I was distracted by a knock on the door

Me:"come in"

He made his way inside

Me(smiles):"well hey there baby"

Theo:"mommy"

I open my arms for him he accepts my invite as he rests on my breasts

Me:"are you okay boy?"

He looks at me

Theo:"when are we going back home to daddy?"

Me:"daddy?..."

Theo:"yes, I miss daddy"

Me:"oh...uhm daddy is gone on business, he will be back after a month"

Theo:"but he didn't even say goodbye"

Me:"we will call him tomorrow so you can talk to him and tell him how much you miss him okay"

He smiles excitedly

Theo:"I'm going to go finish the picture I drew for him, do you want to see it mommy?"

Me(smiles):"yes, you will show me once you done"

Theo:"okay bye"

He runs out the door

Me(laughs):"bye"

(Baby sounds)

I look at my baby who has dropped his pacifier, I take it and put it back in his mouth

I take my phone calling Lowell

"Beautiful"

Me:"Lowell..."

"Why so formal, please I go by the name baby or sweet lips or maybe rider oh better yet drill sergeant..."

With my cheeks heated I try to catch my breath from laughter

Me(laughing):"Stop it babe!"

"Aha that's more like it honey buns"

Me(giggling):"whatever....(sighs) I called you for a reason.."

"What is it my love?"

Me:"I need you to do something for me"

"Anything for you Angel"

Me:"I need you to find Chase, wherever he ran away to, tell him that his son needs him, he needs to make himself available to him and we need to break things off properly for Theo to understand"

(Silence)

Me:"babe? Did you hear me? I know if anyone can find him in a short period of time it would be you"

(Silence)

I look at the screen of my phone

Me:"Lowell? Are you still there?"

"(Clears throat)yes I'm still here, don't worry I will look for him and find him for you"

Me(smiling):"thank you, I knew I could count on you drill sergeant"

He chuckles in a low tone

Me:"I love you my rider"

"I love you too my heart"

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

"Daddy?"

I snap out of my thoughts looking at her

Me:"yes honey"

Kendall:"why are you sad?"

Me:"I am not sad"

Kendall:"you know I don't like it when you sad"

I smile

Me:"using my words on me I see"

Kendall:"talk to me daddy, who made you sad? Was it me? I didn't mean to give my veggies to the dog I won't do it again, I'm sorry daddy"

She hugs me I laugh holding her back

Me:"you gave your veggies to the dog?"

Kendall (covers her mouth):"you didn't know"

Me:"I didn't but I'm glad you told me, now I can think of a suitable punishment for you"

She sighs sadly

Kendall:"oh no"

I kiss her cheek

Me:"I'll let it slide since you told the truth"

She hugs me excitedly

Kendall:"yeyi! Is momma and Rain coming home today?"

Me:"I don't think they will come back for a long time..."

Kendall (tearfully):"why not? Did you fight again?"

Me:"we..."

Kendall:"you not going to marry her anymore? You said you will marry her and we will become a family forever"

Me:"kendall..."

Kendall:"please daddy, you said you will not allow anything to break our family again, you promised"

She runs off to her room, I sigh burying my face in my hands

.

.

.



Noah

.  
. .

After hours of a long silent ride I park outside her apartment

She gets out, I follow her to the boot as I attempt to help her with her bags

Amahle:"I got it, I don't need your help"

I bury my hands in my pocket and watch her literally run towards her apartment

I bite my lip and close the boot.

I drive back home with a heavy broken heart I feel my arteries blocking making it hard for me to breath...I grab the bottle of water next to me and try drinking the painful ache away

I park outside the house and make my way inside

Yasmeen:"daddy!"

Me:"hey boys"

I give him a brief hug and Brian a handshake

Me:"where is mom and dad?"

Brian:"they had an early night"

Me:"okay, let me also head to bed, I will see you boys in the morning, don't stay up too late"

Brain:"we won't, good night"

Me:"good night"

I head upstairs to the bedroom and find Emma and London sitting on the bed

London (gasps):"Dada!!..."

I look at her and give her a little frown

London (smiles): "Dadi!!..."

Me: "that's my girl"

I pick her up and kiss her all over, her skin was smooth and clear again she was completely healed

Emma: "how was your trip baby"

I give her London

Me: "I'll be sleeping in the guest room, good night"

Emma: "wait but..."

I walk out slamming the door as I hear London burst into tears calling for me

"(Crying) Dadiiiii...."

I lock myself in the bedroom and sink to the floor as I finally let go of my long held in tears, I hold on to my chest to the sharp peircing pain in my chest, I feel myself losing air once again, I get up taking my phone from my pocket and placing it on the bed and walk to the bathroom, I open the cold water of the shower and sit on the tiles letting my self soak in wetness making it easy for me to cry...I've felt pain before, many times but this was different, I felt like I was dying inside I could feel myself bleeding and with all the knowledge I had of curing broken hearts I could not save my own as I felt it tearing apart

there was no surgery or amount of medicine that could cure what I was feeling...

I stood my weak ass up and walked to the bedroom dripping

I take my phone and make a phone call of a number I stole from Amahle's phone

"Hello?"

Me: "hi"

"Speaking?"

Me: "it's Noah, please don't hang up, I would like us to talk man to man, I have made a mistake and I want to make it right, can we please meet tomorrow night I'll send you the location..."

"And why should I trust you?"

Me:"if you truly love her you will want to hear what I have to say, you are making a big mistake not marrying her"

I drop the call sighing...

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"The shattering of a heart when being broken, is the loudest quiet ever" (Carroll Bryant)

Insert 131

•

•

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

The good thing about sleeping with a broken heart is that, you don't sleep at all and you get to see the beautiful sunrise with a savoring smooth glass of wine and the peacefulness that makes it seem as though the world is not cruel, like there's no such thing as heartbreak, betrayal, poverty and crime, like life isn't complicated and love is easy.

I understand almost anything about the heart and how it works, it's purpose and function, working with the heart was my dream and still is, ask me anything about the heart and I'll tell you, but ask me about love, I'd probably not have a proper answer or any answer at all.

Keon's love is safe, his family accepted me, our children get along well and he makes me happy, he's the definition of a perfect relationship then there's Noah...(sighs)....

I look at the engagement ring on my hand admiring it, I was so close to my happily ever after so close.....now he's also leaving me, I guess close is all I'll ever get when it comes to being happy romantically. I wonder what am I doing wrong, maybe I don't love enough or I'm just not trustworthy for people to believe in me.

Relationships are not for everyone, maybe God wants me to focus on saving people become as successful as I've always dreamt of, Raise Rain the best way I know how and give him all the love that I never got so that one day he doesn't grow up looking for it on all the wrong people, he should never beg to be loved not while I'm still alive....

\*\*\*

Noah:"I've apologized!...

Me:"and how many times have you continued doing the same thing...

Noah:"are you always going to bring it up? I'm trying to be a better person, I really am but nothing I ever do is right, I ignored love and I was forced to marry, I found love I fell too deeply that I ran away from it and I was hated and punished for it, my joy seized to exist, I came back and fought for love and everything I try is wrong instead my love has become my enemy, no matter how much you show me hate Amahle, I love you and that I can never deny, and I've never felt like such a fool for feeling this way even though you no longer share the same feelings for me, I wish that some day this love could leave me so I could be set free from the torture...

\*\*\*\*

Noah:"can I ask you something?"

I nod as my face welcomes a frown

Noah:"did you feel everything I felt?"

Me:"whwhat do you mean?"

He moves closer to me locking me

against the counter leaving a little

space between us

Noah:"did you feel knots in you tummy when I touched you?"

He draws a line down my arm with his

finger making my stomach crunch

Noah:"or slight chill down your spin?"

He brings his face closer, as I hold my

breath

Noah:"or maybe a change in the rhythm of your heartbeat"

He rests his hand on my hip, my breath

hitches

Noah:"did you feel like you were slowly running out of oxygen?"

Me:....

Noah:"tell me you did, cause I felt it all"

Me(whispers):"Noah..."

Noah(whispers):"Amahle...."

His hand reaches the back of my neck

pulling me closer till our lips touch

I try to protest but his lips already  
captivated mine

\*\*\*

I walk back from the balcony into the house and head to Rain's bedroom

I sit on his bed and brush his back gently

Me:"hey baby, wake up..."

He moves a little and remains still

Me(shaking him):"come on my love, wake up gumbdrop"

He opens his eyes as they meet mine and he smiles

Me:"good morning sweetheart"

Rain:"good morning momma"

Me:"it's bath time"

Rain:"but it's still holidays"

Me:"for you yes but mommy has to go to work, should I leave you at granny's  
or you wanna go to work with me?"

Rain(smiling):"can I go to work with you"

Me:"of cause you can go to work with me"

Rain:"but I'm not sick anymore, am I allowed?"

Me:"as long as your mommy is a doctor you are allowed, you just can't go with  
me to the surgery rooms where I cut people"

Rain:"I don't think I want to go to the surgery room yet"

Me(smiles):"come on get up let's get ready"

He gets up and I give him my back so he can hop on as we run to the bathroom  
with him giggling and enjoying the ride

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I just arrived at Lulama's mom's place

and we were chilling in the lounge as the parents were not home.

Me:"just tell Theo that his daddy passed away"

Lulama:" No that will break his heart, and what if he shows up some day when he's older, he'll hate me for lying"

Me:"I'll make sure he doesn't show up"

Lulama:"you can't make sure of that, remember that Chase is a psychopath a good one get is on another level crazy"

Me:"exactly so why do you want someone like that in your child's life?"

Lulama:"I don't but we have to do things properly for Theo's sake, we get a divorce, then he tells him that he's going and will never come back, I want him to disappoint Theo not me"

Me:"I doubt we'll find him though"

She looks at me

Lulama:"you don't want to find him do you?"

Me:"what if he's dead?"

Lulama:"then find his body and give him a proper funeral it'll even be better if he's dead"

I look at her for a while

Lulama:"oh my God, you killed him didn't you?"

Me:"I had to he wanted to hurt our baby"

Lulama:"you lied to me"

Me:"I know baby but I only did what was best for all of us, that guy was crazy and he wasn't just going to kill the baby, I'm sure he would've killed you and Theo too, please don't be mad my love I only...."

My mouth is shut with a kiss as confused as I am I return it

I pull out and try to catch my breath

Me:"what was that for?"

Lulama:"I'm sorry..."

Me(frowns):"for what?"

Lulama:"for not choosing you, for getting married to that jackass for so many years, for making you my side while you should've been my everyday whole main meal, for giving that jerk a baby who was supposed to be your son, you the one I should've been with all these years, I deprived both of us of the happiness we deserved and now an innocent child has to suffer and grow up without his father because of my stupid decisions"

Me:"No no don't say that, your decisions were not stupid, you were manipulated, he made it seem like you had a perfect life with him because he painted himself to be a man of no flaw while hiding a lot of dirt under his shoes, he deceived you, but it doesn't matter anymore because we still young and have our whole lives ahead of us, Theo is now my son he's no different from Owen and Rain they all my children and I've never been so happy to be blessed with all these boys, what more can a man ask for..."

Lulama (smiling):"plus you have another one on the way from Bailey"

Me:"four boys and the love of my life could my life get any better"

Lulama:"if you knock me up again maybe it would, we need a girl"

I smile then stand while picking her up

Me:"say no more, let's go make ourselves a girl"



She giggles as we share a kiss headed to her bedroom

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

The day went by very fast the hospital was very busy today I didn't even get to have a proper lunch break to spend with my son, I couldn't entertain him like I normally do sometimes because I was so busy he just hang out in my office the whole day playing games.

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes baby"

Rain:"is it almost home time?"

Me:"No we still have a few more hours to go, you bored?"

He nods his head

Me:"should I call khulu's to come fetch you?" (Grandma)

Rain:"can I visit daddy"

Me:"oh you want to go to daddy's house, I'll call his mother then"

Rain:"why can't I just go to daddy's own house not grandma's place"

He means his daddy's mother

Me:"don't you like going to your grandma's place?"

He shakes his head

Me:"why not, I thought you said they're house is better than khulu's place"

Rain:"I just don't like it there anymore"

Me:"come here, come sit on momma's lap"

He walks up to me and sits on my lap

Me:"tell mommy, why you don't like it there anymore"

Rain:"you promise you won't tell anyone?"

My heart beat increases worriedly

Me:"yeah yes I promise I won't tell, it will be just between us"

He sighs sadly and look at me then looks down

Me:"you can trust me baby, you know mommy would never do anything that would hurt your feelings"

Rain:"grandma always shouts at me and hits me"

Me(astonished):"what!?! She hits you? Where? How, with what?"

Rain (tearfully):"with a belt, and she grabs my ears painfully, she always shouts at me when grandpa's gone to work and she said I mustn't tell you because she will tell daddy that I'm always naughty and daddy won't love me anymore"

My heart sinks in pain as I feel tears threaten

Me(whispers in pain):"what? But how come I never saw the marks?"

I pull up his shirt to look for scars but his skin is so clear there's no sign of beatings

Rain:"she rubs something that makes me feel better to remove the red parts"

I pull him in for a hug, I knew Lowell's mother doesn't like me but I never thought she'd do this to her own grandchild, I can't believe my baby is experiencing abuse right under my nose, how can I not notice this, how could I be so blind, for someone who went through this and worse I should've seen the signs could a five year old be really that good at hiding things like this?

Me(crying silently):"I'm so sorry you went through that baby, I promise you will never go there ever again okay?"

Rain:"don't tell anyone momma"

Me:"don't worry I won't, if anyone ever hits you, you tell me okay even when they say you mustn't tell me or they will kill me or daddy you must still tell me because no one can ever kill mommy, remember your momma is a hero and she can save any life even her own and she can talk to powerful angels who protect us, so you can tell me anything okay?"

Rain(nodding):"yes momma"

I kiss him all over his face

Me:"thank you for telling me, now I can protect you from her...no one can ever hurt my baby and get away with it, I love you okay"

Rain:"I love you more"

I kiss his forehead and squeeze him into my embrace, Norah has really taken it too far now, I've tolerated her hatred for me for far too long for the sake of my baby, but now she beats my child, who gave her the right, I don't even hit Rain, I swear she has another thing coming for her that old hag of a witch!

We will never be happy while the Nhlabathis are in our lives, I can't let my son grow around these evil people

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

It was getting late and almost time to go meet up with Keon, he gave me his own location instead of the one I sent him.

London was playing with my phone on the bed while I was getting ready.

Me:"I'm going to take that now"

She frowns as she makes crying sounds

Me:"okay can I please have it please"

She looks at me and smiles

Me:"please"

She gives me the phone and I hand her a toy which distracts her mind right away

I pick her up and we head to the lounge

Me:"please take London there's somewhere I need to be"

Mom:"okay, come here princess"

Emma:"where you going? Argh why do I even ask"

Me:"I'll be right back"

Emma:"come to mommy baby"

Me:"don't touch her Emma, she likes mom just let her be happy you will just make her cry"

Emma:"she's my baby too why should I be like a stranger to her"

Me:"you should've thought of that before you involved witchcraft in our lives, babies can sense evil you know"

She looks at me shocked in disbelief

Me:"yeah try to swallow that lump we'll carry on with this when I get back, mom I trust you with my baby, don't let this witch touch her, actually it'd be even better if I come back and she's gone cause God knows what I'll do to her when I get back, and that's a warning so don't make me do something I won't regret, you have kids to think about"

I walk out and drive to the location

I got there and parked my car at the side of the road, this place looked a bit shady

but I never make the mistake of meeting up with people who are my enemies without bringing back up so my guys were not too far from me

I saw his car pulling up, I take my gun from under my seat and load it before tucking it in my back....

\*\*\*

Amahle:"oh so you are proud about what you did, you wanted to reach me some lesson? Wow you are such a jerk! And what do you mean I move on so quick, it took me six years to move on from you but just because its someone else that I'm moving on with it's a problem and it's too soon? I wish someone warned me about being too quick with you! How long did it take you to move on huh? To wreck another man's home and be with a married woman!? How long!? Now you wanna wreck another man's home that he's still trying to build with me, is that all you know?

Me:"Amahle....

Amahle:"No!.... not all men are sick like you even though it took me years to see it and even if Keon is a sick coward like you then I'll see it for myself I don't need you being my father, I already know love is not the luckiest thing I've ever gotten and I've pretty much accepted it, my life was not meant to be all bed and roses and that's okay with me, I know Keon is not perfect but who made me perfect to deserve someone perfect? When the time comes for him to reveal himself to me then that time will come and I'll deal with it like how I've dealt with all the lemons that have been thrown at me ...(sighs)... I knew this nice guy behavior was just a front, you'll forever be a dickhead"

\*\*\*

I put the gun back under the seat and walk out heading to him.

We reached a building that looks like it was it was demolished by a construction site to build something else but was never used.

Me:"damn you rejected my location for this shit place?"

Keon:"just get to the point I didn't come here for chit chat"

Me:"I just thought we'd find some place comfortable"

Keon:"there's nothing comfortable about this just say what you wanted to say I left my daughter alone"

Me(sighs):"fine, I just wanted you to know that Amahle would never cheat on you..."

Keon:"cheesy coming from you when you the one she cheated with on your brother, if you could do your own brother like that who am I?"

Me:"that was different, it wasn't her fault, I was stupid and used her, I had a goal and I did everything to achieve it and I'll forever regret it..but this is not about that, She really loves you and with the hotel thing it was one of my tricks again thinking that I still had that affect on her, but I messed up so bad that I didn't realize I don't have that power over her heart anymore and...."

Keon:"and?..."

Me:"and you the one with that power now, I guess when I came back I thought maybe she's just angry but if I persist and not give up on her, her anger would eventually die down and she'd forgive me and..."

Keon:"you'd live happily ever after, what you thought this was? A fairytale? In the real world when you hurt someone that bad expect them to never allow you back in their lives again"

Me:"yeah please save me the speech, all I came to say is, the hotel issue wasn't Amahle's fault, it was all my plans to break you two up and she told me off, so please go back to her and make that woman as happy as you make her, I will keep my distance, my only business with her will be about Rain, please take good care of her and my son, if I hear that you put hands on her or my son in a hurtful manner I will kill you with no hesitation and this is not a threat it's just a friendly warning, that woman has my heart you hurt her you hurt me, you hurt my son you hurt me and the truth is when people hurt people who I love I don't hurt those people back I take them out...I'm sure this is evident enough of the lengths I'd go for the ones I love, so I'm asking you to please marry Amahle and give her the life she deserves the one I failed to give her, I'm letting her go and I promise not to interfere with your relationship with her again, I'm not asking to be your friend because that will never happen and I'll probably never like you but we can be civil for the sake of the girl we love"

He bursts into laughter

Keon:"you want me to believe that bullshit, you think I don't know what you up to I'm not buying this shit, Amahle and I will work things out without your permission and we definitely don't need you in our lives..."

Me:"nah it's not even like that, I came here to make peace..."

Keon:"and how long that will last until Amahle shows you the slightest act of kindness again for you to use it to your advantage..."

Me:"I don't expect you to believe me but I wouldn't waste my time here with you telling you to fuck the woman I love properly, you the last person on this earth I wish to be around to, so yeah that's all from me..."

I feel my phone vibrate from my back pocket, I reach for it

(Gun shots)

I feel a very hot painful sensation on the top side of my chest near my shoulder, I look at my bleeding as the blood pours out like running water, I look up at him

Me:"why did you do that...."

Keon:"you were about to take out a gun"

I show him my phone...

Me:"I'm not..."

I fall to the ground as I feel myself getting weak

Keon (panicking):"ohh shit!...I'm so sorry about that I thought you wanted to kill me..."

Me (weak tone):"please..help me..."

He paces up and down

Keon:"I'm sorry man but I was never here..I'll call people to help you"

He runs away

Me:wait... ahh fuck...

I try to look at my phone and notice it was Amahle calling me...I press the call button as I let go of the phone feeling myself running out of breath by the minute

"Hello!?!..

"Noah I know I said mean things to you but we have to talk it's important and it's about Rain he....

Her voice fades away as my eyes get heavier....

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"Sometimes it's not the butterflies that tell you you're in love but the pain"

(Unknown)

Insert 132

.

.

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

.

.

I had just finished tucking Rain in bed and I was getting myself ready for bed as I threw on my night dress.



I got in the covers and tried to fall asleep but I couldn't, something was not right, I was feeling this uncomfortable pain on my chest, I should pray.

I got up as I was about to go on my knees there was a knock at the door.

I check the time and it's almost midnight

I head towards the main door

Me:"who is it?"

"It's me, Keon"

Confused as I am I open the door for him

Me:"hey"

Keon(panting heavily):"hey may I come in?"

Me(perplexed):"uhm yeah"

He makes his way inside

Me:"Keon, uhm what are you doing here?"

Keon:"I'm sorry I didn't know I wasn't welcome anymore"

Me:"you are welcome you always welcome, I just thought, I thought you were mad at me, you broke up with me"

Keon:"yes I was angry and people do stupid things when they angry, but I'm not angry anymore and I've had time to think about it, Amahle I'm miserable without you and I still need you as the woman I grow old with, I love you and I want to be with you"

Me:"Keon you know you can't just keep walking in and out of my life like it's nothing, if you knew you still want to be with me you should've waited for me to come back so we can talk, it's not just you and I in this relationship....(groans on pain)... aahhh

He rushes to me

Keon:"what's wrong?"

Me:"argh it's nothing just a little pain in my chest, it just came from no where"

He moves closer

Keon:"let me see"

He slides down the shoulder sling of my dress slowly touching my shoulder

Keon:"is it here?"

Me:"lower"

He brushes his hand down to my chest

Keon:"here?"

I nod my head

He brings his face closer and kisses it

Me:"keon..."

Keon:"is this not helping?"

He continues kissing me seductively as his hand slides down to my ass and his fingers in between my cheeks rubbing me gently, I close my eyes

Me(moans):"mmh... Keon..stop"

He brings his face in front of mine while still rubbing me making me wet

Keon:"make me"

I was about to talk when he shut me up with a kiss, after gathering enough strength I push him off

Me:"no more break ups"

Keon:"I promise, I'm sorry for not trusting you, that was lame of me, I should've known that it was all part of his plan to come between us, I won't allow that to happen again...I'm so sorry"

He smashes his lips on mine french kissing me as he picks me up and we head to my bedroom

I stop the kiss

Me:"wait, how do you know it was part of his plan? Did he tell you?"

Keon:"No, I just had time to think and I know how he's been trying to break us up since he came back so I figure this was all part of his plan...it was right?"

Me:"well..yeah but he..."

Keon:"then anything else doesn't matter, I was stupid for not trusting you.."

Me:"but Noah didn't..."

Keon:"let's not talk about him, please, I missed you, I just want you"

He kisses me again, he throws me on the bed getting between my legs, he pushes my panties down as I take off his shirt and help him take off his pants, before I knew it he was naked with his flesh against mine rubbing his hard dick between my wet pussy lips

Keon:"will you please marry me, once more"

Me(smiling):"yes, I'll marry you once more"

We kiss, a moan escapes my mouth as he pushes himself inside me then starts moving back and forth

"Ahhh...."

.

.

.

Emma

.

.

.

I threw my clothes in my suitcase, I have to get out of here before Noah comes back, I should've known when he said he was going to get professional help to heal London that it was traditional help, how did I not notice that she actually got better when he came back, meaning that he got spiritual help, Oh God I knew someday this would back fire I just didn't think this soon.. everyone was asleep and I already packed for the kids.

After taking everything to the car I went to wake them up

Me:"Brian, Yasmeen wake up"

They wake up confused

Brian:"what's going on mom?"

Me:"your dad wants you to come visit"

Brian:"can't it wait till the morning?"

Me:"we can't, Cape town is far and we driving so we have to be there before night he booked a plane he's taking you somewhere before School opens"

Yasmeen:"yes! I missed daddy, let's go"

Brian:"okay let us pack first"

Me:"I already did that, just go to the car, we have to get going fast before we wake up anyone"

Brian:"we not going to say goodbye to Noah?"

Me:"he already knows we going, we'll call him in the road"

Brian:"okay"

They get up and follow after me, we get in Noah's car since he left it, he probably took one of his parents cars, there are a lot of cars in this house, it's sad that I couldn't give my kids this kind of life, I've totally failed them

I start the car and drive off

Brian:"we leaving london?"

Me:"yes, she still needs special attention from doctors, I will come back for her, Noah doesn't mind taking care of her for now"

Yasmeen:"did sad say where he's taking us"

Me:"it's a surprise"

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I woke up panting heavily sweating

I look beside me and he was not in the bed.

I get up to go wash my face by the bathroom sink cooling myself down.

I head to the lounge looking for Keon but he was no where to be found

I took my phone and there was nothing, well nothing that I was expecting, he didn't reply to me yesterday. Maybe he doesn't care about Rain, I've pushed him so far that he also wants to stay away from his son, or maybe he had more important things to do.

I dial his number and call him it takes me to voicemail

Me:"hey...I know I'm probably starting to annoy you, for someone who wanted you away I'm sure not helping, anyway I know you don't care and I don't expect you to but I just had a very scary dream about you, I shot you, it sounds unbelievable I know I'd never do that to you or to anyone I'm not sure what it means but I think you in danger and the danger comes from me, I need to know that you okay and if you are uhm please be careful of your surroundings....

The phone cuts me

I sigh and head to Rain's bedroom when a call comes through, it's Lowell

Me:"hello?"

"Noah was shot"

Me:"what?"

"He was found in some abandoned building"

Me:"ppp..ppplease tell me he's alive"

"He's in a very critical condition he's admitted in hospital "

Me(sighs):"okay okay I'll be right there, I'll be right there, wwait which hospital?"

"The one you work at"

I drop the call and hurry to the bedroom to change into my work clothes

I rush up to Rain's bedroom and pick him up while in his sleep, I put him in the back seat to continue with his sleep as I rush to the hospital.

After a few minutes I get there and take Rain as we rush inside the hospital

I put him on the bed in my office

I rush to the ICU sections when I bump into a doctor

Me(panting):"hey, hi, do you know where Noah Nhlabathi is admitted?"

Dr:"second room on your left"

Me:"thank you"

I rush to his ward and look around till I find his bed where Lowell was standing

I stand next to his bed

Me:"has he woken up?"

Lowell:"Not yet, I just got here as well, we the only ones that know, I didn't want to stress the parents until I knew whether he's dead or not, and since he's alive I'll let him decide whether to tell them or not"

Me:"what?..."

Lowell:"it's something we do"

Me:"you do this all the time?"

Lowell:"No, I mean it's something we agreed on"

Me:"you knew this was going to happen?"

Lowell:"what no it was a long time ago, you know what nevermind, I'll give you two privacy maybe he'll wake up to your voice"

I look at him perplexed as he walks away

I look back at Noah who's breathing through the oxygen machine

Me:"I was so scared, I thought you were dead for a minute there, the thought of you dying after the last encounter I had with you, I would've regret it for the rest of my life... please wake up"

"anything for you sweetheart"

I startle moving away from his bed

He laughs then groans in pain

Noah:"it'd take more than a bullet to kill me sweetheart"

I walk closer to his bed

Me:"you were awake this whole time"

Noah:"yeah I asked Lowell to call you"

Me:"but he said you...(sighs)..."

Noah:"I'm sorry but I needed you to rush here so you can tell me the important thing you wanted to tell me about Rain, it sounded very serious but I couldn't hear you properly because I was passing out from the shot "

Me:"who did this to you? You should report them"

He stares into my eyes for a while then side smiles

Noah:"don't worry about that, tell me about Rain"

Me:"don't worry about that, it can wait, I'll take care of it"

Noah:"come on tell me"

Me:"No, it's okay really, I overreacted, it's nothing I can't handle"

Noah:"okay then and I'm sure Keon can help you now that you two are back together"

Me(frowns):"wait...how did you know that?"

Noah:"I can see it on your face, you glowing..."

I touch my face

Me:"I'm not..."

Noah(chuckles):"okay I noticed you wearing the ring again, by the way, it looks good on you"

I look at my finger playing with the ring, I take it off then slide it back in again

Me:"uhm...dddoo yyyou think I'm rushing things?"

Noah:....

I look into his eyes as he looks back into mine

Me:"do you?"

Noah:"it doesn't matter what I think, not anymore, if you love him then you shouldn't allow anyone to influence your feelings and choices about your love, you love him right?"

Me:...

Noah:"right?"

I look down at the ring

Me:"he..he makes me happy..."

Noah:"and that's enough reason to marry him, if he makes you happy then by all means, don't let go of that because it's very rare to find someone that can make someone happy in this world filled with cruel people, and more than anything I'd love to see you happy, even though it's with someone else, I won't lie it hurts really bad this gun shot does not match up to the pain I felt in my heart, it feels like I'm having a heart attack over and over again but I'm not dying even though it's killing me, it really is the worst pain in the world, and now I finally understand how you must've felt the day I left you by yourself, young confused, heartbroken and pregnant, but I'm sure the pain I'm feeling is nothing compared to what you've been through..so please, marry Keon I need you happy..."

I sniff as tears roll down my cheeks

Me:"please don't compare our pain...your pain is not nothing, you have been through so much too..."



Noah:"all I ask for is forgiveness but if you not ready to forgive me now then I understand but...

Me:"I forgive you...

Noah:"really?"

Me:"yeah, I'm sorry for all those things I said...

Noah(chuckles):"don't be sorry I understand, I just want you to know that I didn't mean to make you unhappy, the whole time we was together I thought I was making you happy..."

Me:"Noah, you did make me happy, the only time you made me unhappy was when you left me for years and watching my baby grow without you when I knew how much of a cool father you would've been, watching him grow into you, his heart problem, every night I prayed that you'd come back before he died because I knew you were the only person that could save him, all of that built up a lot of anger in me for you..."

Noah:"I know but you were right, I am crazy and sick and not every man is like me..."

Me:"you not...."

He takes my hand and pulls it to his chest

Noah:"I am, I'm a dickhead, (laughs a bit) I remember how everyone around me used to say the same thing about me, you crazy, you a mental case, you need God, even my own mother even though she never said it in direct words but she did make me feel extra special telling me God loves me the way I am which meant that no one loved me the way I was except some invisible man that deep down we all not even sure he exists... then you came along, you brought so much laughter and joy into my life, you made me forget about the monster I am, you the only person who believed that I wasn't crazy and the only person who showed me real genuine love despite how toxic I was for you, you never said God loves me as I am, but you told me that you loved me as I am and for the first time I felt safe in a woman's arms, I believed you, I guess when I came back I'd still come back to that same safe place not realizing the damage I've done, and now I've turned you to be like them I killed my special place in your

heart and it was hard accepting it cause I thought if I dig a little deeper fight a little more I'll find it, it was gone, and now you hate me, I'm so sorry"

Me(crying silently):"I I'm sorry I said all of that, I didn't mean it, you not crazy you have never really had full control of your thoughts and emotions, your whole life you've been followed by dark magic, the choices you made were influenced, that why I never gave up on you that easily when you left cause deep down I understood why and I needed you to know that I understand, but the way you fought me I came to a breaking point because I also lost safe place which was in between your arms, when years passed without any kind of communication, when you even cut off your family, that's when the anger started even though I understood I also knew that you were also in control of yourself most of the time, but it must be hard being yourself when so many people were playing God with your life, I understand that you left to protect me and that's why there's still love in me for you, but what I didn't understand is the lack of faith in me that I could've helped you and all of this would've been avoided, you didn't have faith in me but you knew that I could help you, I guess that also fueled my anger, and then you decide to come back when I had just finally accepted that you never coming back, that I was really dead to you, when I've finally accepted that I should move on and I found someone who turned out to be so perfect, who blended in with me and my son someone who turned out to be something i thought no body could be with me but you, my happy place...just when I was starting to learn to live without you, you show up which made me more angry because now even though I forgave you, we couldn't be able to go back to the way things were and that made me so angry at you...so you see, I don't hate you Noah, I could never hate you all the things I said came from a dark place, a place of anger that I couldn't control because every time I looked at you and wished to hate you my heart didn't allow me which just made me more mad at myself for still feeling this way after everything that transpired"

The room falls silent with my hand still in his on his chest making me feel his heartbeat, he had tears in his eyes

Noah:"I'm sorry everything that happened had to happen..."

Me:"it's okay it's not your fault..."

Noah:"I wish that you and Keon have a better chance at love and you live happily ever after, I hope he gives you everything I dreamt of giving you, I want

you two to buy a nice family house in a safe children friendly environment, I want him to take you all over the world, he should take you to Paris and not the one in soweto...

I laugh through the tears

\*\*\*\*

Noah:"one day I'll take you to Paris"

Me:"Paris as in like the one in france Paris?"

He laughs

Noah:"no as in like the one in Soweto"

He says sarcastically

I laugh and wrap my arms around his neck

Me:"I can't wait for us to travel together"

Noah:"all over the world, just me..."

Me:"and I..."

He kisses my lips again

Noah:"can't get enough of your lips"

I rest my forehead on his, this is the best feeling ever

\*\*\*

Noah:"and he should support all your dreams, celebrate all your wins even the small ones like someday finally making pancakes right without burning them...(we laugh)...he should not get mad when you throw your mean but good pranks on him, and he should laugh at all your jokes even though they not funny sometimes..."

Me(laughing through tears):"you thought my jokes were not funny?"

Noah(laughs):"hey I said sometimes but your jokes are always funny to me, you two should have a big family for Rainy to have more brothers and sisters, you be happy and grow very old together"

Me(crying):"I wish things were different"

Noah:"me too, but I wish you all the best, and I'm not angry at you neither do I hate you, (breaking voice) I will always love you...and if you ever need me, I'll always be here for you, I don't mind taking bullets for you as you can see bullets got nothing on me (laughs sadly) if anyone ever hurts you or my son, I'll deal with them personally...it's time for you to be happy now sweetheart, go be happy okay...

I shake my head bursting into cries

He pulls me into his chest a bit far from his bandage

Noah:"it's okay, I'll never hurt you again, you are now safe from me now"

It's funny how he says that but it's hurting me and how he says I'm safe from him when I'm feeling as safe as I've ever been right here in his arms

"What's going on here?"

I get off him and look behind me

I wipe my tears

Me(frowns):"Keon...what are you doing here?"

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"It's amazing how someone can break your heart so bad and you can still love them with the broken pieces" (Ella Harper)

Insert 133

.

.

•

•

•

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Keon:"I came to check on you at your work since I left early without saying a word"

He walks closer

Keon:"I left Kendall home alone last night, I didn't want her to wake up while I was not there"

Me:"oh.. okay, you should've waited for me in my office"

Keon:"why? Did I interrupt something?"

Noah:"No you didn't interrupt anything"

Keon:"it didn't look like nothing"

Me:"Keon..."

Keon:"if I'm interrupting just tell me and I'll leave"

Me:"I'm at work, now I can't communicate with patients"

Keon:"I didn't say you couldn't"

Me:.....

Keon:"is this part of your plan as well, holding her into your chest is what you call letting her go?"

Noah:"No I meant what I said, this, it was nothing, we were just letting go of the past so that you two can start the future at a clean slate"

Keon:" you'll forever be around her won't you, you do and day anything to weaken her heart and give you affection"

Me:"what?"

Noah:"I promised to stay away and I will"

Me:"wait are you hearing yourself right now? Aren't you the same guy who was apologizing for not trusting me, yet here you are again assuming, accusing and doubting my love for you"

Keon:"oh I'm sorry so I should smile and be happy when I walk into you passionately hugging your ex boyfriend?"

Me:"we were just talking Keon"

Keon:"I didn't know talking involved being physical, you don't have to believe everything he says, he'll say anything to come between us"

Me:"wow you know what, I'm not about to explain myself to you just to satisfy your insecurities, now if you don't mind waiting in my office, I'll be with you when I'm done"

Keon:"I'm not going anywhere"

I raise my brow shocked by his determination, I look at him for a while as I sense a strong energy coming from the both of them

I look at Keon

Me:"Keon..."

Keon:"my love?"

Me:"where were you last night? You came back to me panting wreaking with fear and guilt apologizing to me like you had just done something terrible"

His eyes move from me looking at Noah

Me:"and you just said I shouldn't believe anything Noah tells me he'll do anything to come between us, what would Noah tell me to come between us when I already know everything about you? And when you came back last night

you were so positive it was Noah's plan to make us sleep in the same room...and now you walk into me in this room in hospital when my shift doesn't start until later today so how were you so sure that I was at work?"

Keon:"where are all these questions coming from? Last night I woke up with the fear of losing you forever so I couldn't wait until morning that's why I rushed to your place, after not finding you at your house the security told me you left for work because you were wearing your scrubs, and I said don't believe everything that Noah says because all this Noah has ever done is to say things that are untrue to break us up, or did you forget how he trespassed in my house to tell you that I killed my brother trying to prove that I'm some psycho serial killer who kills their family for the fun of it, a doctor told me you were in this ward but your shift hasn't started but you were just here to see someone so I wouldn't be disturbing if I came in, and then I find you cuddling with him...so I don't know how you expect me to act, maybe you wanted me to smile and say ncwoo?"

Me:"so you think I'd just leave you for Noah of all people right after we just got back together..."

Keon:"I don't know you tell me"

I scoff shaking my head in disbelief

I look at Noah

Me:"Noah..."

Noah:"Indigo"

I sigh shying away from his eyes before looking back at him

Me:"what happened last night, who shot you"

Keon:"wow, so this is what all this questioning is about? You think I shot him?"

Me:"well did he?"

The room falls quiet as they look at each other, my eyes lock with Keon

Me:"if there's anytime that honesty is needed it's now"

(Silence)

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

I was in a restaurant waiting for someone

Waitress:"good morning sir"

I look up at her

Me:"good morning beautiful"

She blushes exposing her tiny dimples

Waitress:"can I get you anything?"

Me:"your name and number would satisfy me"

She giggles

Waitress:"my name is Lumkile sorry but my number is not available"

Me:"aww what a bummer Lumkile"

"Already flirting with the waitress"

He says sitting across me

Me:"hey man I was about to order something but her number unfortunately is not on the menu

Aiden:"aw that's a shame, but I'll get a bubble gum milkshake please"

Me:"bubble gum milkshake? How old are you 6?"

Waitress:"will that be all"

He looks at me



Aiden:"will that be all?"

Me:"I'll have a bottle of hunters dry"

Waitress:"coming right up"

Aiden:"so what did you need my help with?"

Me:"are you seriously going to drink bubble gum milkshake?"

Aiden:"it's better than strawberry and chocolate, what don't you like bubble gum"

I laugh at him

Aiden:"ai man when you around kids all the time you start liking what they like"

Me:"I see... anyway I want you to dig up this guy, my brother tried but didn't find anything that he was ashamed of and keeping a secret, there has to be something no one is perfect, he shot my brother but there's no proof and my brother doesn't want to rat him out, he's playing this good guy act for the sake of his love, this man took my brother's woman and last night almost took his life and he just wants to let him be, I can't let that happen, I need you to dig up everything not just about him but his family, friends, ex girlfriends or wives his businesses everything"

Aiden:"don't worry I'll find something"

Me:"I know you don't disappoint, after Chase I'll always trust you with these, so consider yourself on my payroll from now on"

Aiden:"I'm glad to hear that"

Our drinks come, she hands me my drink with a little piece of paper, I look at it and it was her number, I look up at her

Me(smiling):"thank you very much"

Waitress (blushing):"you welcome"

Aiden (sipping on his milkshake):"aren't you in a serious relationship with someone?"

Me:"aren't you married to be drinking kids milkshakes and meddling in my business?"

He laughs shaking his head

Aiden:"dick"

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"I don't know who shot me, it was dark and it was a robbery, they took my wallet"

Keon:"why would I steal money when I have my own"

She looks at me

Amahle:"are you sure?"

Me:"yeah"

Keon:"I can't believe you thought I'd do something like this"

He walks out

Amahle:"Keon!...(sighs)"

She looks back at me

Amahle:"why are you protecting whoever did this to you, I know you Noah and I know you lying because your heart rate on the machine went up"

I look at the machine, I forgot about that

Me:"my heart rate went up because you made me think about a night I almost lost my life"

Amahle: "I'm sorry"

Me: "it's okay"

Amahle: "if you knew who did this to you, you'd tell me?"

Me: "if you wanted to know and I knew who shot me, I'd tell you, you know I'm always up front with you"

She nods

Me: "please go after your man, I think you just broke his heart"

Amahle (sighs): "but what did I do this time"

Me: "he's jealous of you Amahle meaning that he loves you very much and seeing you around someone you have a history with being vulnerable and crying on his chest, it broke his heart, you should go after him and explain everything let him know that he has nothing to worry about"

Amahle: "remember you asked me how could I love someone who doesn't trust me"

Me: "yeah but that was my jealousy talking before I understood how much you truly loved him"

She looks down

Amahle: "well now I'm starting to ask myself the same question, how can I be with someone who doesn't believe me"

Me: "don't do that, any man would've acted the way he's acting, he's actually better, I would've long killed him has roles been switched"

She looks at me with a frown

Me: "but he didn't, stop doubting him and he'll stop doubting you, you two are good for each other, he loves you Amahle and you love him too, so don't let anyone, not even me, get in the way of that, he's what you've been looking for"

Her eyes lock with mine as I notice tears well up while she avoids blinking them away

Amahle: "what if he's not what I've been looking for?"

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

"What if he's not what I've been looking for?"

I was standing close by listening to what they were saying and her words crushed my heart

I walked away

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Me:"stop it, don't say that, you are happy Amahle! He makes you happy, his family loves you and accepts you, he's never murdered anyone cold bloodedly, he's never left you for years, he's never hurt you physically or tried to kill you before breaking up with you leaving you stranded, you deserve better, you deserve him, those are your words remember!?! so get out of here and go after the man that you love"

Amahle:.....

Me:"GO! Get the fuck out of here!!!"

she startles and walks away backwards with tears rolling down her face before turning and running out.

I sigh looking at the ceiling as I feel the pain in my chest coming back again, I break down crying as I cover my eyes with my hand

Me:"Shit! Fuck! It hurts"

I remove all the tubes connected to me

Me:"I have to get out of here"

Nurse:"sorry sir but you can't go like this"

Me:"where are my clothes"

Nurse:"the doctor said you can..."

Me:"fuck what the doctor said, I need to get home, you know who I am right?"

Nurse:"of cause doctor Nhlabathi"

Me:"so you know that I can take care of myself, please bring my clothes and my car keys"

Nurse:"yes doctor"

She walks away...

After a few minutes she comes back with a doctor and my clothes

Doctor:"sir you were to be discharged tomorrow"

Me:"what's the difference?"

Doctor:"okay you can collect your treatment in the front"

Me:"thanks"

I dress up and head out collecting the treatment as instructed before driving home

I rush inside the house looking for Emma but she was not here

Me:"how could you let her go mah! Where's London?"

Mom:"she left while we were sleeping, she left London since she was sleeping in my room"

Me(sighs):"okay please bring her to me quickly"

Mom:"okay"

A few moments later she comes down the stairs carrying London and brings her to me in the lounge, I hid the whiskey I was drinking next to the couch

She smiles as soon as she sees me

Me(smiles):"there's my princess"

I take her from mom

Me:" I go for a few hours and you grow so much? Huh? Where you rushing to huh princess? What's the rush baby"

I keep kissing her exchanging cheeks as she keeps giggling

Me:"mma daddy's cheek"

London (leaning closer):"mmaaaa..."

That's the kissing sounds she does

Me(excitedly):"again again!"

London (giggling):"mmaaaa!!..."

I kiss her all over her face tickling her making her laugh out loud

Me:"say I love daddy!"

She's consumed in laughter not able to speak

Me:"say I love daddy London!.."

London (giggling loudly):"dadiii!!"

She can't say a lot of things yet but she's a fast learner, she can only repeat a few things and can listen to instructions

Mom:"wow she's so happy around you, you make a cute daddy and daughter, I'm so happy to see it"

I look at her

Me:"we need to talk mah"

"What are you doing home?"

I look at him as he makes his way to us

Lowell:"you were not supposed...."

He shuts his mouth as he realizes that mom is here

Mom:"must be my lucky day, both my sons are home at the same time, let me ask Clara to prepare us lunch"

Me:"no need, I just want us to talk about something important, I'm actually glad Lowell is here, where's dad, he also needs to hear this"

Mom:"is everything okay?"

Me:"everything is fine, can you please call dad"

Mom:"he's upstairs sleeping had a late night..."

Lowell:"eeww spare us the details"

Mom(laughs):"tsek wena, not everything is about that, he was working, let me go wake him up"

She walks away and heads upstairs

Lowell:"and then? Family meeting? Zikhiphani?" (What's up?)

Me:"it time the truth comes out, for everything"

Lowell:"you sure about this?"

Me:"yeah..."

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I managed to find Keon before he could leave, we were standing by the parking lot next to his car

Me:"about what happened back there"

Keon:"it's okay..."

Me:"No it's not, I know how it may have looked but I promise you, that was the first real talk we've had in years, about what happened and how we felt, it was a painful conversation because for the first time I was talking to him without anger, it was a sincere apology from the both of us and acknowledgement of how badly we hurt each other, we forgave and we're accepting the reality of how things are now, I used to be in love with him and we shared something I don't think I'll ever forget, we were letting go of what happened in the past so we can both be able to move on, it wasn't easy and my heart betrayed me, I was crying, he was trying to calm me down and that's what you walked into, I'm sorry and I hope you understand"

Keon:...

Me:"I'm also sorry for suspecting that you shot him, it's just, the two of you have been fighting a lot and I know how much you hate him, I thought maybe he did something to you that might've made you act irrationally and shoot him, I know you not that type of person but I also know how badly Noah has pushed your buttons and at some point I think everyone has a breaking point, something like this once happened when his brother shot him because they were fighting because of me and it's not something I'm proud of, I hate that I'm always in this kind of situations, I don't do it on purpose I swear, it makes me feel horrible"

Keon:"do you want to be with Noah?"

I look at him and scoff in disbelief

Me:"did you hear anything I just said?"

Keon I want you! I'm standing in front of you wearing your ring asking you for forgiveness for something that was innocent but because you didn't see it that



way I'm apologizing, I'm nursing your trust issues and insecurities, that's all I've been doing since Noah came, no matter how many times I tried to prove that I love you and I'd never cheat on you, you still find ways to make it seem as though I'm cheating or doing something wrong, I'm honestly getting tired of trying to earn your trust, I thought it was something that should come automatically with love but I guess whoever broke you really did some damage because now I'm left being the one who should keep proving myself to be worthy...

Keon:"you haven't answered my question"

Me:"you shouldn't worry about Noah because he just told me that I should marry you and have kids with you that I should love you and be happy with you..."

Keon:"but is that what you want"

Me:"if it wasn't what I wanted I wouldn't be standing here begging for your trust"

(Silence)

Keon:"what if I'm not the one you've been looking for?"

Me:"okay, this is obviously not going anywhere..."

I take off the ring

Keon (sighs):"wait... don't take it off"

I look at him

Keon:"I'm sorry, you right, I've been acting disgustingly insecure lately, to be honest I've been jealous of the way you loved him, I thought your love for him would blind or over power your love for me and you'd fall for his seductions, I know how much you were in love with him and it killed me everytime you had to be next to him or any where around him, I enjoyed it when you hated him and when you started being nice to him I felt betrayed, I know it sounds crazy, I became paranoid...I'm sorry, I promise I'll do better, I truly wholeheartedly love you and I don't want to lose you"

Me:"then let's stop all this fighting against each other"

Keon:"I agree, please forgive me"

Me(smiles):"I already have"

Keon:"I love you"

I move closer to him and we share a hug

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"At times we get stuck somewhere between what if, what might, what could have, and what never will...when all we need to know is, what actually is"  
(Christina Hart)

Insert 134

•

•

•

•

•

Noah

•

•

•

•

•

Mom:"so Rain is your son"

Me:"yes"

Dad:"I understand why she did what she did, you gave her no other choice"

Mom:"all this time I've been defending you I've been hating this girl for playing you two like idiots jumping from one brother to the other but you the ones who've been playing her from the very beginning...(covers her mouth)...oh God what have I done"

Me:"what do you mean?"

Dad:"I hope you have made things right with her and you will have a relationship with your son"

Me:"I have, we reached some kind of understanding, we'll co-parent"

Mom:"all this time you've raised Rain like your own, you've been protecting Amahle"

Lowell:"yes, and Rain is my son too traditionally so it was easy"

Me:"and whatever you have against her mom it has to stop, if anyone of you mistreat her or do anything that would potentially ruin my relationship between my son and I through her, I will deal with you I don't care if you my mother and I've been protecting you my whole life or you my father and you own some gang and abused your wife or you my brother and feel entitled to my son I will not hesitate to protect my children and their mother"

Mom:"what about London's mother what happened between the two of you?"

Me:"that crazy witch, she better pray we never cross paths, I would've took care of her but I can't, she has children but London, she can forget about London, she's mine and mine alone"

I look at her as she's concentrated on my phone

Me:"I hope we all understand each other"

.

.

.

Amahle

[FEW DAYS LATER]

.

.

.

"have you told him"

Me:"I'm about to"

"don't worry he will understand"

Me:"what if he gets angry at me"

"He won't, Rain loves you, if you explain to him properly he will understand"

I hear a knock from the door

Me:"okay let me go"

"Okay good luck"

Me:"thanks"

"I love you"

Me:"me too bye"

I hang up and head to the door

I open for him letting him in

Me:"hey"

Noah:"hey, how are you?"

Me:"I'm good thanks and you?"

Noah:"I'm good"

Me:"this way"

I lead him to the lounge

Noah:"where is he?"

Me:"he's in his room"

Noah:"are you ready?"

Me:"honestly, I'm not"

Noah:"no need to be scared you his momma he won't always be mad at you, and kids understand better than teenagers, so he will totally be cool, you'll see"

I nod

Me:okay"

Noah:"hey..."

He touches my hand, my breath hitches looking at it

Noah:"we got this no need to be scared"

I move my hand away from his and place it on my lap

Me:"let me go call him

I go to the bedroom and find him doing homework

Me:"hey sweetie, can you come to the lounge, I need to talk to you about something"

Rain:"okay momma"

He closes his book and gets up passing me and leading the way to the lounge

Rain:"momma doctor Noah is here"

Me:"I know I let him in"

I sit on the same couch as Noah as Rain sits on his little chair that I placed in front of us

Rain: what is he doing here, is he going to make you cry and break our glasses again?"

Noah:"No I'm never going to do that again I'm really sorry about that it was a big mistake"

Rain:"it's okay momma forgave you so I forgive you"

Noah laughs and smiles at him

Noah:"I appreciate that champ"

Me:"okay baby I need you to listen carefully and everything that we about  
to tell you we didn't mean not to tell you"

Rain:"huh?"

Noah:"you confusing the child Indy, okay I'll go, Rain, I am your real father"

I look at him frowning

.

.

.

.

Thandile

.

.

.

We were chilling as a family watching a movie when my phone rang disturbing  
the moment

It was an unsaved number

I hesitantly answer it

"Hello"

Me:"hi who's speaking?"

"It's me umawakho" (your mother)

Me:"mah? Ufunani?"

(What do you want?)

"uThulile uzibulele"

(Thulile killed herself)

My heart sinks

Me:"ini?"

(What?)

"Bengithi ngikwazise, she did it a week ago siyamncwaba this weekend at the community cemetery if you want to come, I doubt Amahle will want to come but you can let her know too...ngiyakudinga nganyami nya....

Me:"shut up, stop, you don't need me, you just want to turn me into what you turned my sister into, may her soul find eternal peace, I won't be able to make it for the funeral and wena I hope you continue to suffer forever, you don't deserve being a mother, you are a monster and I hate you!"

I hang up

Me:"nxla!"

"Babe you okay"

I break down as I feel a stabbing pain in my heart

Me:"Thulile is dead, she killed herself"

Menzi:"oh...askies, come here"

He walks up to me and embraces me in a hug

Menzi:"phephisa sthandwa sam, her soul is now at peace, she's in a better place"

Me:"I never forgave her, she came and asked for forgiveness and I never gave her a chance, my last words to her, they not words I wished to be my last to her and now she's dead, she died knowing her sister hated her"

Menzi:"you can still forgive her, just because we can't see her anymore doesn't mean she's not around, you can still forgive her and she will know"

I hold him back crying on his chest

Me:"why couldn't it have been our mother it's her fault our lives turned out the way they did, thank God I had you, bit Thulile had no one, all she had was mom who was her enemy, I should've took the time to put myself in her shoes before judging her the way I did, now I'll forever have this regret"

Menzi:"not on my watch, you'll get through this too, I'll make sure of it"

He kisses my forehead

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

Amahle:"wow okay yeah let's just jump right on to it"

I look at her and shrug

Rain:"you not my father, my daddy is my father, Lowell"

Amahle (sighs):"okay baby, I need you to please listen carefully okay?"

He nods looking at her

Amahle:"this (touches my shoulder) is Noah, he is Lowell's brother"

Rain:"he's my uncle?"

Amahle:"you remember how mommy told you people get babies"

I look at her shocked

Me:"you already gave him the talk? He's not even ten for crying out loud, he's still a baby"

Rain:"I'm not a baby, I'm a man like daddy"

Amahle:"of cause I didn't give him that kind of talk yet do I look crazy to you?"

Me:"a bit"

Amahle (chuckles):"shut up, we should be serious, this is a serious matter"

Me:"yes yes, serious, I'm serious, got it"



I sit up straight putting a funny serious face as Rain bursts into laughter

Rain(laughing):"you look like Mr Bean"

Me(laughing):"What are you trying to say, that I look like this"

I make a funny Mr Bean face making him laugh even louder throwing his head back, Amahle cracks into a laugh too but holds herself back covering her mouth

Amahle:"okay Noah enough games now"

Me:"okay I was just trying to lighten the mood, I'm sorry please let's continue"

She sighs shaking her head, Rain looks at me smiling, I wink at him and he winks back

Amahle:"Rain, before God blessed mommy with you, you know that I had to pray first right?"

Rain:"yes and you prayed with Lowell"

Me:"that is not the truth sweetheart, I prayed with Noah..."

Rain:"but why is Lowell my daddy?"

Amahle:"because after Noah and I prayed for you, he had to leave so he couldn't be around to be your daddy, but mommy couldn't allow you to grow up without a daddy like all the kids so Lowell your uncle said he can be your father until your real father comes back"

There's silence as he stares at Amahle

Rain:"but why did Noah have to leave? He didn't like me?"

Me:"No, he liked you, he likes you, I like you a lot"

Rain:"but you were not my daddy only Lowell was my daddy"

I look down and swallow the dry lump stuck on my throat

Amahle:" he had to leave because he had to go and save people's lives somewhere far away, people were dying and he had to go save them, so he opened his own hospital so that he can save people's lives, they needed him and I needed to stay here and save people's lives from here with you, because we

needed to save a lot of people so that God could bless us with a new heart, for you"

He smiles and looks at me

Rain:"is that how you found a heart for me? Because you saved a lot of people?"

Me(nodding):"yeah, that's how I found your heart, and when I found it, the perfect one that matched for you, it was time for me to come back home so I can give my son a heart, so that I could be his father again, and we could all love each other with good healthy hearts"

Rain:"so you are my daddy again?"

Me:"yeah"

Rain:"will you go again?"

Me:"no I'm never leaving you again"

Rain:"okay"

Amahle:"okay? So you not mad that we didn't tell you?"

Rain:"you supper heros and sometimes superheroes have to keep secrets so that they can protect the ones they love"

Me(laughs):"I see he watches a lot of super hero movies"

Amahle:"a lot"

Me:"thank God for that"

Rain:"since you back, are you and momma going to be together and be my real daddy so we can all live happily ever after like all the superhero families?"

He smiles looking at us, my heart breaks

Me:"well..."

Amahle:"but Rain you know mommy is already engaged to be married to uncle Keon"

Rain:"but why? Daddy is back now, don't you love daddy anymore?"

We look at each other at the same time before she quickly breaks the gaze

Rain:"do you love daddy momma?"

Amahle:"Rain, this... even if I did love daddy, he left for too long and now momma is marrying someone else"

Rain:"but why didn't you wait for daddy?"

I could see how his questions were cornering her

Me:"she did wait for me, but I was gone for a long time and I thought I was never going to come back so I told your mom that she must move on and be happy with someone else because I couldn't be around to do that anymore"

Rain:"but now you around, you can make me and momma happy, like how you made us happy when you gave me a new heart"

Me:"I can still make you happy, just not by being with your mom but you can come visit me on weekends and some holidays, I'll take you to the beach, have you ever been to the beach?"

Rain:"No you can take me there"

Me:"yes I can"

She smiles excitedly

Rain:"and you will also take momma?"

My smile disappears as I look at her

Amahle:"Rain! Your dad and I will never be together because we broke up after he left so you the only one who will visit him and he can take you anywhere he wants to take you without me, like how Lowell did"

Rain (sadly):"okay"

Me:"heey come over don't be sad, come here"

He walks up to me and stands between my legs, I pull him in for a hug as I hold him tightly

Me:"I'm sorry it took so long to find you a heart and you had to suffer in pain for so long but now your daddy is back, and I'll make sure you never feel that kind of pain again, nothing and no one will ever hurt you okay"

He holds me back, my heart rate increases at the feel of his touch

Rain:"okay daddy"

I smile with excitement I didn't think he'd call me that so soon

Me:"I love you son"

Rain (giggles):"I love you too daddy"

I let go of him a bit kissing his cheek

I look at Amahle and notice her quickly wiping off a tear.

Amahle:"okay honey can you please go back to your room now, I need to talk to your father, alone"

Me:"one more hug before you go"

He throws his little arms around my neck as I hold him back then let him go

Amahle:"a kiss for momma first"

They share a peck on the lips before he runs off

We both sigh at the same time

Me:"that went better than we thought"

Amahle:"yeah"

Me:"thank you for coming up with that story"

Amahle:"I had to I can't have my son hating you you his father, I wouldn't want my child hating me for mistakes that happened before he was even born"

I smile as I feel the urge to hug her trying to hold it back

Me:"thank you"

I move closer and hug her

Amahle:"oh..."

She unexpectedly hugs me back then pushes me away

Me(laughs):"sorry I just had to"

Amahle (chuckles):"yeah..uhm there's something I have to tell you"

Me:"what is it"

Amahle:"okay I'm not going to beat around the bush I'm just going to go ahead and say it"

Me:"please say it"

Amahle:"everytime Rain visits at your parents house your mother hits him, she's been abusing our child and telling him not to tell anyone, Rain told me this a few days ago and I don't want him ever going there again because that woman hates me she always has and she's taking it out on my baby, you know how I feel about abuse, I never thought my child would go through that and I feel so stupid that I never noticed earlier, what if she was pinching and hitting him while he couldn't even talk (trembling)...our son can never go there again, please if you going to take him there and you know you'll have to leave don't leave him alone with that woman, who knows what else she'll do to him"

Me:"what? My mother hits my son?"

Amahle:"for no good reason, even when he's behaving"

I feel my anger rising up

Me:"don't worry, I will deal with mom"

Amahle:"how, don't do anything stupid you just got cleansed, you have natural anger, I wanted to tell the police but I know that they'll just do what I can do myself, keeping him away from her"

Me:"I will deal with mom don't worry about it"

I rub her shoulder trying to calm her down before she starts wheezing as I noticed she was breathing heavily

Me:"I'm so sorry for my mother's actions, I will never let Rain or London come near her again, which reminds me, I have to go I left London with her"

I stand up and she also gets up

Amahle(tearfully):"she'd never do that to London, she's not my daughter so don't worry she's safe with her"

I pull her closer she wraps her arms around my shoulder as I brush her back gently, she buries her face on my neck

I also move mine to her neck smelling her sweet cologne, the body heat gets stronger as I feel my dick getting hard, my hand slides down to her waist right above her butt, she holds me tighter, my heart beat increases as my breathing changes

Me(softly):"it's okay, I won't let anyone hurt Rain or you again okay?"

She nods as she moves her face from my shoulder and we look into each other's eyes with our faces only an inch apart still holding each other, my eyes land on her lips, I look back into her eyes to find her looking into my eyes, I wanna kiss her so bad and her body language is giving me permission...No not like this

Me:"I should go"

I let go of her, she fixes herself moving away from me

Amahle:"of cause uhm thanks for coming"

Me:"we had to do it together..."

I block my boner with my shirt pulling it down

Me:"I mean tell him we had to tell him together..."

My mind is now consumed with sexual thoughts

Me:"okay bye"

Amahle:"bye"

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

Me:"so what did you find?"

Aiden:"oh well this guy hides his shit very well I almost gave up on him"

Me:"meaning that you have something"

Aiden:"his ex girlfriend that is his baby mama she is no where to be found"

Me:"meaning?"

Aiden:"she just disappeared from the face of the earth, only his older daughter's mother is still around"

Me:"what so you think this guy killed his ex girlfriend"

Aiden:"there's no proof of that, but it is the only logical reason for now, or she might have ran away and changed her identity or something, so he could be the cause of that or he could be innocent and his ex was just some crazy chick"

Me:"you not giving me anything here man"

Aiden:"wait there's more, I researched his medical background, he was once diagnosed with OLD but it's no more in his medical records I had to hunt down his doctor for that info"

Me:"OLD? What the fuck is that?"

Aiden:"Obsessive love disorder"

Me:"so you mean he might not be in love with Amahle but obsessed with her?"

Aiden:"he might be really in love with her, but he won't take a break up easily, he might make her disappear as well"

Me:"shit...you sure you can't trace down his ex girlfriend?"

Aiden:"still trying I believe we close"

Me:"okay I guess, this guy is just one of those good people who just find themselves in bad situations"

Aiden:"true, his ID is legit, his business is legit"

Me:"fine continue digging"

I get up and drive back home

I find him at home drinking whiskey

Me:"hey"

Noah:"hey"

Me:"for someone who just got introduced to his son you don't look too happy"

Noah:"I'm good, just waiting for your mom"

Me:"okay, well I found something on Amahle's perfect boyfriend"

Noah:"what? Who told you to go digging? (Sips whiskey) there's nothing anyway"

Me:"don't be too sure about that, turns out the guy has obsessive love disorder, so he could see Amahle as his possession rather than his lover"

Noah:"okay"

He says calmly drinking his whiskey

Me:"okay? You don't care that your girl might be in danger if she ever pisses off that guy?"

Noah:"just leave it Lowell, it's non of our business, if Amahle leaves him it should be because she wants to not because I forced it or you, so stay the fuck away from this guy, if She loved me then she'd be with me by now, there's no use trying to break them up acting like a desperate so nigger, let's just focus on the kids, that's my priority now, I'm done with women, they are confusing and don't know what they want, if she's happy with him then let her be, when she's in danger then I'll protect her when she needs to be protected, but right now Amahle and her boyfriend are the least of my worries"

"Hey babies"

Noah:"there's the biggest bitch of them all"

My eyes widened looking at him

Me:"hey, watch your mouth"



Mom:"what the hell did you just call me?"

Dad:"ongathi angizwanga kahle, uthini?"

(I think I didn't hear him well, what did you just say?)

Noah:"I said here comes the biggest bitch of them all"

I slap him across the face

Me:"I don't know what got into you or what type of whiskey you drinking but do not talk to my mother like that"

Noah:"stay the fuck out of this Lowell, to think all these years I've been protecting you from this monster of a excuse you call a husband, thinking it was hurting you but you actually enjoyed the abuse didn't you... because if you didn't then you would know better than to inflict that same pain to anyone else, you all in this house are abusive people and you don't deserve family..."

He marches towards mom and grabs her by the shirt

Noah:"how could you beat my son behind everyone's back! Huh! How could you put him through that!! He's a fucken kid for crying out loud!! A kid!!..

Me:"she did what?"

Noah:"she's been hitting Rain, abusing him physically"

Me:"mom? Is that true?"

Mom:"I'm so sorry, I don't know what got over me"

Dad:"you've been hitting Rain? Why?"

Mom:that women turned my family against me, as broken as we were we used to be very close until she came into our lives I guess my hatred for her ran deeper and the way her son always cried for her...I I became a monster taking out my anger on the child I was wrong and I'm so sorry I promise I have stopped...

He holds her around the neck, I let him be

Noah:"you never come near my children again, not ever again, you hear me!!"

He pushes her as she falls into dad's arms who was carrying London.

He takes London from him

Noah:"never ever come near my kids, we are leaving"

He walks away disappearing upstairs

I look at mom shaking my head

Mom:"son...I'm sorry...

Me:"I don't believe you"

I walk out and drive off to Lulama's place

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"If you mess with my kids, you better run, because I'm coming after you, and hell's coming with me" (Anon)

Insert 135

•

•

•

•

•

[A MONTH LATER]

Amahle

•

•

•

•

•

Keon's family is coming over in a few days for the wedding, I didn't think it'd happen this soon but Keon persisted he's very excited about it, me on the other hand I don't know how I feel, at first I was excited about the engagement, I mean my life was finally taking a good direction, I was getting married to a man who was committed, never cheated on me, brought love and peace into my life, he is the definition of an ideal man, so romantic, adventurous, loving and caring for not only me but my family as well, my parents approved of him, they love him a lot as much as his parents also like me, everything is perfect and there is absolutely no reason to not want to marry a guy like Keon, the perfect gentleman. But still with all this love around me, a part of me feels lost, incomplete, there's this void I can't get rid of no matter how hard I try to be happy and grateful.

I bought the most beautiful wedding dress and I'm currently in my bedroom wearing it, trying to remind myself something amazing is about to happen in my life.

(Knock at the door)

I startle and look towards the door

Me:"who is it?"

"It's me momma!"

Me:"okay wait I'm coming"

I unlocked the door for him

Rain:"woooooow"

I lock the door as soon as he walks in

Rain:"momma you look like a queen"

Me(blushing):"thank you baby"

Rain:"wow mommy"

I turn around showing off the dress

Me:"you like it?"

Rain:"mhm I love it"

I giggle and pull in for a hug spinning him around till we fell on the bed

We sleep on our backs facing the ceiling

Rain:"momma?"

Me:"yes baby"

Rain:"Lowell is still my daddy right?"

Me:"of cause, he raised you so he'll forever be your daddy"

Rain(excitedly):"so I have two daddies now?"

Me:"yeah you have two daddies, you happy about that"

Rain:"yeah! Now I have two daddies to come watch my soccer game at school"

Me:"yep"

Rain:"and uncle Keon? Will he be my daddy too when you get married?"

Me(sighs):"yeah"

Rain(laughs):"I'll have three daddies?"

I laugh at how messed up that sounds, he also laughs as we end up laughing out loud

Rain(laughing):"momma! Why you laughing!"

Me(laughing):"why are you laughing!!"

Rain (laughing): because you laughing"

After a while my laugh dies down

Me:"how do you feel Rain, about mommy getting married to uncle Keon?"

Rain (shrugs):"I don't know"

I turn to look at him

Me:"I thought you liked uncle Keon?"

Rain:"I do"

Me:"so do you feel happy that we getting married?"

Rain:"are you happy mommy?"

I look at him for a while

Me:"I...Keon is a good man and he loves us so much"

Rain:"are you happy mommy?"

I frown looking at him

Me:"I just answered you"

Rain:"you didn't say you happy, you only said he is a good guy and he loves us so much"

I chuckle looking at him in disbelief, when did he get this smart

Me:"you are growing up too fast for my liking, I think I liked it better when you were a small baby and you'd just watch me talking and say aahhh to everything I say"

He laughs out loud

Rain:"I'm not a little baby anymore momma"

I look at him and smile

Me:"no, you not"

Rain:"are you happy mommy?"

I sigh

Me:"I guess I'm happy, I have you and you always make me happy and kendall, and....and Keon"

I look at him

Me:"you dad, your biological dad..."

Rain:"bio?..."

Me:"biological meaning the one who I prayed with for you"

Rain:"ohh it's called biological?"

Me:"yes"

He nods thoughtfully repeating the word as though he's trying not to ever forget it

Me:"he's leaving for Cape town back to where he works"

Rain:"is he going to go for a long time again?"

Me:"No, well he stays there but he'll keep coming back once or twice a year"

Rain:"but he said he was going to take me to the beach"

Me:"that's why he's waiting till after the wedding so he can take you with him, you'll stay there for a week then come back"

Rain:"will you also come with us?"

Me:"No I'm not coming"

Rain:"please come with me"

Me:"you going to have to be a big boy and stay a week without mommy"

Rain:"but that's so long"

Me:"it's not that long, or don't you want to go? I can tell him to leave you"

Rain:"I want to go with you too"

Me:"I can't, sorry, it'll be just like how you visit Lowell"

He nods

Me:"you going to be fine and I'll video call you everyday to say goodnight"

Rain(smiles):"okay, I love you"

He hugs me then walks out

I take my phone and call Keon

"Babe"

Me:"hey, we need to talk"

"Talk baby"

Me:"no I mean face to face"

"Babe, you know it's been more than a month since I've touched you, if I see you we might do something we not supposed to be doing till after the wedding"

Me:"please, just come over, this is really important"

"You scaring me is everything okay?"

Me:"I'll see you in two hours"

"Okay I'll be there"

Me:"okay bye"

"I love you okay?"

Me:"me too"

"How come you don't say it fully anymore"

Me:"I love you too baby"

"That's better, alright, see you then, bye"

I drop the call and sigh

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I was struggling to breath as I was crippled with fear while driving London to the hospital, at first I ignored it but she has been asleep since the afternoon and it is now almost eight evening, her pulse was very weak, I don't understand why she's like this when she was perfectly fine this morning

I disorientedly parked outside the hospital I picked her up with no time for closing the car doors, I rushed her inside the hospital

Me:"I need doctors ASAP!!"

I rushed her to the emergency room where I laid her on the bed and she was attended to immediately

Doctor:"Dr Nhlabathi, you have to wait outside for this"

Me:"No, I want to help, please let me help"

They pushed me outside

Me(breaking voice):"please let me help"

They shut the door on my face as I weakly fell to the ground staring at the blank door as I felt my world slow down and the noise dying down like I was the only one in the hospital

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

I was preparing dinner. My nerves were at the peak as I waited for Keon to arrive, I kept using my asthma pump as I kept feeling shortness of breath, my palms were sweaty.

(Door knock)

I startle at the sound of the knock as I was decking the table

Me:"wait!"

I do the last touch ups setting the plates and placing a bottle of wine in the middle



I rushed up to open as he continued knocking

I opened the door

Me:"hey!"

Keon (smiles):"hey"

We share a hug before he makes his way in

Keon:"these are for you"

He hands me the bunch of flowers, I smile smelling them

Me:"thank you, they so beautiful, you don't have to bring me flowers everytime you come visit you know"

Keon:"I know, I want to"

I blush as I go out them away

Keon:"you did all this for me"

Me:"yeah"

Keon:"what's the special occasion?"

Me:"uhm there's no special occasion"

Keon:"okay, thank you babe"

He pecks my lips before making himself comfortable

Keon:"where's Rain?"

Me:"he's fast asleep"

Keon (smirks):"mmh so it's just you and I"

I giggle while dishing up for us then sit down

Keon:"I miss you so much my love"

Me:"I miss you too"

Keon:"I can't wait for all this to be over so we can be together and get freaky"

I laugh a little as my smile disappears

I wish he could just stop being so sweet just for a while, he's making this very hard for me

We continue eating as we talk about random stuff, he was doing most of the talking, telling me about how I won't be able to shut my mouth about the place he'll take me to for our honeymoon vacation and all the things he wants to do with me, guilt struck me as I wasn't so sure if I should tell him what I called him here for, now a part of me prays that he forgot there was something I wanted to talk about

He goes quiet as it's now just the sound of cutlery, he looks at me probably noticing that I've been quiet

Keon:"you okay love?"

Me(fake smile):"I'm good babe"

Keon:"you called me here to talk about something but I've been the one doing most of the talking"

Me:"I love listening to you talk"

He smiles looking down

Keon:"No babe, say what you needed to say"

I sigh nervously

Me:"I don't even know how to say this, I wish you could read my heart instead"

Keon (smiling):"just say it my love"

Me:"Keon, you are the best man I've ever met, you so kind, so honest and open, you very handsome with a body to die for and you use it perfectly...(we laugh out loud)...you romantic, it's like you were literally picked out of a movie and I feel like I don't deserve you because I don't appreciate you enough...

Keon:"nonsense, I don't wish to be with anyone else in this world besides you...

Me:"I'm scared that along the way when we are married, I'll do something and mess this up, I tend to mess up every good thing that comes into my laugh, if I'm not the one messing it up something bad happens, I don't want to put you through that..."

Keon:"don't worry about me love, I won't let that happen, we will fight through whatever comes our way, marriage is not a walk in the park I know, and I'm ready to fight for our love and if you love me as much as I love you, everything will seem easy"

Me:"that's the problem...."

Keon:"what's the problem?"

Me:"I...I don't know how I feel and everything is just happening so fast, Keon I don't think I want to get married"

Keon:"I see what's going on, you getting cold feet, it's okay to be scared babe,I mean this is a big step we about to take, but don't be irrational, I'll sleep over so I can make you feel better, this month apart is what's making you feel like this, I understand.."

Me:"No Keon, I don't think you understand, it's not that I don't want to get married..."

Keon:"then what are you saying"

Me:"I don't want to get married to you"

Keon:"I'm lost, you don't want to get married but you want to get married?"

Me:"to you Keon, I don't want to get married to you"

Keon:"you don't want to marry me? But why? What did I do?"

Me:"nothing, that's why I feel so terrible about myself, because you didn't do anything, I've been trying to convince myself and everyone around me that I'm happy and I've fallen in love again, that I was capable of falling and loving and being happy without holding on to my painful past, you are perfect and you did everything accordingly, you were everything I thought I ever wanted in a man, when God blessed me with you he literally answered my prayers because you were everything I wished for and more..."

Keon:"so what's the matter babe?"

Me:"I feel like I'm the most ungrateful person in the world right now, I have everything any girl could ask for, but I'm...I'm just...I'm sorry Keon but I'm not feeling it, we just do disconnected, I've tried to ignore it, I've been fitting on my

wedding dress ever since I got it trying to remind myself of why I said yes in the first place, trying to remember our first date, the gifts in my office, our trip to Ghana, Christmas and all the good memories we've made, but still, I just can't remember when I fell in love with you like for real....

Keon:"so what are you saying? You don't love me?"

Me:"I love you Keon I really do love you, you are a good man and you make me happy most of the time, I just don't think I'm in love with you, I care about you and you make me happy but I don't feel like what you giving to me I'm giving it back to you I never know how, when you down or hurt or troubled I'm never able to tell or sense it or know exactly what to do to comfort you, I don't know you inside out, I mean we've been together for almost a year and I don't even know your favorite color or your favorite home made dish, if you were to go missing for a day and the police asked me what's the first place he'd go to if he wanted to clear his mind or feel better, I wouldn't know how to answer that question and it'd be embarrassing as a person who claims to be in love with you, I care about but I never cared enough to know these little things, I am not the woman for you Keon, I tried I really tried but I'm just not the one (breaking voice)... I'm sorry, I wish I didn't feel like this, I wish there was a button I could press and be in love with you because you truly are like a dream ....

(Silence)

Me(tearfully):"please...say something"

Keon:"I...I don't know what to say"

Tears escape from my eyes rolling down my face

Me:"I didn't mean to but I think it's best we end things now before your parents trouble themselves coming down here and....

My phone rings disturbing me, I look at the caller ID as it sits on the table, I look at him as he's also looking at it as it was written "Noah"

Keon:"he's the reason isn't he? That's why you leaving me to go back to him"

Me:"Keon..."

Keon:"I know he's the one I saw how you almost kissed when he came over to tell Rain he was his father..."

Me:"what? How could you possibly have seen that? You were at your apartment how did you see that meeting?"

Keon:"I had cameras around your apartment, I'm sorry but I didn't trust him I knew he'd make a move on you..."

Me:"you have cameras hidden in my house!? What kind of sick twisted bull is that? You see this is another thing why we'd never work, you will never trust me!"

Keon:"I trust you Amahle, it's Noah that I didn't trust, but it doesn't matter now because you just proved me right!!..."

My phone rings again, I pick it up

Me:"Noah I can't talk right now..."

"(Breaking voice)London passed away...."

My eyes and mouth widened as my phone slipped out my hand

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*

"The difference between "like" "love" and "in love" is the same as the difference between "for now", "for a while" and "forever" (unknown)

Insert 137

•

•

•

•

•

[A WEEK LATER]

Noah

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I watched as her tiny box went down the deep hole as people sang but my ears went deaf, the only thing I could hear was my breaking heart, I was shattered, I never expected my baby would leave me this soon, I had so much planned for her.

I poured red and white rose petals before pouring sand, I couldn't hold back my tears as I realized I'll never see her again or hear her voice.

"It's okay son, she's in a better place"

Me:"she was in a better place with me too"

Mom:"I know, I know baby"

She let me cry on her shoulder as she rubbed my back

Me:"I'll miss her so much mamma"

- 
- 
- 

Lulama

- 
- 
- 

After laying London to her final resting place, people ate and went home, it wasn't a big funeral, it was only strictly family and I was here because Lowell asked me and my parents as well but they left right after the burial. I have never seen Noah this broken and weak before, I think it's my first time seeing him cry

like that in public even, I thought he'd try be strong for people's eyes but nothing mattered, this funeral bought back heartbreaking memories, I felt his pain as it felt like I was losing my baby all over again, I never thought God would bless me with more kids after that, I lost all hope.

I do not wish this pain on anyone, he was sitting alone outside by the pool area while everyone was inside, i was helping in the kitchen as there was a lot of dishes with Amahle

Me:"what do you think is going on in his mind right now?"

Amahle:"I don't know, but the way he's starting at the pool, he is thinking of doing something painful, he's looking for an escape from this pain"

Me:"oh my God, you should go talk to him"

Amahle:"I've already overstayed my welcome here, Norah is being overly nice to me and it's awkward because all I want to do is slap her across the face, I should get going"

Me:"you can't leave, you should go talk to him, you've been keeping your distance since you got here and I noticed how he kept stealing glances at you and so did you, he needs you, that's why he asked you to be here"

Amahle:"I'll talk to him over the phone, I don't want to give Norah anymore reason to hate me or my son"

Me:"argh that witch, I hate how she acts so holy when she's actually so evil"

My eyes land on Lowell who's talking over the phone, he keeps smiling and brushing his beard, he's definitely flirting with someone

Me:"I know this is off topic but do you think Lowell would cheat on me, I mean after everything we've been through? I mean I get that he's excited about his baby that's due very soon but he's been talking to her a lot and having more meet ups than I think is necessary, I don't want to complain about it because I don't want to sound insensitive like I don't want him to be excited about his baby...(sighs) you right I'm probably being my dramatic self"

Amahle (chuckles):"I didn't even say anything"

Me:"you don't have to"

Amahle:"well I don't think you being dramatic"

I look at her

Me:"so you also think he might be cheating on me?"

Amahle:"I don't know but you should confront the situation, and he still has to do a cleansing which he doesn't want and until he does it, this kind of behavior will never end, he will hurt you"

Me(sighs):"I've tried convincing him but he's not having it"

Amahle:"and it doesn't have to be me to help him he can get help from any traditional healer if it's me that he doesn't believe in"

Me:"it's not that, he's just being stubborn as always"

Amahle:"why don't you leave him then?"

Me:"what?"

Amahle:"if he doesn't want to do it then why stay with someone you know will keep doing the same thing over and over again, if he loves you, he will do the cleansing, especially if you break up with him, he will come to his senses, you are being too nice to him"

Me:"you right, it's just everything has been going so well between us, it's hard to just leave while we still happy"

Amahle:"so you will wait until he hurts you?"

(Silence)

Amahle:"done! Let me go get Rain, I'll see you when I see you"

Me:"so you not going to talk to him?"

She sighs looking towards the pool

Amahle:"I'll go say goodbye"

Me:"okay and word of advice, if he's looking for an escape, you should be that escape don't let the pool or poison or a rope and a tree beat you at it"

She laughs a bit



Amahle:"we passed that long time ago, we are just Rain's parents nothing more, if he feels like there's nothing more that's left in this world for him then maybe the pool is a good escape"

Me:"come on don't be like that, I thought you forgave him, you two compliment each other so much, I think you both need each other, you once made each other happy, and you need that happiness more than anything right now"

Amahle:"now is definitely not the time to be thinking about that, he just lost his baby and he's dwelling in pain, besides he did try to get me back but I was in a relationship and angry towards him, when I was calmer we forgave each other and accepted that we were better off apart, maybe if I wasn't in a relationship with someone else things would be different"

Me:"yeah but you not in a relationship anymore, you've already wasted six full years apart plus months, and now you just wasting more time and one thing that funerals should teach us is that, life is too short and time is a luxury money can't buy"

Amahle:"since when have you become the wiser one"

I laugh

Me:"if you truly love him, you will give him another chance, he needs it, he'll have both you and Rain and you could give him more children, it won't take away the pain of losing London but it will make it better and she'll become a happy memory than a painful one"

Amahle:"it's not that easy, I could wake up the next day pregnant and he tells me that he has to leave because he doesn't want what happened to London to happen to our baby, Noah is very unpredictable, his protection is hurtful"

Me:"he made that mistake once, I'm sure he knows better than to repeat the same mistake"

Amahle:"I don't know, let me go"

Me:"okay bye"

She walks out of the kitchen

I look at Lowell as his eyes land on me, I signal him to come with my head, he excuses himself from the elders and walks towards the kitchen

Lowell:"my love"

Me:"how you doing?"

Lowell:"I'm fine, just worried about Noah there, I don't think he's surviving this"

Me:"he'll be okay, with the right people beside him he'll be fine"

Lowell:"yeah and how are you doing"

He asks wrapping his arms around me from behind

Me:"don't do that babe"

His kissing my neck which is my weakest spot

Lowell:"you've been standing almost all day, we should get you home now"

Me:"you'll come back?"

Lowell:"yeah I'll drop you off and come back"

Me:"then we'll just leave when you ready to go babe"

Lowell:"uhm no the thing is I think I'll sleep over here"

Me:"why?"

Lowell:"I have to be with family you know we just lost someone so I think it'd make sense if I sleepover, plus my brother needs to be kept an eye on"

Me:"but you've been here for the whole week, I also miss you"

Lowell:"it's just for today baby"

My heart sinks, he's never been this distant with me ever since years ago when he cheated on me and we had our first break up

Me:"are you cheating on me?"

He frowns and scoffs in disbelief, he becomes tongue tied which gives it away

Me(shaking head) : "wow"

I wipe my hands and take off the apron

Lowell:"babe, wait..."

Me:"you are a bitch, please stay away from me..."

I walk out to take my purse then bid everyone farewell before heading out to my car with Lowell following behind me trying not to cause a scene

I open the car as he grabs my arm

Lowell:"Lulama wait, I'm not cheating on you"

Me:"you lying!"

Lowell:"I swear I'd never do that to you, please don't go like this, okay let's go together, I don't need to sleep over"

Me:"mxm, let go of me Lowell"

Lowell:"No, you have to believe me"

Me:"fine, give me your phone"

Lowell:"Lulama.."

Me:"give it to me, if you not cheating then you'll let me check it"

He remains silent looking at me

Me:"I thought as much"

I open the door

Lowell:"wait, here take it..."

He hands it to me locked

Me:"unlock it"

He hesitantly unlocks it then hands it to me, I take it but he had a tight grip on it, I pulled it from his hand then went through it, I went to his recent calls, I thought I'd see Bailey but it was Lumkile

I had no idea who it is, so I went on his WhatsApp and there she was, I first opened her profile picture, she was very beautiful and light skinned with a sexy body in a short revealing dress with big perky boobs and perfect make up.

I went into their chats and there were a lot of emojis of hearts eggplants and peaches with water splashing and laughing (☐☐☐☐☐❤☐)

My heart breaks into pieces as I look up at him, I look at his messages with Bailey and they were not that much, so he's been lying telling me he's been talking to Bailey

I throw his phone at him

Lowell:"Lulu baby nothing happened I promise"

Me(tearfully):"I never want to see you again!"

Lowell:"no no please, I promise nothing happened, I've never had sex with her, it was just flirting I'm sorry I don't know what I was thinking"

I look at him, I do not want to get hurt but I do not want to miss out on more years without him, I do not wish to lose him not again

Me:"you swear you didn't sleep with her?"

Lowell:"God is my witness I promise you I haven't slept with her, we were planning to but it never happened, I'm so sorry"

Me:"am I not enough for you Lowell?"

Lowell:"you are more than enough, I don't know what I was thinking, I wasn't thinking, please forgive me"

(Silence)

Me:"if you want my forgiveness, you'll allow Amahle to cleanse you, once that's done then we could talk about forgiveness, but for now, I want nothing to do with your whoring self"

Lowell:"okay, I'll do it"

Me:"mxm yeah whatever"

I get in the car and drive off leaving him there

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

After using the bathroom and cleaning up the mess Rain made on himself while eating, we went to the lounge where the parents and three uncles including the grandparents.

Me:"we came to say goodbye, we'll be on our way now and sorry for the loss I hope your hearts heal"

Bongani:"thank you nkosazane and thank you for everything"

Norah:"yes thank you very much"

Me:"it's okay, nisale kahle" (stay well)

They bid me goodbye

I looked towards the pool and he was not there anymore

Norah:"you should pass by him before you leave, he's in his bedroom"

Me:"uhm I think he wants to be alone"

Bongani:"please, pass by him"

Me:"okay"

I take Rain's hand

Bongani:"you can leave the boy here, hey buddy, did you meet your great grandparents"

Rain:"no"

They take him introducing him to the elders as I headed upstairs, I knocked but there was no answer so I let myself in and he was standing by the window

I stand next to him looking down at the pool

Me:"that pool must be very interesting"

(Silence)

Me:"I came to say goodbye, we are leaving now"

Noah:"she loved swimming"

Me:"uhmm..."

Noah:"she had just mastered floating, with the help of her floaty of course  
(chuckles)"

Me(chuckles):...

Noah:"we shared a lot of good times in this pool even though all she was good  
at is splashing water all over me"

I didn't know what to say so I remained silent

He looks at me

Noah:"life is unfair"

I felt tears sting my eyes

Noah:"now we need to carry on living as though this never happened...how the  
universe works still baffles me....I mean what exactly is being tested? Our  
sanity? Our ability to feel pain? When my daughter dies what am I being tested  
on? Because whatever it is, it sucks"

Me(sighs):...it does suck

Noah:" I was still looking forward to so many things...now I'll never get to  
experience all her firsts, her first night without a nappy, her first day in primary,  
her first best friend, her first fight, her first period even though I would've  
panicked and probably not know what to do but I would've been there, her first  
boyfriend that she would've kept a secret from me because she knows I'd never  
accept him..."

I laugh a bit and so does he

Noah:"I've already missed so much with Rain, I thought at least London would  
give me a chance to see all the things I missed with Rain"

Me:"he's still young, there's still a lot of firsts ahead of him"

Noah:"I'm sorry"

I walk towards the bed and sit down as I felt my feet burning as the heels were starting to get uncomfortable

Me:"for what?"

He walks towards me and sits next to me

Noah:"for saying London was the only person I had in the world, it doesn't mean I love Rain any less"

Me:"I understand, don't be sorry, I mean not so long ago you didn't even know he existed, while you were there when she was just a new born baby"

(Silence)

He places his hand on my thigh, my heart beat increases looking at it as he picks my leg up and puts it on his lap

Me:"wh what are you doing?"

Noah:"I remember how your feet would be painful from standing in heels for too long, and you've been standing the whole day"

He takes off my shoe and places it on the floor

Noah:"make yourself comfortable"

I sit properly on the bed as he takes my other leg and takes off my shoe then starts massaging them

A moan escapes my mouth at how good it felt

Me(eyes closed):"I don't remember the last time I got a foot rub"

Noah:"you deserve this every single day"

I smile as he put more pressure applying more pleasure

Me:"oh my God that feels so good"

He moves to my legs

Noah:"you still have soft tiny feet"

Me(giggles):"my feet are not tiny"

Noah:'yes they are"

Me:"if I have tiny feet then you are big foot"

He laughs

Noah:"was that supposed to be a diss?"

Me(laughs):"yes, so be offended"

He touches his chest

Noah:"ouch I'm offended"

Me(laughing):"Good!"

His laugh dies down as he smiles at me faintly

Noah:"I didn't think I'd be able to laugh today or the next day, I didn't think I'd be able to laugh anytime soon"

Me(smiling):"I don't know what they taught you in cuba but in my school they taught us laughter is the best medicine, it cures even if it's just for a little while"

Noah:"you are just like London, she knew how to make me laugh no matter how bad my day was, she made it better"

Me:"she's watching over you, and she wants you to be happy"

Noah:"you can see her?"

Me:"not right now, but I saw her by the graveyard"

Noah:"did she have that big cute smile on her face?"

I nod

He moves closer to me



Noah:"next time you see her can you tell her that I'm sorry for picking the wrong mother"

Me:"I will"

Noah:"if she didn't have to die, I would've made it up to her and pick her a better mother"

He takes my hand

Noah:"I know maybe this is not the perfect time, but I wanted you to know that I'm leaving tonight"

I move my hand away from him and my legs

Me:"okay so why you telling me"

Noah:"I don't see myself coming back here often"

Me(scoffs):"wow, so you leaving, again"

Me:"I'm sorry but there's nothing here for me anymore, I want to go start my life over again away from the crime my family is involved in here, away from the club with bad memories, just away from all the painful things I've experienced growing up here"

I get off the bed and put on my shoes

as I feel my heart break all over again, the kind of pain that cuts deep to your soul

Me:"I knew it was a bad idea introducing you to Rain, now you doing to him the same thing you did to me, I hope this time you leave for good"

Noah:"Amahle..."

\*\*\*

Noah:"You deserve so much better than me, I'm not the person you think I am"

Me:"No, I deserve you"

Noah "I'm leaving, you'll never see me again"

He walks away

I grab his arm before he could past me

Me: "don't go"

Noah: "I'm sorry, but this is it for us"

\*\*\*\*

I grab my purse and rush down stairs

Me (shouting): "Rain!! Rain!!..."

"Mom!!?"

I look at him sitting on Noah's grandpa's lap

Me: "let's go, come! Hurry!"

I head out the door as he rushes behind me

Rain: "mooom slow down"

I grab his hand, I unlocked the car

Me: "get in, quickly"

He gets in the car as I open the door and get in the car starting it

"Amahle!! Wait!!..."

He opens the door and switches off the engine

Noah: "I said wait! I was still talking to you"

Me: "we done talking"

Rain: "hey daddy!"

Noah: "hey buddy"

Me:"he's not your daddy, not anymore"

I close the door and start the engine again he runs around and gets in the passenger seat closing the door and makes himself comfortable

Me:"Noah get out of the car"

Noah:"would you calm down, we were still talking"

Me:"you should go pack and leave while it's still early"

Rain:"you leaving?"

Noah:"yes"

Rain:"you have to go save people again?"

He nods

Rain(sadly):"for another long time?"

Noah:"forever"

Me:"okay that's enough he didn't have to know that"

Noah:" I want Rain to come with me"

Me:"What!?! No, no you not taking Rain, you can only break a person once Noah, I won't let you completely destroy me, why are you doing this?"

Noah:"I don't want to take Rain away from you, I want you and Rain to come with me, we will start over as a family"

I look at him

Me:"a family?"

Noah(smiles):"yeah, we will get married, buy a house in Cape town next to the beach, we'll wake up to a beautiful sea view everyday, we'll drop Rain off school and work at the same hospital in the same department, fetch Rain from daycare after work and have dinner as a family, we'll take same days off, work same shifts, on weekends spend the day down the beach, go on boat rides, visit the table mountain, the Robbin island , the mall, basically we'll be in each other's faces everyday all day for the rest of our lives, Amahle, can you please start over with me?"

Me:....

Rain(excitedly):"please momma it'll be fun, please can we go start over with daddy?"

Me:"hlukana nezindaba zabantu abadala Rain how many times must I tell you the same thing, where are your manners!?" (Stay away from adults business Rain)

I look at him

Me(whispers):"why are you doing this?"

Noah:"because I love you and I don't want to miss another day without you in my life, please"

Me:"you expect me to just drop everything, I've made a life for myself here, at work I've built a reputation for myself, I can't just up and leave because you asked me to, it doesn't work like that"

Noah:"it's always been your dream to have a life in Cape town remember?"

Me:"that was a long time ago"

Noah:"it's still possible"

Me:"No, we not going with you, you can't just make big decisions that could change our whole lives when you have no idea what it took for us to get to where we are and expect us to drop everything for someone who left us and never even bothered checking on us for so many years, it wasn't easy getting to where we are and now you just want us to leave with you and never look back, No, now please, get out"

Noah:"I understand, I've already apologized many times for that, and I'm still sorry...I only need to know one thing"

He takes my hand

Noah:"do you love me?"

(Silence)

Noah:"do you love me Amahle?"

Me:"I..I.. Noah..."

Noah:"yes or no?"

Me(sighs):"yes"

Noah:"I love you too, and that should be enough reason for us to leave together"

Me:"sometimes love is not enough"

He remains silent

Noah:"you right...if you change your mind, the jet leaves at nine latest half past nine, I hope I'll see you there"

He looks behind

Noah:"I'll make sure you visit me every holidays okay"

Rain(sadly):"okay"

He gets out the car and walks back inside, I sigh and drive off

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

I've already packed all my bags, it was now late at night And I was ready to go

Mom:"you really leaving, you not even going to mourn you child"

Me:"I can't stay here, I hate this place, nothing good ever happens here, Even the good things never last, I'll come visit"

Mom:"thank you, for forgiving me"

Me:"you my mother, I can never stay mad at you, but hurt my family again I'll never forgive you"

Mom:"i promise, I'll never do that again"

Me:"I love you"

Mom:"I love you too"

We share a hug when dad walks in

Dad:"what's going on here?"

Me:"I'm leaving"

Dad:"so soon"

Me:"yeah"

Dad:"okay, take care of yourself son"

Me:"I will dad"

I take my bags and head downstairs

I bid everyone goodbye and drove off to the airport, I hoped to find Amahle and Rain there but they were not there.

Hours went by waiting for them, it was now half past nine

Pilot:"are we ready to fly sir?"

Me:"just a few more minutes"

Pilot:"very well"

I walked out the jet and looked around, there was no sign of them...I was pacing up and down praying they show up, another hour passed, I felt my heart sink painfully in disappointment

Me:"they not coming, we can go now"

Pilot:"yes sir"

The door closes as the engine starts and we take flight, I look out the window and there was still no sign of them, I guess love is not enough after all

.

.

.

THREE MONTHS LATER

\*\*

"You have to let go when you feel you hurting too much, you have to give up when love is not enough, you have to move on when things aren't like before. Because there's someone out there who'll love you even more" (Unknown)

Insert 138

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

I stood outside his bedroom door listening to their conversation over the phone, it was a video call

"How you doing today?"

Rain:"I'm okay"

"you don't sound okay"

Rain:"I am"

"Why were you not picking up my calls?"

Rain: "I was busy"

"(Laughs) busy? Busy with what lil man?"

Rain: "school stuff"

"Ohio school stuff I see, well in that case you've been a really busy man, my apologies for distracting you boss"

Rain: "it's okay"

"So you coming up for easter holidays tomorrow, can't wait "

Rain (shaking his head): "no"

"What? Why?"

Rain: "I don't want to come anymore"

"Why not? I thought you were excited, we were going to go to the beach, we were going to have a boys night everyday, come on man I thought we had plans?"

Rain: "I can't leave momma by herself, she needs me"

"She said that?"

Rain: "No but I know, we always spend holidays together and with khulu and mkhulu and Aunty Lulu and daddy and malume Nkosi, we going to them for the holidays"

"It's just for this one holidays please come to me, we've been talking about this for weeks now and you were supper excited, what happened now?"

He shakes his head

Rain: "I want to stay with momma"

"(Sighs) you are breaking my heart lil man, I really miss you"

Rain: "maybe you can come and visit me"

(Silence)

Rain: "are you okay?"

"(Low tone)I'm fine, just a bit disappointed, where's momma?"



Rain:"she's in her bedroom"

"Please go give her the phone"

I rush back to my bedroom, he walks in a few seconds later

Rain:"momma, dad wants to talk to you"

He gives me the phone

I look at him through the phone

"Hey"

Me:"hi"

"(Clears throat) how are you doing?"

Me:"can I help you Noah?"

"Is everything okay?"

Me:"everything is fine"

"You don't look okay though sweetheart"

Me:"if it's not about Rain, you and I have nothing to talk about"

"come on Amahle, what was I supposed to do, there's a hospital I have to run, I built a life this side"

Me:"good for you Noah, enjoy your life then"

"It's very empty and meaningless without you and Rain"

Me:"how sad"

"I miss you so much"

Me:"too bad you are in prison and there's nothing you can do about that"

"It's not easy (sighs) okay look just give me a few more months I promise I'll come back to joburg"

Me:"take as long as you want Noah...by the way Keon and I got back together"

"Tell me you joking, Amahle I told you I'll come back for you, why would you give that idiot another chance!?"

Me:"idiot? You are more of an idiot here, he's here with me willing to offer me everything I need and where are you? In Cape town making empty promises"

"I thought we had an understanding"

Me:"you thought wrong, I'm sick and tired of you thinking that my heart and whole life revolves around you, because it doesn't!"

He looks at me with much hurt in his eyes, I look away from him

"You are breaking my heart maMbokazi"

(Silence)

Me:"I was busy with something, are you done talking?"

He looks down wiping his eye and sighs

"I can't bond with Rain over the phone, he doesn't want to come visit me, can you talk to him"

Me:"how do you expect him to visit a stranger?"

He opens his mouth and closes it tongue tied

"Amahle"

Me:...

"I can't continue living like this"

Me:"then stop living like that"

"I wish it were that easy"

Me:"love should be easy Noah but you make it hard for yourself, love is about compromise, what have you ever compromised for me besides deciding on how I should live my life without you, without ever bothering to know how that makes me feel, you say you were saving me the first time you left, what did you save me from? Besides make my life miserable without you, and now you left again this time saving yourself, from what? Love? Family? What are you so scared of Noah!? Why are you always running? And you want me to leave my

family, my work, the life I have made for myself, for what? A fairytale? Well too bad because the engagement is back on and I'm getting married this weekend"

(Silence)

Me:"enjoy your lonely life"

I hang up as I take my packed suitcases

I head to Rain's bedroom

Me:"hey, bring your bags to the car, it's time to go"

He gets up excitedly and drags his bags as we head to the car and pack our things in the boot

.

.

.

Lowell

.

.

.

Me:"he's so beautiful"

Bailey:"he is, he looks just like you"

Me:"I want to take him with me, for the weekend, is that okay?"

Bailey:"he's only a month old he still needs me around all the time for my breast milk"

Me:"you can stack bottles of that and I'll keep coming to fetch them"

Bailey:"do you know how painful it is to suck milk out and baby's drink all the time"

Me:"come on Bailey you don't even stay that far"

Bailey:"no way, I just can't let my baby sleep without me, he's still too young"

Me:"he's my baby too"

Bailey:"you can take him for the day and bring him back at night, but he can't sleep over, not until he's at least one and a half year old"

Me(sighs):"okay fine, please pack his things for me (to the baby) you going to meet your brothers, are you happy? Yes? you excited? We going to the cool mommy"

Bailey:"hey! That is not cool"

I laugh

Me:"I'm just kidding"

Bailey:"please don't feed my child with that because as he grows older he'll end up thinking she really is the cooler mom than me, don't make my baby hate me"

Me:"he can't even understand what I said, but don't worry, I won't do that, I promise"

She smiles faintly

Bailey:"good because I'd hate being the dramatic baby mama"

Me(laughing):"don't even think about it, I'll put you in your place"

Bailey (smirks):"it was always a pleasure being put in my place by you"

I look at her for a while

Me:"are you flirting with me?"

Bailey:"don't flatter yourself, if I wanted you I'd spread my legs wide open right now"

Me(laughing):"only you can't because you still got fresh stitches"

She bursts into laughter

Bailey:"wow easy on the shade, just go already so you can bring back my baby"

She walks us to the car as I place the baby in his seat and strap him up

I look at her

Me:"thank you"

Bailey (smiling):"for what?"

Me:"for not being ugly therefore maintaining the handsomeness of the Nhlabathi legacy"

She laughs

Me:"I'm kidding...kind of...not...(we laugh)...but thank you for carrying this precious boy for me, you could've done anything to harm the baby by not taking care of yourself after we broke up but you didn't, and you put yourself through that painful dangerous process of giving birth for a man whom you weren't even sure would be around to be a father, so thank you for your maturity, I hope we continue to make the best co parents and make our baby's life awesome with no drama from us"

Bailey:"you welcome, I did it mostly for myself but yeah you welcome (laughs)...to being the best co parents"

We shake hands and she laughs

Bailey:"you so dramatic, just go already, my visitor is coming"

Me(smirks):"mmh? Visitor? Ai nomabaily sisi you just gave birth"

She laughs pushing me, I laugh as I get in the car

Me:"bye baby mama"

Bailey:"bye jerk ass"

Me:"wow already got beef? did you even listen to my thank you speech?"

Bailey (laughing):"fuck out of here Lowell!"

Me:"ey mind your language in front of my prince"

Bailey:"mxm whatever!"

I reverse out laughing and speed off as soon as I reach the road

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

"I don't know hey I don't think this really needs us to perform surgery, I mean imagine cutting someone open for this little thing, I think a treatment should be tested since it's not even a deadly bacteria"

(Silence)

"Hello! Noah!?"

I look up at her

Me:"hm?"

Her:"You have been off since that phone call, are you okay?"

I was working from home with Nala who is my colleague and close friend, she was my first doctor to be employed in my hospital, she's one of the doctors who come highly recommended and she believed in me and took a leap of faith by leaving the hospital she was working for and help me build mine, it's not easy starting your own hospital but if you lucky enough to work with highly recommended doctors while you also have a reputation yourself and the money, makes the struggle less hard.

Me:"Nala?"

Nala:"yes?"

Me:"if you were in love with someone like deeply in love with this person and he lived here in cape town, but you just have a lot of baggage here so many things haunt you when you here, you don't have any peace you are just surrounded by many things you'd rather forget to save your sanity, so you see a better life in Durban for the both of you where you can start afresh and make

new memories in a better place but he refuses to go to Durban with you, because they life is here, what would you choose, love or sanity?"

Nala:"that's should be easy, love, if I truly love the man then he shouldn't even be an option, he should always be my go to, he has my heart therefore he holds my sanity, when things get rough I won't have to face my demons alone, in him I'd have a safe place, if I'm ever lucky enough to find true love in this world with messed up relationships, I'd hold on to that for dear life, I'd fight anything for it, because nowadays love like that is very rare to find, love over sanity, because love comes with it all, at the end of a stressful evil day, you come back to a home filled with love and happiness, you have someone to talk to and make you forget how cruel the world is for a few hours before going back out there again only to think about going back home to your love again, I'd choose that any day"

(Silence)

Nala:"love should be easy not difficult, yes sometimes it hurts because people have moods, but if it's love, it will always be dominant no matter the person's mood"

I look at her for a while, she smiles

Nala:"but that's just my opinion, what would you choose?"

Me:"I just made the biggest mistake of my life, again, I have to go back before it's too late"

Nala:"what happened?"

Me:"I followed my mind instead of my heart as always because my heart always takes risks and my mind just can never allow those risks...."

I stand up

Me:"I should go pack, I need to leave right away"

Nala:"you can't just drop everything, we in the middle of something very important, this kind of treatment could make a big change for our hospital, let's finish this project first then you can make arrangements to leave"

Me:"I can't, we'll work over the phone"

I head upstairs into my room and throw my suitcase on the bed taking out clothes from my closet

Nala:"that's not possible you know that, Noah if we don't finish this, we'll miss the opportunity, you can't go now"

Me:"you don't understand Nala, if I don't go now, the woman I love will get married to some foreign nigerian dude who will possibly abuse her and my child because he's not stable upstairs, I've let him eat my cake for too long I'm not even sure if he hasn't destroyed it yet you know what they say about those guys machines..."

Nala:"a nigerian? Damn brother your cake must no longer be a cake anymore"

Me:"don't say that"

She laughs as she sits on the bed taking out my clothes from the suitcase

Me:"what are you doing?"

Nala:"you won't fit much things in here if you just dumping everything inside"

She folds them nicely

Me:"thank you, I promise I'll keep flying down so we can work on the project, attend my patients and fly back every night"

Nala:"wow must be nice having your own private jet, you can just fly back and forth anytime"

Me:"it's not as cool as it sounds but it's nothing if it means I get to be with the woman of my dreams"

Nala(smiling):"wow, she is one lucky woman, I wish I had a man that thought like this about me"

I look at her

Me:"you beautiful Nala, it won't be long, I hope you find a better man than me, who will not waste his life without you and choose everything else except you in future"

Nala:"when I first met you I thought you'd be that man"



Nala and I kind of hit it off when I got to cape town before Emma left her husband for me, but even after that I cheated on Emma with her, my life was pretty fucked up and I didn't really care about any of these women's feelings, Nala was not the only woman I was cheating with, all I cared about was trying to forget the woman I left back home, trying not to miss her I didn't care who I hurt along the way of doing that even if it was hurting Amahle as long as I forgot about her, which did not end very well because even with all these women I still want her more than anything.

Me:"don't do that Nala"

Nala:"what? You were a very smooth dude, the way you treated me, I seriously saw us getting married, even though you made it clear we were just having fun"

She laughs out loud

Me:"I'm sorry if you felt used"

Nala:"Not at all you didn't hide the fact that we were just having fun, so I knew I was being used but I didn't mind because I was using you for my pleasure as well, I guess your honesty and coldness made me catch feelings"

Me:"my coldness?"

Nala:"you are a bad guy Noah, it's like you are romantic without trying to be at the same time you are very mean and know when to tell a girl to get off, your arrogance was charming, I don't know maybe I just have a bad taste in men"

Me(laughs):"you are toxic Nala and you loved the toxic Noah"

She laughs

Nala:"true...I'm just saying, she is very lucky, I mean since you came back you've changed, for the better and now you are risking something you've worked so hard for, all to just go back for her, what did she do to deserve you"

Me:"she's not lucky trust me, if you were in her shoes, you'd see how unlucky to have a person like me in her life, if anything, I'm the lucky one, and I don't deserve her, but right now I have to go try my luck"

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

Me(laughing):"tag you it!"

I run but he quickly gets to me

Theo:"tag you it!!"

Me:"you cheating! You don't even let me get that far"

Theo:"you so slow mommy!"

"Having fun without me?"

He says coming towards us by the back yard

Me:"come here babe"

He walks closer to me and we share a kiss

Theo:"eewww"

I laugh breaking the kiss

Me:"tag you it's"

I run away from him as he chases us

Lowell:" I wasn't ready though"

Theo:'nananana you can't catch us"

He runs after us and catches up with me wrapping his arms around my waist

Lowell:"tag you mine"

He places kisses on my shoulder as I couldn't stop laughing

Me(laughing):"okay I'm too tired now"

Theo:"already?"

Me:"we've been playing for almost thirty minutes now"

Theo:"you so boring mama"

Lowell:"ei leave my wife alone she says she's tired"

Theo:"can I go play with Jason?"

Lowell:"who's jason?"

Me:"kid from next door....call him to come play with you here's

Theo:"okay!"

He runs off

Lowell:"you going to let him go to the neighbors by himself?"

Me:"he won't get out of the yard, they climb on that tree and jump over"

Lowell:"they don't mind that?"

Me:"just the kids we don't mind but the adults have to come in through the gate"

Lowell (laughs):"okay...hey, there's someone I'd like you to meet"

Me(confused smile):"who?"

He pulls my hand

Lowell:"follow me, I think you might like him"

Me:"who is it babe?"

We get to the lounge and there's a sleeping baby on his baby chair

Me:"whoa who's...oh that's your baby?"

Lowell:"yeah that's my boy"

Me:"wow...."

Lowell:"so, what do you think?"

Me:"wh-what do I think? About what?"

Lowell:"do you like him?"

Me (laughs):"it's a baby what's not to like?"

His smile disappears as he looks down

Me:"uhm I like him, he's very cute, I'm not surprised I mean have you seen yourself"

He chuckles smiling

Lowell:"if I knew things would've ended up like this I would've never knocked her up, I'm sorry that you have to be a step mom"

Me:"what? No don't apologise, you also Theo's step dad sooo we even"

We burst into laughter

Lowell:"let's shake on it"

We shake hands

Us:"even"

Me:"I want to carry him but I don't want to wake him up then he starts crying then he wakes up Owen and he starts crying then we have a house filled with babies crying and that'll be the end of the temporary peace we hardly get in this house"

Lowell (laughing):"true"

Me:"what's his name?"

Lowell:"kiaro"

Me:"that's a very cute name, I like it"

I walk the baby and bend over to him

I kiss his chubby cheeks and tiny hands

Me:"he's so cute"

Lowell:"I have strong genes"

Me(laughs):"don't get a big head now"

We sit down on the couch

Me:"she allowed you to take the baby without her being here?"

Lowell:"yeah but I have to take him back later"

Me:"good because I don't think I can handle two babies at night crying"

Lowell:"aww I would've helped, I really want him to sleep over so badly but Bailey was not having it, says he's still too young"

Me:"he is, at least when he's maybe two years old he can start sleeping over"

Lowell:"two? That's a long time"

Me:"it's still very young and that's as low as I can handle phela I'm the one who has to do everything for them, babies are a lot of work and you men think that you help but you actually don't, you just enjoy them when they all clean fed and happy"

Lowell:"that's not true, I can change the diaper...okay no I can't do that but I can feed the baby"

Me:"do you even know what they eat?"

Lowell:"oh come on who doesn't, they eat...what's that thing called again, the pink porridge looking soft stuff, and that stuff with different flavors in a bottle, what is it... pudding?"

Me:"purity"

Lowell:"that's what I meant"

I laugh

Me:"exactly, no help at all"

Lowell:"mxxxm come here, let's make another baby"

We kiss as he sneaks his hand under my shirt

Me:"to the bedroom"

He picks me up

Me:"wait don't forget the baby we have to go out him in Theo's bedroom"

Lowell:"you go to the room and get naked while I go put him away okay?"

I laugh nodding as I head to the room

When I broke up with Lowell three months ago he immediately went to do the cleansing a week later he never wasted any time and then came back to ask for forgiveness and I didn't waste time taking him back, I couldn't even stay mad at him I was just happy to have my baby back, I know that even though he's done a cleansing he's still a man and is still very much into women so he can still disappoint but right now I'll just hold on to his promise and put my trust and faith in him that he can love me just as much as I love him.

I never knew the happiness I've been depriving myself from all these years, I've never felt so complete, I never knew I was missing something until we found each other again.

Lowell:"ready or not here I come!"

He says running to the bed and jumps on top of me

Me(giggling):"aaaouch babyyy!!"

Lowell:"sorry my love, let me kiss it better"

He leaves a trail of kisses all over my naked body

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

The Uber stops in front of the house

Me:"thank you very much sir"

Driver:"you welcome"

We get off and take out bags from the boot as he drives off leaving us in front of the house

We look at the house in front of us

Me(sighs):"we here"

Rain:"how do we get in the gate?"

Me:"let me call Lowell"

I take my phone and call Lowell

"Babe?"

Me:"you have to stop calling me that"

"It has become a habit I don't know if I can stop but I'll try"

Me:"please"

"What do you need babe? (Laughs) I'm kidding Mahle"

Me:"we are outside the gate"

"Ohh okay give me a few"

Me:"okay"

He hangs up, after a few minutes the gate opens and we walk inside

Rain:"do you think he'll be happy to see us?"

Me:"he better be"

We ring the bell, after a minute or two the door opens.

He looks at us with his eyes widened in disbelief, he was shirtless and his eyes were red like he's been crying

Noah:"am I dreaming right now? Wait..you supposed to be Lowell, I thought, how did you...(looks at Rain)..Rain?"

Me:"it's nice to see you too"

Noah:"oh my God"

He attacks me with a hug as I hold him back, I feel joy overwhelming my heart as he holds me for dear life

Noah:"I was so sad, I thought you were really getting married"

Me:"how would I be doing that when you were all the way here"

He looks at me and we share a kiss, it was a fast kiss but it happened slowly as I got lost in the moment, it's been years since I've felt this kind of passion, it was like we were kissing for the very first time

"mooom!"

I push him off breaking the kiss as I try to catch my breath I feel guilt as I had completely forgotten about Rain for a minute there

He kneels down before him and they share a hug

Noah:"my boy, you were just messing with me, everything you and your mom said over the phone? It wasn't real?"

Rain:"mom said we should prank you and act like we are still mad at you for leaving us, so that we could surprise you and come visit for the holidays"

He looks at me

Noah:"I see you think you have jokes huh?"

Me:"you did cry so we succeeded"

Noah:"how did you know where I stay though?...ohhh you used Lowell, when I gave Lowell my location thinking that he's going to visit me it was actually you guys"

Me(smiling):"smart"

He stands up and comes closer to me

I slap him across the face

Me:"that's for leaving us"



Noah:"okay, I deserve that"

I slap him again

Me:"that one was for breaking our hearts"

I rubs his cheek

Noah:"ouch that one was painful"

I slap him again

Me:"that one was for making my life a living hell without you for years..(looks at Rain) .. because you had to come save people which is a good thing"

Rain:"daddy can I tell you something in your ear?"

He bends over to his level when he unexpectedly slaps him

Rain:"that one is for making momma cry a lot and for breaking her dishes and for making her sad all the time"

We high five

Me:"good one"

Noah:"okay okay enough slaps, I'm sorry for everything, honestly you won't believe this but I was getting ready to leave later tonight to come back to you guys because my life sucked here without you and I missed you like crazy, I couldn't even concentrate....

"Who's down there Noah?..."

We look up as a beautiful white woman comes down the stairs, my heart sinks painfully

Me:"really? You missed us huh?...mxm"

I turn to walk away

Me:"let's go Rain, I think we made a mistake"

He grabs my hand

Noah:"wait, it's not what it looks like..."

Me:"oh please don't use that lame line with me because it usually is everything it looks like, how else do you explain a woman coming from your bedroom and you being shirtless when it's just the two of you, here I am acting like a love sick idiot flying my child and I in this big city we don't know risking our safety for you thinking that you are just as miserable as we were when you left but no, you have already moved on in a matter of three months like it was no....

He shuts me up with a kiss and instead of pushing him away I kiss him back as my body betrays me by craving for more of his touch

Noah(looking into my eyes):"sshhh, calm down, I need you to trust what I'm telling you because I have no reason to lie, this is Nala, she is my work colleague we were working from home as we working on a project, after the call to you and Rain I couldn't focus on work anymore so I went upstairs to pack up cause I was planning on leaving tonight and she came upstairs and helped me, I know it doesn't sound appropriate but I promise you nothing like that happened or was about to happen or was ever going to happen, you were all that was on my mind, please you have to trust me"

I search into his eyes for a while and I felt a bit stupid because I actually believe him, if he's fooling me right now, then I'm the biggest fool for trusting him

But I know Noah when he's lying even though sometimes he's hard to read

Anyway whether I believe him or not I came a long way to just leave again, I did not go through so much heart ache and cry a river of tears for this man only to give up because of some white woman who was probably his one night stand or a fling.

Me:"hi Nala...

She was about to say something

Me:"please leave, we kind of having a family time"

Nala(smiles):"of cause, let me not keep you"

She takes her purse from the lounge and packs papers in a flip file into her laptop bag

She holds Noah's shoulder

Nala:"I guess I'll see you at work then, bye"

She looks into his eyes for a while then smiles before looking at me and winks walking away.

What was that about? That was definitely the I fucked him already look kind of the same attitude the so called Eve of a woman gave me the other day

Me:"you saw that?"

Noah:"wait..."

He walks up to her and grabs her hand holding it tightly making her flinch

Noah:"don't be that kind of bitch, I will fuck you up, you hear me?"

She nods repeatedly in fear, he twists her arm a bit as she closes her eyes in pain then he lets her go pushing her a bit as she quickly runs out the door.

I look at Rain who was already disappearing to other rooms as he was looking around the house

Noah:"I'm sorry about that"

Me:"so you did fuck her"

Noah:"it was a long time ago I promise"

Me:"it doesn't matter, I just want to start over, I can't live another six years without you, sorry we couldn't go with you the other day I had to sort out a few things before leaving, we not in a movie I couldn't just leave with you right there and then, I had to resign at the hospital with a one month notice, I had to talk to my family about my plans, I had to make Rain understand the change that was about to happen in our lives, I had to get my parents blessings, I had to tell my friends and spend some time with them before leaving, my work friends too, I had a whole life there and it was not worth leaving everyone who was there for me when you left me heartbroken and pregnant with a sick baby, I almost dropped out, Rain was so sick I couldn't concentrate and I was always thinking about you wondering when were you coming back, his sickness was so stressful and heart breaking I almost gave him up for adoption, I know it sounds evil but I was losing my mind, but because I was surrounded by people who cared for me and loved me, I got support from everyone, they all took turns with him when it was time for my exams, he never ever felt any neglect, I couldn't just leave these people, they deserved an explanation and a proper goodbye,

other than that, I chose you, because despite everything, I am now certain that no matter how good or handsome or loving men that come my way are to me, I will never ever love any man the way I love you, I only ever wanted you, even when I tried to love someone else I always looked for you him but it turns out you are rare, I thought I wanted a perfect man but I was wrong I actually want a very very imperfect man, a messed up one, a crazy man, a Noah"

He pulls me closer to him

Noah:"I want you too and I understand why you took your time, I'm sorry for running away, I'm never doing that again, thank you for changing your life for me, love is about compromise and I haven't been doing much of that, I'm sorry, I will work on myself as much as I can, I won't be perfect but I'll be the best I can, if you want we can fly back to Joburg I had already made a plan of working from there, even if it means flying back and forth everyday I'd do it"

Me(smiles):"idrama engaka Noah, ngilambile mina please get us something to eat and show us to our rooms we are tired iJet leg ayidlali"

I walk up the stairs

Noah:"yes ma'am"

Me:"beautiful house you've got here Doctor Nhlabathi, for how many do you accommodate for?"

Noah:"sadly only two people"

I turn to look at him

Me:"but there's three of us, how can that possibly work?"

Noah:"well that's easy, you beautiful lady will have to share a bed with me, and the young boy will have a while room to himself"

Me:"hmm I see, but it looks like there are more than two bedrooms in this house Sir?"

Noah:"oh, those rooms have rats, I can't let anyone sleep there"

He says picking me up

Me(giggles):"why do I sense that you just want to get under my pants"

Noah:"maybe I do"

Me(gasps):"you pervert!"

He laughs then frowns

Noah:"where's Rain?"

I think for a while as he puts me down and we look for him all over the house only to find him sleeping on the bed in one of the rooms

Noah:"he must be really tired"

He goes up to him and takes off his shoes, his jeans and shirt leaving him in only his undies and vest then tucks him in bed, he kisses his cheek and forehead before walking towards me by the door as we close the door

Me:"I'm surprised he just...."

He attacks me with a kiss hungrily picking me up and pins me against the door of Rain's room, a whimper escapes my mouth as my blood rushes giving me goosebumps, I wrap my arms around his neck holding the back of his head

By the time he puts me down I realized he had already taken off my shirt and I was on the bed while he took off his clothes

Noah:"I'm sorry about this sweetheart, but we will catch up later, we've been doing a lot of talking and less loving, I just want to love you right now"

He says getting on the bed and taking off my jeans which became a struggle cause they were tight

I burst into laughter watching him struggle with my jeans

Me:"let me help you with that"

Noah:"please!"

I pick up waist up and push them down with a little wiggle as he pulls them off

Noah(sighs):"finally....wow you've gotten very thick"

He says admiring my hips

Me:"it's Rain's fault my figure is not the same as well..."

Noah(cusses under his breath):"so sexy"

He trails kisses all over my body as he goes down on me, the thought of him being inside of me after so many years made very wet in excitement as I felt the coochie vibrate while he ate it out with my legs spreaded apart his tongue made magic licking

My eyes close biting my lower lip as I grab onto his head as he increases the pace fucking me with his tongue while caressing my clit, I lose my track of breath sucking in my tummy grabbing the sheets as I feel myself getting close he comes back up and kisses my lips, my breath hitches to the feeling of his warm hard dick resting right on my coochie as he pins himself harder against me

He breaks the kiss and gazes into my eyes

Noah:"I love you so much and I promise I'll do everything in my power to put the pieces back together"

I was about to respond when his dick stretched me open as he filled up my walls

"Awww...mmmhh babyyy..

I was expecting him to fuck me rough like he always used to do, but instead he pinned his body on mine wrapping himself around me as he started moving really slowly, the feeling of his strong body against mine and his waist moving smoothly hitting against mine made me lose my senses as I wrapped my legs tightly around his waist and my arms around him, he keeps a steady pace going fast and slow at the same time as his lips leave my neck up to my cheek pecking my face before smooching my lips, we were making slow love

Me(kissing):"I love you Lwandle"

Noah(kissing):"I love you more sweetheart"

He continues moving burying himself deep inside of me looking deep into my eyes

Me:"I missed you so much"

Noah:"I missed you more"

Me:"have you been working out?"

Noah:"yeah am I hurting you?"

Me:"no you not, you so sexy"

He laughs

Noah(blushing):"staaap"

I burst into laughter as he picks up the pace and I gasp for air and my eyes roll over at the pleasures

We continue kissing as we switch positions laying on our side hitting it from behind while pressing and squeezing my boobs my hand rests on his butt and I squeeze it, he chuckles while breathing against my neck

Right after I wet his dick squirting on it He grunts heavily and fills up my womb with his sperms leaving my legs shaking

.

.

.

\*\*\*

"I didn't fall in love with you, I walked into love with you, with my eyes wide open, choosing to take every step along the way. I do believe in fate and destiny, but I also believe we fated to do the things we'd choose to do anyway, and I'd choose you in a hundred lifetimes, in a hundred worlds, in any version of reality....I'd find you and I'd choose you"

Insert 139

•

•

•

•

•

[A FEW MONTHS LATER]

Amahle

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Noah:"cut the patient open"

Me:"yes doctor"

He hands me the scalpel and hold my hand, I look up at him

Me:"please let go doctor..

Noah:"my bad"

I take it and cut the patient, I'm not allowed to do serious surgeries just yet I still have to recommend the patient to a specialist like Noah but since I've been working here he lets me go into surgeries with his supervision, soon I'll be able to do surgery without supervision, I'm so glad he lets me help the minor surgeries I've been doing were becoming boring, I missed this excitement, working with him reminded me of back when I was still a student an amateur who answered every question and asked a lot of questions mostly because I was genuinely interested and also, I wanted to impress him.

Me:"I've cut him up doc

Noah:"thank you, please go get the Obstetrical forceps for me"

Me:"nurse please....

Noah:"I'm asking you to do it"

I look at him he raised his brow at me

I sigh and walk away to get the forceps



I look around for it but it was no where to be found, usually the assisting nurses know where exactly they stay, I open the draws near the sink and find it

I walk back to the bed and everyone had awkward smiles

Me:"found it"

Noah:"please take the heart out"

Me(excitedly):"okay!"

I look down at the body and find something like a black box

Me(confused):"oh my! What's that..."

Noah:"where?"

I point at the object inside the body

Me:"that"

Noah:"take it out doctor Mbokazi"

My heart rate increases in fear as I take a closer look at it

Me:"what is that..."

Noah:"what does it look like?"

Me:"a box for jewelry but how did it get in there"

Noah:"take it out"

I take it out as it's a bit greased with blood

Me:"how did this even get in this man's body? Could he have done surgery before and the surgeons left this inside?"

Noah:"open it"

I look at him he has a serious face while others are smiling secretly

I look at it and open it, I gasp at the beautiful shiny diamond ring

Me:"woow whoever left this inside this man was very rich"

Noah:"that's because I am"

I look up at him

Me:"what?"

He smiles at me

Me:"wait...you put this in here?"

My mouth widens

Me:"is that why you sent me to go get the forceps? (at the assisting doctors and nurses) You guys knew?"

They smile

Me:"is this what I think it is?"

Noah:"what do you think it is?"

Me:"that you asking me to marry you?"

Noah:"will you?"

Me:"you know this is the most weird and creepy proposal ever?"

Noah:"I like being different"

Me:"you just put my ring inside a half dead human body of a stranger the box has blood in it? We are in the middle of a surgery"

The others laugh

Me:"is this even allowed? Are we not going to get I'm trouble for this?"

Noah:"we won't tell if you don't"

Me:"are you out of your mind?"

Noah:"yes, I am, I'm crazy in love with you"

Me(laughs tearfully):"No, you are just plain crazy"

Noah:"is that a yes?"

I bite my lip in excitement

Me:"of cause I'll marry you"

I run around to his side and we share a hug, we were about to kiss but remembered we not allowed as we were at work and the masks were blocking us

Me:"you are crazy you know that?"

Noah:"that's why you said yes"

Assisting surgeon:"we have to get back to the surgery, the body can't be open for too long"

Me:"keep this for me, I'll put it on after work"

I slide it in his pocket as we get back to work, I can't help but keep stealing glances at him as I kept catching him stealing glances at me while stitching up the patient, I'm so excited I can't wait to get out of here already, I'm already imagining us in his office after this operation

I never thought Noah would propose like this, I was expecting something different but this, this was just crazy, who puts an engagement ring inside someone's body!?! As creepy as it is, it still melts my heart and I find it very cute, does that make me crazy as well? Whatever the case, I wouldn't trade this man for anything, I never thought I could be this happy and at peace for such a lengthy period of time

.

.

.

Keon

.

.

.

After my break up with Amahle, I found it hard to look at another woman the same way again, and I swore to kendall and to myself that I shall never bring a woman into our lives only to break our hearts, she still cries for Amahle and Rain wanting to talk to them but I don't want her to have a relationship with them even though I know Amahle would probably not mind but we'll never get

over her if we keep in touch with her all the time, she is slowly getting over the break up, it's sad because Kendall and I are the only ones who walked out with broken hearts from that relationship while they have moved on and are happy not even thinking about us.

When I met Amahle I thought my obsessive love disorder was better since I was attending therapy and got help, but I guess the deeper we took our relationship the more insecure and possessive I became, if it wasn't for another man being in the picture, I'm very sure I would've loved her the right way, I don't take break ups very well, my last heartbreaking break up I ended up with blood on my hands, it was almost the same with Amahle had no one come to save her that night she wouldn't be alive...I am happy with how I handled things this time around by not obsessing over her even after the break up or feeling the urge to kill her and destroy her relationship.

I'm now attending therapy again, and the new therapist has been really good, it's not easy changing therapist, but this one, she was different and did things differently, she kind of made me enjoy coming for therapy

Her: "you've been doing quite well"

Me: "all thanks to you"

Her: "that will be all for the week, we will meet again in two weeks time"

Me: "that's in a long time"

Her: "you've made a lot of progress so there's no need to be coming all the time"

Me: "but what if I want to?"

She smiles looking at me, I don't know if it's possible but I think her smile has also been therapeutic for me, her beauty as well...I smile at her. I dare not to fall for this kind of beauty again, I don't want to find myself in love with someone who won't love me back just as much, so I'll just admire her from a distance and stick to the women in the bars as one night stands.

Me(sighs): "okay then, thank you so much, it's a shame I'll have to wait weeks to see you again"

She smiles fixing her hair pushing it behind her ears and adjusting her glasses

Her: "it is a shame"

Judging by the signs I'd conclude that she has a thing for me but that could just be my weak love problem being delusional

I get up and walk towards the door

"Wait"

I look back at her

Her:"it doesn't have to be weeks if you just ask me out for dinner or lunch"

I look at her for a while

Her(looking down):"I'm sorry that's inappropriate... forget I said anything"

Me(smiles):"you want me to ask you on a date?"

Her:"not of you don't want to"

I walk back to my seat in front of hers

Me:"you know everything about me, you know how I get like when women leave me, I don't want you being part of the stats not when you the only person who knows how to make me feel better"

Her:"I also know that when you love you love purely and wholeheartedly, you just had bad luck in falling for the ones who just enjoyed the benefits of you but never showed you the same love, can I tell you a secret?"

I nod

Her:"I also have what you have OLD, but I've stayed away from falling in love because I become a wreck when I got through a break up, I've landed two of my exes in hospital because I never understood when someone didn't love me the same way I loved them, and what triggered me is that they'd break up with me because I love them too much"

Me:"so what are you saying? You want to love me too much?"

She giggles and looks down at her notepad

Her:"No, I've learned to control myself throughout the years it's possible to overcome it, and as time goes on, you will too"

Me:"I promised myself I wouldn't put myself or my child through this"

Her: "I won't promise that I won't hurt you or that if we together it'll last forever, don't look at me as the mother of your child or your wife, let's just be friends, really close friends then we'll see where that go"

Me: "I'd like that"

Her: "good"

She takes out something from her purse like a card and gives it to me

Her: "this is my personal number, call me"

Me: "I most definitely will Gabby"

I smile and walk out, I've never been involved with a white lady before, maybe it'll be a good change, maybe I should take things very slow with this one then maybe things will turn out differently.

I take out my phone and save her number on it, I scroll down to Amahle's contact where I block and delete her number, I go on instagram to her account, I first go through her timeline, she's already posted pictures of herself and Noah with Rain their old videos as well on a road trip, she has deleted posts of us, even though she's never shown my face when posting our pictures because for some reason she didn't like exposing her partner to social media, but it seems like her rules have changed with Noah, or maybe she just always knew she'd end up with him no matter what.

I sigh and block her before going to unfriend her on facebook and blocking her.

I sigh in relief, it's now time to start fresh and leave my past behind with hopes that it won't come back to destroy my future.

I start my car and drive to go pick Kendall up from school

.

.

.

Noah

.

.

.

It was now time to go home as our shift has come to an end for the day, I was waiting for her in the car, she takes longer get out of that hospital all the time, she has made a couple of friends with the doctors it was easy for her since she's such a outspoken friendly and kind person, people are not afraid to talk to her unlike me, they not friendly with me but they just respect me.

These past few months have been the best months of my entire life being around Rain all the time is a bliss, he's a very cheerful child a lot like me before my happiness was snatched by the dark events that happened around me, I'll make sure that nothing happens to Rain's happiness I want him to be the man I was supposed to be had I was raised in a better family.

As a man it's very interesting raising a son because you get to watch yourself growing up again and you get the chance to make a few changes and instill knowledge and wisdom that you wish you could have received as a boy, Rain will become the better version of me and I'll make sure of it.

I still think about London a lot and I miss her even more with each passing day, sometimes I find myself talking about her, the funny cute things she did, and I feel guilty everytime I laugh or enjoy my life loving others whilst she's not here to live these moments with me, I feel guilty because she's not the best part about my day anymore, I feel guilty that some days pass by and I didn't even think about her, I feel guilty that Amahle and Rain made moving on so easy like it was nothing, but I wouldn't ask for it to be any other way

"Love?"

I look out and she's standing outside the passenger door as the door is locked, I always lock it on purpose

I got out of the and went around to her side, I pulled her in for a kiss before opening the door for her

Amahle:"I wonder how long will you keep this up, opening doors for me"

She says as she gets in, u close the door and walk over to my seat

Me:"I will keep it up till death do us part"

Amahle (chuckles):"psh yeah right I give it a year or two you'll be over it"

Me:"we'll just have to wait and see about that"

I drive off to Rain's aftercare

Amahle:"I still can't believe that's how you proposed to me babe"

Me(laughs):"I wanted it to be memorable"

Amahle:"damn right! I thought you were the romantic type, that you'd get a jet to skywrite "Amahle will you marry me" on the sky with smoke and a heart on the side for the whole world to see(smiles thoughtfully)...(sighs) but nooo not my Noah he decided to put my ring inside a half dead stranger's body in the middle of surgery at work"

Me(laughing):"come on babe you want me to be cliché? Besides that was a very romantic proposal, we were both doing what we love, fixing someone's heart in which you did a very good job, get it in here (we fist bump) what better way to express my heart for you to heal by saying yes to my heart's request than during an open heart surgery?"

She bursts into laughter

Amahle:"No no Noah! You are not normal, are you okay? I think we need to go for another cleansing in KZN ngeke uyagula bhuti I think abaphansi are trying to tell me something"

We burst out laughing

Amahle:"but I love you so much hlanya lam, I don't mind being crazy with you, I've never in my life felt this much joy and fulfilment in my heart, thank you"

She takes my hand which was resting on her thigh and she places it on her beating heart

Amahle:"you feel that"

Me(nodding):"yeah"

Amahle:"That's how you make me feel...alive, I mean it's one thing being alive but feeling alive that's something special, I've never felt that way since forever, I wake up everyday and I'm so thankful that God still kept me to see yet another day so I can be with you, you make me grateful for life and I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with you"



I turn driving off the road into a peaceful area on the side of the road and park my car next to a tree

I turn to look at her, I could not concentrate on the road I needed to give her all my attention

Amahle:"why'd you stop?"

Me:"you know I can't drive and look into your eyes at the same time, or don't you want to be alive anymore?"

We laugh

Me:"I also feel the same way and probably more, I've never prayed like how I've been praying since I got you back into my life, I'm sure even God is confused standing up there with Moses, Noah and Abraham looking down at me like "what in the promise land is up with this niggar?"...

She bursts into laughter

Amahle (laughing):"Stop..."

Noah:"for real, I talk to him more often than I used to, asking him to help me not repeat the same mistakes as before, to give me strength to protect you and Rain from outsiders but mostly, from myself because I know how I have hurt you and even though I've sworn I'd never do that again, I still don't trust myself, having you in my life has made me believe more in God and that he's with me, and he wants only the best for me, I've realized that I cannot love you the way you deserve without God by my side, with God I know for sure that you will be with me forever for he also promised to never forsake me, you are not just any ordinary person in my life, I know deep down in my heart that it wasn't a coincidence that you came into my life, it most definitely must've been God, I never thought the day I chose love would be the day my Faith in God would be restored, I guess I now understand when they say that God is love and love is God, because everytime I look into your eyes, I see God, I see love and I see my reflection, you have no idea how much you have changed me, I just wish I had met you sooner but I pray that God graces us with his gift of life for many more years to come and protects our friendship"

Tears were uncontrollably streaming down her face as she was looking into my eyes which are also leaking like crazy

She laughs wiping my tears

Amahle:"you crying"

Me(laughing):"you too"

I wipe her a bit then lean closer, she moves her face closer to mine and we share a kiss

Amahle:"I love you"

Me:"I love you more"

The kiss gets heated as her hands explore my body

Me:"come sit on me"

She pulls out of the kiss

Amahle:"No, let's go fetch Rain it's getting late"

Me:"just a shortnyana quicky babe your touch made me hard, please sweetheart"

Amahle:"Noah No, we always having sex, sex is not going anywhere, we about to spend the rest of our long lives together we'll have plenty plenty of that even tonight we'll have some, but for now our baby is waiting for us, please drive the monna I miss my baby"

Me(laugh):"the monna is the only sestwana you know right?"

Amahle:"Bathong! No that's not the only sestwana I know"

Me:"okay, go on.."

Amahle:"ubatla ke bua eng?"

I laugh at her off side accent

Me:"cela uhlale kwisiZulu sthandwa sam ngyacela bandla" (please stick to zulu my love, please)

We laugh out loud as I drive back to the road

.

.

.

Lulama

.

.

.

Me:"I've prepared the salad"

Lowell:"the meat is done"

We set the table up nicely

He goes up to call Theo to join us at the table for dinner as the baby was fast asleep

We all sit around the table

Lowell:"let us pray"

We bow our heads holding hands

Lowell:"we just want to thank you Lord for your for this wonderful day for protecting us till this very special hour where we get to be with our family and eat together as for some people didn't get this opportunity today so thank you very much and we ask that you bless the food that we about to eat and the hands that prepared it, in Jesus mighty name, Amen"

Us:"Amen"

I look up at him and smile, honestly I'm starting to feel like I do not know this man, he keeps surprising me and becoming a better man with each passing day, he has grown up so much and I'm so happy to be experiencing all this love and maturity from him, my love for him keeps growing so much that I'm even scared it'll be too much that my heart will explode, is it even possible to love someone this much?

Me:"so what's the special occasion?"

I ask as we sit, he came back from work early than usual today and prepared this food for us, I had to insist for him to let me help and he made me do the green salad

Lowell:"No special occasion, it's Friday today, and since we can't party like we used to anymore, we have to make it fun"

Me(laughs):"and this is fun?"

Lowell:"this is very fun, just taste my food and see how fun it'll be"

I laugh as I take a bite of the food, it was very good no lie, this is another surprise, I didn't know Lowell could cook this good, he's never really cooked for me, he always let's me do it, I believed that the only thing he can cook is breakfast nothing else but boi was I deceived

Me:"I still can't believe you can cook"

Lowell:"I've never said I couldn't"

Me:"you never said you could!"

Theo:"I like your food malume"

Lowell:"thank you son"

Me:"yeah he tried shame"

Lowell:"yoh babe, you should tone down the jealousy a bit, it doesn't look good on you"

Me:"whatever"

Theo:"my daddy also cooks delicious food"

My smile disappears as I swallow spit

Theo still believes that his father is still alive and he's just gone in a very long business trip overseas where he lost his phone so he can't talk to him, I'm just waiting for the right time to tell him that his plane crashed on his way back and he didn't make it, but it's been very hard for me to do that to him, to break his little heart like that I don't know when I'm going to break it to him but I have to do it soon

Lowell looks at me then back at Theo

Lowell:"I bet he does, I can't wait to try his food when he gets back"

Theo:"I don't think daddy will like you"

Lowell:"why not?"

Theo:"because you always kiss my mommy and mommy is my daddy's wife"

My eyes widen

Lowell(chuckles):"ohh I see, this is another reason I actually wanted us to eat together, Theo, there is something we need to tell you"

Me:"Lowell?"

Lowell:"it's time babe, Theo can obviously see what's going on but we just confusing him by not telling him just because he's a kid and doesn't understand, but as he grows he'll understand and he will hate me because he'll make up his own conclusions in his head, I grew up in a family filled with secrets, things my parents hid from us just because we were kids but affected our live greatly until we were older more than it affected them, I don't want to raise a family like my parents I want us to have a home filled with honesty and trust"

I nod my head in agreement

Me:"okay, I understand"

He nods and looks at Theo

Lowell:"Theo we received bad news from your dad's work a few weeks ago and it was very bad news that mommy was so hurt she didn't know how to tell you because she didn't want you to get hurt"

Theo looks at me

Theo:"what's wrong mommy?"

I take deep breath and put my fork down

Me:"uhm baby, you know how your father uses an airplane to go for business trips?"

He nods in understanding

Me:"well on his way back something was wrong with the engine and his plane crashed to the ground and...(sighs tirelessly)...and he, he didn't make it, he passed away"

Theo:"what's passed away?"

Me:"he died, he..."

Lowell:"daddy went to heaven, where people go when they die, he's an angel now"

Theo:"he's in heaven right now?"

Me:"yes baby"

Theo:"can I still visit him, in heaven?"

I felt tears threaten

Me:"No baby, no one can visit heaven, only people who are chosen at that time, we all have our time when we'll be chosen but until then we just have to carry on living life to our fullest, you will never be able to visit daddy again until the day you are also chosen to go to heaven"

Theo(tearfully):"I can't ever see him, for real"

My heart breaks at his broken voice

I walk up to him sitting on the chair next to him as I pull him close to my chest

Me:"oh my baby, you can always talk to him whenever you feel like talking to him, even though he won't be able to talk to you back but he'll always be listening and he is now your guardian angel watching over you all the time"

Theo:"he's my ancestors?"

Me:"yes, how did you know about that?"

Theo:"mommy Mahle told me about it"

Me:"yes he's your ancestors"

Theo(breaking voice):"I miss daddy"

He breaks down into tears

I pull him into my embrace holding him as tears roll down my eyes

Lowell walks up to us and pulls us to his embrace

Lowell:"it's going to be okay, hey look what I got for you"

He lets go of us as we look at him

He takes out something from his pocket it was an antique wooden like necklace

Lowell:"this is a special necklace my granddad gave to me when my grandma died, it opened up like this"

He opens the square shaped small center piece

Lowell:"I've put a picture of him in here and puffed in his cologne, you keep this around your neck....

He puts it over his neck

Lowell:"when you open it you can smell him and see him, you can also talk to him when you alone he'll always be and now he'll always be right here (touches his chest) right next to your heart, whatever you feeling he'll feel it too, especially when you sad and you need him the most"

He touches it looking at it as he wipes off his tears sniffing

Theo:"thank you"

Lowell:"you welcome"

He unexpectedly attacks him with a hug

Lowell looks at me surprised I smile and mouth a "I love you " he mouths it back "I love you more" I join in the hug and peck his lips then whisper in his ear

Me(whispering):"you are getting an all nighter tonight"

He pecks my lips multiple times

It's moments like these when my love for him grows, not when he's romantic, or fucking me good like he's been sexually starved every single day, or when he buys me all the luxury I desire, but these moments when he's not trying to impress me when he's just being himself, caring, gentle, when he's expressing himself without being aware of it. Sometimes I wish I made different choices seven years ago only God knows how far we'd be right now, we'd probably be on our third or fourth baby, living in some beautiful exotic island, but I'm grateful for where we are right now.

I have come a long way from the person I was seven years ago, my choices were not the best and my mistakes were the worst, I was a heartless spoiled brat full of hatred and bitterness, I won't lie and say I know why I was the person I was back then but I can proudly say I have learnt and grown to a person I never thought I'd be...and I really like this person, she's a very strong woman. I have cut ties with Blair our friendship wasn't the same anymore we had different visions and views, she was still living in the past and I was moving on our relationship was just not working out we drifted.

Having my twin sister in my life and part of my family is the best thing that has ever happened to me, not a day goes by where we don't talk, she's the best part of my day, I never meant to love her this much, I always wonder how it would've been had we been raised together I do wish she was around but it doesn't matter anymore because we've already done everything we should've done together and we still to do a whole lot more. I won't say my life is now perfect but...yeah it's perfect

A call comes through disturbing out dinner as the mood had lightened up

It was My phone

Lowell:"babe we agreed no phones at the table"

I look at it and it was written "TWIN♥☐"

Me:"it's my better half babe I have to take it"

Lowell:"I thought I was your better half"

Theo:"I thought I was the better half mommy?"

Me"there's quite a few of you okay"

I answer the phone as it was a video call, her face pops up as she has that big smile she always has

Amahle:"hey sisi"

Me:"hi sis how you doing?"

Amahle:"I'm awesome, actually I'm very happy no I'm ecstatic"



Me(smiles excitedly):"and why are you so happy"

My mood rises matching up to hers as her excitement makes me excited and I don't even know why she's so excited

Amahle:"weeeelll something miraculous happened today"

Me:"really Amahle, mxm you going to tell me about work, you always tell me these miracle stories, the way I was so excited I thought...

Amahle:"it's not about patients"

I smile again

Me:"okay what is it?"

She shows me her hand, at first I'm confused but I gasp as my jaw drops when I spot the beautiful ring on her finger

Me:"No way!"

Amahle:"yes way!"

Me(screaming in excitement):"aaaaaaaaaaaahhhh!!!"

Amahle:"aaaaaaaaaaaahhhh!!!"

Lowell:"okay okay please enough"

He says coming to sit right next to me

Lowell:"congratulations Mahle that is very good news"

Amahle (smiling):"thank you"

Lowell:"where's the man?"

She looks beside her

Amahle:"he's right here next to me, my love come show yourself"

She turns the camera so it could show both of them, he waves at us

Noah:"hi"

He is still very intimidating I don't think I'll ever get used to him, I thought Amahle would soften him up but he's still not easy to be around but he is a bit better when Amahle is around

Me:"hey Noah, thank you so much for keeping my sisi happy"

Noah:"it's reciprocal"

Lowell:"I'm proud of you bro, please don't mess up this time"

Noah:"never again bro, I'm keeping her on lockdown forever this time"

They stare at each other sharing a moment, I don't think they realize it

Me:"ncwooo I love to see it, but where in the world are you guys? And why in the hell is Noah dressed as a captain and you are all dolled up? Oh my gosh can I see your full outfit"

She shows herself letting Noah hold the phone for her, she has on a long elegant a bit sparkly navy blue dress matching with Noah's captain uniform, she looks like a model from a magazine

Me:"wooww you look absolutely gorgeous"

Noah:"we on a boat taking a short cruise"

Lowell:"that's awesome, are you not working tomorrow?"

Noah:"we are but we'll be sick tomorrow"

We all laugh

Me:"woow okay, you guys enjoy"

Lowell:"wait when are y'all coming down to share the news with the families?"

Noah:"where do you think we taking a cruise to?"

Me(laughs):"ohhh you guys are coming down on a boat? cool that's so romantic"

Amahle:"it is but not so much because I'm getting sea sick, the smell of sea food just makes things worse"

Me:"I'll send you tips on how to relieve that feeling"

Lowell:"wait but where are you going to arrive because Joburg has no sea?"

Noah:"Durban then we take a flight"

Me:"that's going to take a few days"

Noah:"that's the plan"

Amahle:"we in no rush"

Theo:"is Rain coming?"

Amahle:"yes my angel he's coming"

Theo:"where is he? Can I say hi to him"

Amahle:"I'll let him call you in a minute so you guys can talk okay?"

Theo:"okay momma, I love you"

Amahle:"I love you too my angel"

She blows kisses to him

Noah:"babe, phone away now"

Amahle:"okay guys see you in a few days"

Us:"byeeeee"

They cut the call

Me(sighs):"wow finally those two are together for real real this time"

Lowell:"it's about damn time"

Me:"when are we getting married?"

Lowell:"whoa babe pressure much?"

Me(laughs):"I'm kidding, please let's at least stay a few years away from marriage"

Lowell:"yeah that's what we need, we still have our whole lives ahead of us, no rush"

Me(blushing):"mhm"

We tempted to kiss but resist because of Theo in front of us as we continue talking about random stuff

.

.

.

Amahle

.

.

.

Me:"I think you should let the professional captain take over now"

He looks at me and smirks

Noah:"don't you trust me?"

Me:"not at all"

Noah;"I'm offended, I got this whole outfit for you and everything trying to make this the best experience for you..."

Me:"I seriously thought we were just going to do some role play and you wanted to try some funky sex, I didn't think you'd really sail this boat"

He laughs

Noah:"you think I'd get this dressed up for sex?"

Me:"Yes! I never know with you, just last month you introduced to BDSM tying me up like a hostage and all that crazy stuff, so hey now I'm just ready for anything, I've accepted your craziness"

He laughs moving closer to me

Noah:"maybe we should try role play"

I wrap my arms around his neck

Me:"maybe we should"

Noah:"you know I might be the crazy one but you are low key always down to try my crazy things, you are quite the dora the explorer yourself"

Me:"what can I say you a mysterious someone , I never know what to expect but I'm always intrigued"

He attacks me with a kiss

Noah:"you didn't know I was going to do that did you?"

Me:"no, but can you do it again"

We share a kiss as he picks me up like a little baby as we head to our bedroom

Me:"my love"

Noah:"sweetheart"

Me:"there's something I have to tell you"

He takes off his hat and loosens his tie while looking at me

Me:"I don't know how you going to take this and I've been afraid of telling you because I don't know how you'd react"

Noah:"what is it love"

I sigh and look down

(Silence)

He lifts my chin up to look at him

Noah:"talk to me sweetheart"

Me:"uhmm..I'm..I'm pregnant"

He looks at me for a while without saying anything with no emotions

My heart rate increases anxious about what's going on in his mind, I have kept this for a while now because I'm afraid to lose him and sometimes Noah makes irrational decisions i didn't want to scare him away again

Me:"say something, please"

Noah:"I know"

Me:"know what?"

Noah:"I've known for quite a while now that you are pregnant"

Me:"you did?"

Noah:"yeah I saw the symptoms, I just wanted you to come out and tell me"

Me:"sorry for not telling you I didn't know how you'd react"

Noah:"I figured, I know it's still hard to trust me, that I won't up and leave when the seat gets too heated, but best believe that I'm never leaving you ever again not until I'm buried six feet under, it's been so hard for me to hide my excitement about your pregnancy since I noticed, at first I thought you had no idea until I found the pregnancy test you took and forgot to hide, I knew that you'd keep it from me until you trusted that I'm with you to stay, I wanted to marry you but I thought I'd wait for a year or two into our relationship but I couldn't wait I want us to start our lives already without any worries of anyone leaving anytime...

He takes my hand with the ring

Noah:"so with this ring, it'll be a symbol of a lock, that we are locked to each other, a never ending circle for our never ending love"

My heart melts as my lips form a smile

Me:"so we having a baby"

Noah:"and I'll be here for it all"

Me:"hopefully it's a girl"

Noah:"it should be a boy"

I look at him

Me:"I thought you'd want a girl"

Noah(frowns):"why?"

Me:"I..since you lost a girl I thought maybe you'd want another girl"

Noah:"yeah I'd like a girl but not because I want to replace London, no matter how many girls we could have, it'll never erase the fact that my London died...

Me:"I'm sorry I didn't mean it like that I just thought..

Noah:"it's okay Amahle, you right I would appreciate a girl since I just lost one but having a girl will never change the fact that I lost a girl, so it really doesn't matter what the gender of the baby is..

I nod

Noah (smiles):"it'd be nice to have boys first though then a girl as the last born"

Me (smiles):"yeah that'd be nice big brothers taking care and protecting little sisters"

Noah(laughing):"now you see the vision"

Me:"I see it"

Noah:"good girl now let's give that baby some protein"

He says kissing me while zipping down my dress

I stop him pulling out of the kiss

Me(giggles):"wait wait...I know my family will be very excited about the news we about to share with them but I don't think your parents will be happy about this at all, especially your mother, she hates me with passion"

Noah:"Don't worry about her, she knows her lane and if she loses it I'll direct her back on it, she'll never mess with you again if she still likes being my mother"

Me(sighs):"yeah I guess you right, she used to really like me while I was still with Lo...uhmm..

Noah:"no it's cool you can say it, while you were still with Lowell, its not awkward anymore you mine now"

Me(blushes):"yeah and I just wish she could like me like that again"

Noah:"it doesn't matter...

Me:"No but it does, it really does, I'm going to be part of the family now, legally, I'll be using your surname, I don't want any bad blood, I just want to feel welcomed like I'm home you know..like I belong and not just tolerated, this is very important to me,I know mother in laws don't usually have the best

relationships with daughter in laws but I don't want a monster in law, I'm a spiritually gifted person and your mother is african a Zulu woman, if she hates me she might resort to doing things to me and I'll see them coming because I'm protected then they'll go back to strike her, I don't want to be the cause of any of her sicknesses...you know how these things work, you understand what I'm trying to say?"

Noah:"I get you, mom will warm up to you, and if she doesn't and she tries those witchcraft things then let her sign her death wish it's her choice...but sweetheart please stop stressing yourself about this, let's just enjoy this cruise, whatever happens happens"

Me:"okay babe"

He slips off my dress then takes off his clothes as I admire his body

Me:"let me go check on Rain first"

Noah:"babe please, my boner will soften, Rain is sleeping he's fine, we'll check once we done"

He gets between my legs as his hands explore my body, he fingers me while our tongues twirl exchanging making my coochie more wet for him, he rubs his big meat in-between my slippery lips as I feel my coochie vibrate yearning for him, the way I'm always so desperate for him you'd swear he drugs me with something before making love to me

He enters without warning stretching me out, he takes it out and slaps me with it before putting it in again and taking it out tapping it on my entrance

Me(moans):"babyyy quit teasing"

Noah:"you want it?"

Me(nodding):"yeah"

Noah:"say it"

Me:"I want it, put it in me, please daddy"

He smiles in amusement then pushes himself gently and slowly inside of me



a pleasurable escapes my lips and we kiss as he starts moving nice and slow, kissing me like he had all the time in the world appreciating each of my lips in his mouth while his hand massages my breasts tenderly and intensely

He picks up the pace as pleasures overwhelm me I stop kissing him tilting my head up as my eyes shut while I grab on the sheets because I can feel that it's about to be a hella good crazy ride, his lips find another spot on my neck as he starts fucking me harder

I don't know what awaits me in Joburg or how will my future with Noah be like, all I know is that no matter what , no matter what obstacles I'm never letting anything or anyone come between us, I just pray my ancestors do not forsake us this time and our love truly lasts forever, even though there are no happily ever afters in the world, but when I'm with Noah it doesn't feel like I'm in the real world, it feels like I'm in a fairytale even though it's not as smooth as the one in the movies but that's what makes our world different because it's not comparable, I fall in love with him every single day, he treats me like he's still courting me everyday, Rain is still a very happy boy and the more he spends time with his father the more they become twins, I've never seen such a strong bond they're inseparable it's like they've known each other since forever.

Looking back at my past and where I come from, it still breaks my heart, I had dreams, big dreams, I had goals set and plans, even though circumstances and the odds were against me I still had hope, then my father passed away, the struggle became even worse, the abuse, the torture, the humiliation from people I thought were my family, then I look at my journey, it didn't look promising, being kidnapped and sold, surviving through a man giving him love in exchange for my freedom which turned into abuse...I can count all the struggles and be angry at the world at why I had to go through that first to finally get my happiness, but I'm not, because sometimes we have to go through the worst to get to the best so that we'll learn how to be grateful and be filled with wisdom of how to accomplish the impossible to pass that wisdom on to other people those who are not strong enough to live through the struggles, those who want the easy escape, I am happy that I have used my wisdom to help other people through my consultations.

I heard Thulile killed herself and her mother was arrested for being involved in a human trafficking operation, my heart has finally forgiven them, I don't dwell

in the pain they've caused me anymore they didn't deserve that much of my emotions. Thandile has been a very good sister to me we support each other here and there when we need each other and she is very happy with her family, I'm also happy for her.

Luca and Andiswa's relationship is on and off, I don't really know what's going on with those two but at the moment they are back together and happy.

Precious my sister from another mother is living her best life in London and her family is growing her and Justin have really come a long way.

Finding my mother and my sister and brother has been a true blessing.

God is so amazing, if only back then I had known the things he knew were to come I wouldn't have ever ever questioned his existence or love for me and for that I am always truly sorry to him, he has never forsaken me and he knows what is best for us, even if you don't see it right now or tomorrow or the next day but he only has plans to prosper us, all we have to do is reciprocate his loyalty and keep the faith no matter what, he will take you out of situations you never thought were possible to come out from like how he rescued Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego from the furnace fire when they refused to bow down to King Nebuchadnezzar, Jesus was the fourth man in the fire protecting them and they came out and the fire hadn't so much as touched the three men, not a hair singed, not a scorch mark on their clothes, not even the smell of fire on them! God saved them from an impossible situation because they kept their faith and loyalty to their God, just like how he's saved me from many cruel situations and he's still to save us all, there's nothing too hard or impossible for him, we learn that the hard way at times but that's how we get to see his power.

I'm not a perfect person and the struggles have not come to an end just as yet but with time they will become easier to conquer for they can't be as worse as where I come from and there's nothing God won't be able to save me from.

When I accepted my gift I answered my calling and when I chose Noah I answered my heart non of these were easy and I don't understand why because they are the best things that have ever happened to me, I tried to run away from my heart's calling hoping I'd find love from someone else, we both tried to ignore it, we tried to move on without each other, but we were just waisting precious time because after all

we can't really control the matters of the heart, their UNTAMED

He shoots his proteins inside me as he collapses next to me, we face the ceiling trying to catch our breath as we just finished our fourth round on the floor

I am super tired and sore down there but I know if he could go again I'd still throb for him, I hope he's done now otherwise next round I'll just be a chicken and let him do the work on his own

Noah:"again?"

Me:"hell no Noah, what I. The promise land are you trying to achieve? I'm already pregnant"

Noah:"I want triplets in there"

Me:"No way, we are done, will you breastfeed those triplets?"

He laughs and pulls me closer to him

Noah:"I'm kidding, I can't have them finishing all the flavor from my boobies"

He says sucking on my boob

Me(laughing):"I wish milk could come out while you still sucking"

He stops with a disgusted frown

Noah:"ew babe don't say that"

We cuddle facing each other with his dick in between my thighs against my coochie

My hands play with his hair while he draws caressing with his fingers up and down from my breasts to my thighs on the side of my body as we stare into each other's eyes

Noah:"I got one for you"

I burst into laughter as I'm already imagining a funny joke, he looks at me like I'm crazy

Noah:"what the hell are you laughing at? I haven't even said the joke yet"

I can't stop laughing while hitting his shoulder, he also bursts into laughter making me laugh even more

Noah(laughing):"baaabe...stop...(laughing)...okay Indy be serious baby I got one for you come on"

I gasp as my laugh is cut short when his hard dick enters me

Me(gasps for air):"Noaahh"

Noah:"finally, now can I talk?"

I nod giggling

Me:"okay, let's hear it"

Noah:"what goes in hard and dry and comes out soft and wet"

My mouth widens

Me(whispers):"a dick?"

He laughs at me

Me:"it's a dick right, it has to be a dick I mean I just saw it happen"

Noah:"no babe...you are too dirty minded, it's Gum"

Me:"ohhhh mxm really!?!..."

He shakes his head disappointed as I burst into laughter

Me(laughing):"oh come on! Anyone would've thought that first!"

Noah:"you are so nasty so so nasty"

I got his chest trying to stop my laughter

Me(laughing):"okay!! I've got one for you too"

Noah(laughing):"oh boi! Okay..."

Me:"what did the butt cheek say to the other butt cheek"

He bursts into laughter hiding his face on my breasts

Me(laughing):"Answer Noah!! What did the butt cheek say!?"

Noah(laughing):"I don't know, let's make it clap?"

I laugh at his answer, we both out of breath with laughter

Noah(wiping his tears while laughing):"okay baby I don't know, what did the butt cheek say to the other?"

Me:"it said....(laughing) together.... we can stop this crap (laughing)"

His laugh starts all over again, we were hollering in stitches, with tears running down our face, I literally couldn't stop and it was starting to hurt as I also felt the urge to pee

Me(laughing):"my tummy....(laughing).. please...make it stop..."

I wanted to catch my breath so bad but I couldn't and so could he

Noah(laughing):"I think I peed inside you"

I feel warm liquid coming out my vagina as his dick was still in me, I felt like I was about to die in with laughter, it was starting to get very painful I couldn't stop myself from laughing and the more I looked at him laughing the more I wanted to laugh it was getting dangerous as I seriously needed to breath so I pushed him off me and ran off the the bed trying to catch my breath

It got better with his face out of sight I managed to calm down a bit but he stood up

Noah:"hey, look what I can do"

He stood there and wiggled his waist making his soft dick clap against his thighs side to side, I holler throwing a pillow at him

Me(laughing):"stoop you going to kill me!!"

He joins me in bed as we eventually calm down with a few giggles here and there

Me:"you crazy"

Noah:"you love me"

Me:"lucky me"

I kiss his lips

Noah:"I wish there was a stronger word than I love you...I could use it right now"

Me(smiling):"me too"

he laid his head on my tummy facing my face on his back as we continued talking and laughing at his crazy jokes

This love is not perfect at all, it is very far from being perfect, but I wouldn't have it any other way, I do not want perfect, because I am perfectly happy, I'm content and I'm complete.

.

.

.

\*\*

"Love has no reason, when asked, why? The answer is "I don't know, I just do" because love doesn't come from the mind to know, but from the heart to feel" (Anon.)

\*\*

"I have endured I have been broken, I have known hardship, I have lost my life, but here I stand,still moving forward, growing stronger each day, I will never forget the harsh lessons in life. They made me stronger" (Amahle Indigo Nhlabathi)

THE END

.

.

Thank you for reading till this far, you have all been an amazing and very patient audience, I love you all so much and may you find the love your hearts desire....till we meet again in the next story. Mncwaa. (Author Zee)